







*Hugh A. Wyndham.*













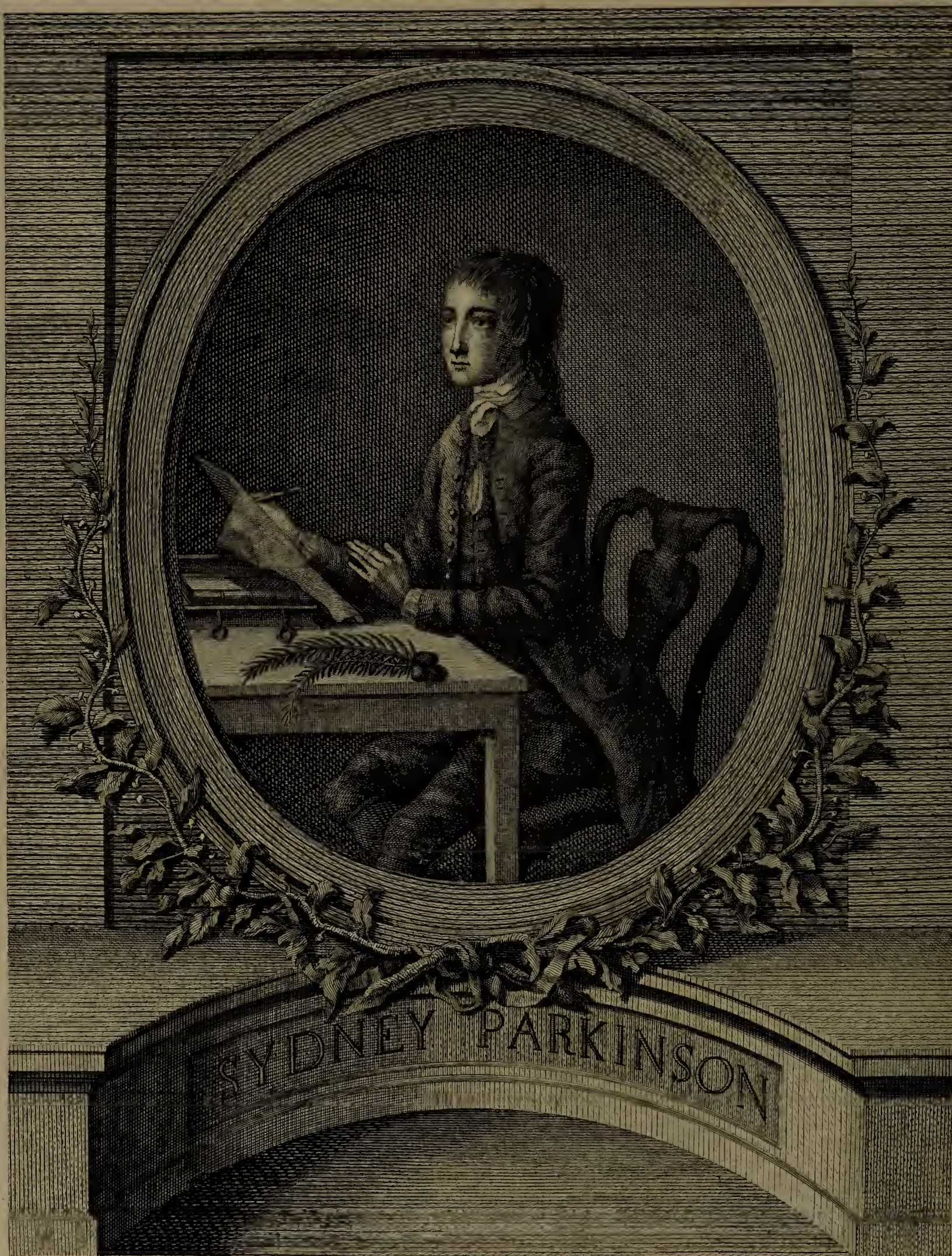












Ja. Neave sculp.



*Notes from the original manuscript*

A  
JOURNAL  
OF A  
VOYAGE TO THE SOUTH SEAS,

In his MAJESTY'S Ship  
*The* *E N D E A V O U R*:

FAITHFULLY TRANSCRIBED

From the Papers of the late SYDNEY PARKINSON,  
Draughtsman to SIR JOSEPH BANKS, BART. in his Expedition with  
DR. SOLANDER round the World;

AND EMBELLISHED

With Twenty-nine Views and Designs, engraved by CAPITAL ARTISTS.

TO WHICH IS NOW ADDED,

REMARKS on the PREFACE,  
By the late JOHN FOTHERGILL, M.D. F.R.S. &c.

A N D

A N A P P E N D I X,

Containing an Account of the VOYAGES of  
COMMODORE BYRON, ✕ MONSIEUR BOUGAINVILLE,  
CAPTAIN WALLIS, ✕ ✕ CAPTAIN COOK, AND  
CAPTAIN CARTERET, ✕ CAPTAIN CLERKE.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for CHARLES DILLY, in the POULTRY; and JAMES PHILLIPS,  
in GEORGE-YARD, LOMBARD-STREET.

M DCC LXXXIV.



# WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS

WELLS



## A D V E R T I S E M E N T.

THE following *Journal* of the circumnavigation undertaken in 1768, and completed in 1771, has met with publick approbation. Sydney Parkinson, the author, was draughtsman to Sir Joseph Banks, Bart. and the engravings, taken from his drawings, have been esteemed a valuable addition to the *Journal*, as, perhaps, no plates hitherto published have conveyed a more faithful representation of the originals from whence the drawings were painted. This young artist was a person of unblemished character, and strict veracity; and his *Journal* may, therefore, be considered as consonant to truth in every relation.

Both before and since the period of the voyage here described, the Journals of other circumnavigators have been published; which, together, form such an ample history of a part of the southern hemisphere, hitherto but little known, that I deemed an abridgment of them would prove a useful appendage to Sydney Parkinson's original work: I employed, therefore, a writer of literary reputation to execute this summary, which is now offered to the publick. To every paragraph are annexed marginal references to the original Journals; which, while they form an accurate epitome of the several voyages, enable the reader to refer to them with the greatest facility and exactness.

The



## A D V E R T I S E M E N T.

The *Preface* to Sydney Parkinson's *Journal* was drawn up after his death, at the request of his brother, Stanfield Parkinson, the original editor, by the late Dr. Kenrick, who was totally unacquainted with Dr. Fothergill, as he informed me at the time he was employed in writing, and whose sole apology was the pecuniary emolument of his labour. I have preserved this *Preface*, as well as added Dr. Fothergill's *Remarks* upon it, in justification of his conduct.

As controversial performances, I did not think them of sufficient importance to insert them in my edition of Dr. Fothergill's works; and more especially as the unmerited suspicions which gave rise to the *Preface*, no longer subsisted. The brother of Sydney Parkinson is dead: in his last illness Dr. Fothergill was consulted, and kindly attended him; and after his decease the family disposed of the copy-right of the *Journal* to Dr. Fothergill, thereby evincing a thorough dependence upon him, and the most unequivocal acknowledgment of his rectitude.

Since the Doctor's decease, the whole has been conveyed into my possession; and, besides the additions already enumerated, which may be had separately, I have prefixed a geographical chart of the tracts of the late circumnavigators, in order to render the work as complete as possible for those who may not have purchased the original, or who wish to possess an elegant collection of South American views and portraits.

JOHN COAKLEY LETTSOM.

London,  
June 1, 1784.



# C O N T E N T S.

## P A R T I.

Comprehending the occurrences that happened from the ship's departure from England to its arrival in the South-Seas; particularly

The description of the country and natives of Terra del Fuego	Page 7 <i>et seq.</i>
Arrival at and description of the islands and natives of Otaheite	15
Observation of the transit of Venus	29
Table of the rise and fall of the thermometer during the ship's stay at Otaheite	30
Descriptive catalogue of plants, medical, culinary, &c. found on that island	37
Vocabulary of the language of Otaheite, with remarks	51
Description of the country and natives of Yoolée-Etea, with the neighbouring islands	71
Description and delineation of the various warlike and domestic implements of Otaheite and the adjacent isles	75

## P A R T II.

Comprehending the occurrences met with from leaving Yoolée-Etea to the time of the ship's departure from the coast of New-Zealand.

Views of the head-lands and delineations of the coast, country, and inhabitants, of New-Zealand	86
Description of the chiefs, warriors, and war-canoes, &c. of New-Zealand	96
Pictureque views on the coast	99—113—117

## C O N T E N T S.

Singular head-dresses of the natives	- - - -	Page 116 <i>et seq.</i>
Map of the coast of New-Zealand	- - - -	125
Vocabulary of the New-Zealand tongue	- - - -	127
Description and delineation of the military weapons and household implements, personal ornaments, &c. of New-Zealand	- - - -	128

## P A R T III.

Comprehending the incidents that happened from the time of the ship's leaving New-Zealand, to its arrival at and departure from Batavia for Europe.

Account of the country, natives, and natural produce, of New- Holland	- - - -	133
Vocabulary of the language of New-Holland	- - - -	148
Vocabulary of the language of the natives of the island of Savoo	- - - -	163
Description of the city, inhabitants, customs, and persons trading to Batavia	- - - -	173
Vocabulary of the Malayan language, spoken at Batavia, called the Low Malay	- - - -	184
Vocabulary of the language spoken at Anjenga, on the coast of Malabar, called, at Batavia, the high or proper Malay	- - - -	195
Vocabulary of the language of the natives of Sumatra	- - - -	198

## P A R T IV.

Comprehending an account of the ship's voyage home from Batavia 209 *ad ult.*

P R E F A C E.





# P R E F A C E.

By the E D I T O R.

UNqualified to address the public, as a writer, I should have contented myself with giving the following journal to the world, without the formality of *preface*, had not the circumstances, which have delayed, and the arts that have been practised to suppress, its publication, made some explanation on this head particularly necessary.

The unmerited aspersions which have been cast on me, for asserting a right to pay this tribute to the memory of a deceased brother, and to possess a bequeathed, analienated, pittance of his little fortune, earned at the hazard, and purchased, as I may say, at the expence, of his life, render it indeed incumbent on me to defend a reputation, as injuriously attacked as such dear-bought property has been unjustifiably invaded.

It is yet with regret I find myself reduced to this necessity; as the persons, of whom I complain, are men, from whose superior talents and situation in life better things might be expected; however they have, in this instance, been misemployed in striving to baffle a plain, unlettered, man; who, though he thinks it is his duty to be resigned under the dispensations of providence, thinks it also equally his duty to seek every lawful redress from the oppressive acts of vain and rapacious men.

Sydney Parkinson, from whose papers and drawings the journal, now presented to the public, has been faithfully transcribed and delineated, was the younger son  
of

of the late Joel Parkinson, brewer, of Edinburgh, one of the people commonly called Quakers, and, as I am told, well known and esteemed by men of all ranks in that city. His success in life, however, was by no means equal to that probity of mind and purity of manners, for which he was eminently distinguished; a generosity of disposition inducing him to be improvidently remiss in prosecuting the recovery of his just debts: a circumstance, which, aggravated by other sinister accidents, rendered his family, on his decease, dependent on their own talents and industry for their future support. His son Sydney was put to the business of a woollen-draper; but, taking a particular delight in drawing flowers, fruits, and other objects of natural history, he became soon so great a proficient in that stile of painting, as to attract the notice of the most celebrated botanists and connoisseurs in that study. In consequence of this, he was, some time after his arrival in London, recommended to Joseph Banks, Esq. whose very numerous collection of elegant and highly-finished drawings of that kind, executed by Sydney Parkinson, is a sufficient testimony both of his talents and application.

His recommendation being so effectually confirmed by these proofs of ingenuity and industry, Joseph Banks made him the proposal of going in the capacity of botanical draughtsman, on the then intended voyage to the South-seas. An insatiable curiosity for such researches prevailed over every consideration of danger, that reasonably suggested itself, as the necessary attendant of so long, so perilous, and, to my poor brother, so fatal a voyage! He accordingly accepted Joseph Banks's offer; though by no means an alluring one, if either views of profit, or perhaps even prudence, had influenced his determination. His appointment, for executing such drawings of singular botanical subjects and curious objects of natural history as might occasionally be met with on the voyage, was settled at eighty pounds *per annum*. In this capacity, and under this moderate encouragement, Sydney Parkinson undertook to accompany Joseph Banks to the South-Seas; making his will before his departure, in which he bequeathed the salary, which might be due to him at the time of his decease, to his sister Britannia, and appointed her his residuary legatee.



The occurrences and events that attended the expedition are minutely related in the following sheets: the contents of which, though destitute of the embellishments of style and diction, may serve to shew with what assiduity the curious journalist pursued his observations, and what accuracy he aimed at, not only in the particular walk of his profession of natural history, but also in describing the persons, languages, customs, and manners of the natives of the several islands and continents they visited.

And here let me be indulged in the spontaneous effusions of a heart still affected with the loss of a loving and a beloved brother, while I declare how I have heard many of the surviving companions of this amiable young man dwell with pleasure on the relation of his singular simplicity of conduct, his sincere regard for truth, his ardent thirst after knowledge, his indefatigable industry to obtain it, and his generous disposition in freely communicating, with the most friendly participation, to others, that information which perhaps none but himself could have obtained. That this is more than probable will appear, on comparing the different manner in which Sydney and his associates passed their time, in the most interesting situations. While many others, for want of a more innocent curiosity or amusement, were indulging themselves in those sensual gratifications, which are so easily obtained among the female part of uncivilized nations, we find him gratifying no other passion than that of a laudable curiosity; which enabled him inoffensively to employ his time, and escape those snares into which the vicious appetites of some others betrayed them. It doth equal honour to his ingenuousness and ingenuity, to find him protected by his own innocence, securely exercising his pleasing art amidst a savage, ignorant, and hostile, people; engaging their attention by the powers of his pencil, disarming them of their native ferocity, and rendering them even serviceable to the great end of the voyage, in cheerfully furnishing him with the choicest productions of the soil and climate, which neither force nor stratagem might otherwise have procured.

By such honest arts and mild demeanor he soon acquired the confidence of the inhabitants of most places, at which the voyagers went on shore; obtaining thus,

as I am well informed, with remarkable facility, the knowledge of many words in various languages, hitherto little, if at all, known in Europe.

These paved the way also to his success in acquiring a choice and rare collection of curiosities, consisting of garments, domestic utensils, rural implements, instruments of war, uncommon shells, and other natural curiosities, of considerable value: of so much value, indeed, as even to seduce men of reputed sense, fortune, and character, to attempt, by means unworthy of themselves, to deprive me of what, after the loss sustained in the death of so deserving a brother, one would think none ought to envy me the gain.

It has happened otherwise; and I am now to enter on the disagreeable task of submitting to the public, before whom I have been traduced, a relation of the manner in which the greater part of his effects hath been hitherto detained from me, and the use of those I got denied me, through my implicit confidence in false friends, and the specious arts of covetous and designing strangers.

On the arrival of Joseph Banks in London, about the middle of July, 1771, he informed me, by letter, of the death of Sydney Parkinson, my brother; acquainting me, at the same time, of his having taken possession of his effects, as the only person that could do it\*; of which he was ready to give a proper account to his executors. I waited, of course, immediately on Joseph Banks; who appeared to sympathize with me on account of my brother, with whose services he seemed highly satisfied, and declared he suffered a considerable loss by his death; telling me, after a short conversation on the subject, that he was then much confused with a multiplicity of concerns, but that, as soon as his hurry of business was over, he would give me an account of my brother's effects.

Being soon after informed, that Joseph Banks had told James Lee, of Hammer-smith, that my brother had bequeathed to him, James Lee, a journal of the

\* I am, however, since informed, that it is usual, in such cases, for the captain of the ship to take possession of the effects of the deceased; causing at the same time a regular inventory to be taken of them before two competent witnesses.



voyage, and some other papers, which were unfortunately lost; I took occasion to ask Joseph Banks about this circumstance, who confirmed it; telling me that he had made a search among the ship's company for the said journal, but could not find it. At this time he also told me that he expected to get his goods up from the ship in a few days, and that, when they arrived, I should receive the things bequeathed me by my brother; among which he observed there were some curiosities he should be glad to purchase. I replied that when I should receive and be inclined to part with them, I would give him the preference.

Several weeks having elapsed without hearing any thing of my legacy, I waited on Joseph Banks, and, as I thought in the civilest terms, desired him to account with me on this head. He was, or affected to be, extremely angry with me, however; saying his own affairs were not yet settled, and, till they were, he could not settle mine. I answered, that I did not insist on a final adjustment immediately, but thought it necessary to make some enquiry about the matter, lest there might be some perishable commodities among my brother's effects, which would suffer by being kept so long in the package, and therefore required to be inspected. On this he flew, in a rage, to a bureau, that stood in a room adjoining, and began to uncord it with great violence, and in much apparent confusion. On my remonstrating that what he was doing was at present needless, he desisted, and, calling his servant, gave him a written inventory; telling him at the same time to deliver me the things therein mentioned; contained in a bureau, a large Chinese chest, a trunk with two locks, a Dutch box, and some other smaller chests, jars, and boxes.

They were accordingly delivered me the next day, unlocked and without keys, although the inventory implied that all the locks had keys to them excepting that of a tea-chest. On examining into the contents of the several packages also, I found the things did not agree with the inventory †. I missed also some things,

b

which

† Particularly some linen was found not inventoried, and two New-Zealand arrows were missing. The large chest, instead of being full of curiosities, as mentioned in the inventory, was not a third part full, and most of the things that were in it were damaged or perished. The upper part of the bureau, said to contain curiosities and sundries, contained nothing but a stuffed bird, a few manuscripts and

which I knew my brother had taken with him, and which were not mentioned at all in the inventory; such as a silver watch, two table-spoons, and a pair of gold sleeve-buttons; all which, however, it is possible my brother might have lost or disposed of on the voyage. But, as I thought it not very probable, I was induced to enquire, of some of the officers belonging to the Endeavour, into the manner in which my brother's effects were taken care of; and, in particular, after the journal, said to be lost, and more of his papers and drawings, which I expected to have found.

The result of this enquiry afforded no reasons to confirm me in the good opinion I had hitherto entertained of Joseph Banks; in whose integrity and generosity I had before placed the utmost confidence. By one person, who was particularly intimate with my brother, I was informed that he died possessed of several curious drawings of the natives of New-Zealand and other subjects, which he had taken at his leisure hours, in presence of the informant, for his own amusement and particular use; having given several of them away as presents to the officers on-board, and that to the knowledge of Joseph Banks, who never pretended to have the right, he hath since been pleased to set up, to all and every the labours, in season and out of season, of his indefatigable draughtsman.\* From another of the ship's company I learned, that, immediately after Sydney Parkinson's decease, on the 26th of January, 1771, Joseph Banks, attended by Dr. Solander, went into his cabin; when the captain's clerk accidentally passing by, they called him, and desired him to take an inventory of the deceased's effects: which he did, by writing down what was dictated.† On being shewn the abovementioned inventory, he said it was the clerk's hand-writing; but, on being asked if he thought it contained the whole of Sydney Parkinson's effects, he replied: "No, nothing like it." He was then shewn the curiosities

and sketches of no great moment, and a parcel of written music; which latter could hardly belong to my brother, who knew nothing of a science, of which his religious profession prohibited him the study. Perhaps the fundries were his journal and drawings said to be lost; the place of which, these musical manuscripts (undoubtedly belonging to Joseph Banks, who is a connoisseur in the art,) afterwards supplied.

\* It is here to be observed, that Sydney Parkinson was engaged to Joseph Banks as a botanical draughtsman only; so that he was under no obligation to delineate other subjects for Joseph Banks, who took out another draughtsman, one Alexander Buchan, with him for that purpose; who likewise fell a sacrifice to the vicissitudes of climate and fatigues of the voyage.

† This circumstance was afterwards confirmed to me by the clerk himself.



riofities received of Joseph Banks; on viewing which he declared, that the deceased, to his knowledge, possessed many things not to be found among them, particularly a quantity of seeds of curious plants, many birds and animals preserved in spirits, many lances, bludgeons, and other weapons used in war, likewise household utensils and other instruments, purchased of the natives of the newly-discovered islands in the South-Seas; together with the third of a leager ‡ of the best arrack, bought at Batavia. In respect to the lost journal, he said that Sydney Parkinson had been extremely assiduous in collecting accounts of the languages, customs, and manners, of the people, wherever the ship touched at, and had drawn up a very fair journal, which was looked upon, by the ship's company, to be the best that was kept; particularly as to the account it contained of the new-discovered islands, and of the people residing at, or trading to, Batavia. He added, that Sydney Parkinson had made, at his leisure hours, a great many drawings of the people at Otaheite and the neighbouring islands, as also of the New-Zealanders, particularly of some who were curiously marked in the face; and that he frequently sat up all night, drawing for himself or writing his journal; and as for the account of its being lost, he looked upon it as a farce, as he was sure Joseph Banks took particular care of every thing belonging to Sydney Parkinson, and had all his effects under his own eye. ||

The reader will observe, that, though I look on these informants to be persons of veracity, and doubt not they would make good their information, if called on in a court of judicature, I do by no means charge Joseph Banks, on hear-say evidence, with the embezzlement or detention of effects I never saw; he has enough to answer for, as a man of credit and probity, in hitherto detaining from me the things I was afterwards prevailed on to entrust him with, on his promise to return them. The information I received, however, could not fail of alarming my suspicion; which I communicated to some friends, who advised me to file a bill in chancery to compel Joseph Banks to come to a just account. But, having a man of character and fortune to deal with, I was loth to take violent measures, in hopes he might be induced by fair means to do me justice.

At the end of about five weeks, I received a message from him, appointing me to come the next afternoon to settle with him. I waited on him accordingly, at the

b 2

time

‡ About fifty five gallons.

|| The above account was corroborated by another of the ship's company, who smiled at the relation of the Journal's being lost, and at the enquiry that was pretended to be made concerning it.

time appointed; when I found him attended by his attorney. He received me very coldly, and complained that I had used him ill in making enquiries, among the people belonging to the ship, concerning my brother's effects; he asked me if I had taken out letters of administration, which he told me it was necessary I should do, previous to our finally settling accounts.

At this meeting, therefore, little passed, except the adjustment of the value of some few of my brother's effects, that Joseph Banks chose to keep, or had sold. To this succeeded, indeed, a short, but somewhat warm, altercation, about the above-mentioned journal and drawings; to which Joseph Banks claimed a right, in quality of my brother's employer. As I could not be brought to acknowledge this title in him to any thing but the drawings in natural history, which only my brother was employed to execute; he admitted there were in his hands a few manuscripts, which were bequeathed to James Lee beforementioned; fetching a small bundle of papers out of a bureau and throwing them down on the table.

Being a good deal flurried with the dispute, and finding nothing could be then determined on, I took no farther notice of them, at that time, than just to observe that the manuscripts were my brother's hand-writing.

I observed however to Joseph Banks, that Dr. Solander had informed me, that, when my brother was taken ill, he called him aside, and told him he was apprehensive he should die; in which case he said he hoped he had done every thing to Joseph Banks's satisfaction, and doubted not but Joseph Banks would do the just thing by him; at the same time desiring that James Lee might have the *perusal* of his manuscripts. Joseph Banks denied his knowledge of any such circumstance; on which his attorney present asked if he had any written voucher that the papers were bequeathed to James Lee, and was answered in the negative; Joseph Banks then saying that if Dr. Solander should say that James Lee was to have the perusal only of those writings, he would give up the point. At this instant the doctor came into the room, when I put the question to him, and he confirmed, without hesitation, what I had asserted. When Dr. Solander left the room, nevertheless, Joseph Banks snatched up the papers, and locked them up in his bureau; telling me to go and administer to my brother's will, and he would acquaint me when it would



would be convenient to him for me to wait on him to make an end of the affair. And thus our interview concluded.

In a day or two after, I took out letters of administration, as next of kin;† and having waited a considerable time, to no purpose, in expectation of hearing from Joseph Banks, I applied to Dr. John Fothergill, a common friend of my late brother and Joseph Banks, to inform him how I had been treated; telling him, at the same time, I intended to file a bill in chancery against his friend Banks. The doctor dissuaded me from it, as it would be very expensive, and promised to think of some method of bringing about an accommodation. Soon after, he engaged to mediate between us, and, in appearance, much to the satisfaction of Joseph Banks; between whom several interviews, of course, took place on the occasion.

During the negotiation, I was informed by Dr. Fothergill, that Joseph Banks desired to have the inspection of the shells and other curiosities, which had been delivered to me by his order, as beforementioned; which, by the doctor's persuasion, I was prevailed on to consent to, as also to agree to present Joseph Banks with specimens of such as he might not have in his own collection; which he said could be but few, as Sydney Parkinson always gave him the choice of what he procured and collected.

It was not, I own, without some reluctance that I consented to send these things to Joseph Banks; but, on Dr. Fothergill's engaging that I should have the whole or the greater part of them back, I yielded to his remonstrances, and sent a chest-of-drawers, a large trunk, and a wainscot coach-seat-box, containing,

Thirty pieces of the cloth made and worn at Otaheite and the neighbouring islands.

Fifteen ditto of matting and New-Zealand garments.

A great number of fish-hooks, and various utensils and instruments used by the people on the southern islands. These were contained in the wainscot box, which was full of them.

A very

† Elizabeth Parkinson, the mother of Sydney, having relinquished her right of administering.

A very large parcel of curious shells, corals, and other marine productions, many of them beautiful and rare. Besides many other particulars.

Of these curiosities, the shells alone Dr. Fothergill had valued at two hundred pounds: yet neither the shells, nor any thing else, hath Joseph Banks to this day returned me. The reasons he gives for the detention are, that I have used him ill; that he hath given a valuable consideration for them; and, in short, that he will keep them. Of this pretended valuable consideration I am now to speak. On the readiness I shewed to oblige Joseph Banks with such of the shells as he might not have in his collection, Dr. Fothergill informed me, that Joseph Banks, in great good humour and apparent generosity, told him, he had much reason to be satisfied with the services of Sydney Parkinson, and the chearfulness with which he executed other drawings than those of his own department; supplying, in fact, the loss of Joseph Banks's other draughtsman, who died in the beginning of the voyage. On this account, Joseph Banks was pleased to say, it had been his constant intention to make Sydney Parkinson a very handsome present, had he lived to return to England. His intention was now to take place, therefore, towards his brother and sister; to whom he would make the like present, in consideration of such extra-service, or, as Joseph Banks himself expressed it, a *douceur* to the family for the loss they sustained in the death of so valuable a relation. There being due to the deceased upwards of a hundred and fifty pounds salary, the sole property of my sister Britannia, and Joseph Banks chusing to keep some of the effects bequeathed to me, as beforementioned, it was agreed, between Dr. Fothergill and Joseph Banks, that the latter should make up the sum five hundred pounds, to be paid into the hands of me and my sister.

Matters being thus settled, a meeting of all parties was agreed on; which took place on the 31st of January, 1772, when I waited on Joseph Banks with my sister Britannia, meeting there Dr. Fothergill according to appointment.\* After a short introduction,

\* It may not be improper to observe here, that I proposed to Dr. Fothergill the taking my attorney with me on the occasion: but this the doctor opposed; saying, "No, by no means, Joseph Banks will be offended."



introduction, Joseph Banks, instead of enquiring about my letters of administration, as I expected, produced, for us to sign, a receipt, written on stamped paper, and couched in the strongest terms of a general release, in which he himself was stiled executor, or administrator, to the last will of my brother; and, as I understood it, importing a renunciation of my right of administration in favour of Joseph Banks. This surprizing me, I immediately took out of my pocket the letters of administration, which I had myself procured by Joseph Banks's advice and direction; upon which he seemed highly displeased, flew into a great passion, and said the whole affair was then overturned: but, on the interposition of Dr. Fothergill, and my representing to him that what I had done was by his own order, he having before told me it was necessary, and that till I had administered he could not settle with me, he became somewhat pacified, and agreed to pay the five hundred pounds, on receiving a common receipt, deferring the execution of a general release to another opportunity. This receipt was dictated, to the best of my remembrance, by Dr. Fothergill, and was signed by me and my sister Britannia; I leaving with Joseph Banks my letters of administration, for the purpose of having a more proper and formal release drawn up. Before the signing of the above receipt, however, I desired Joseph Banks to deliver me that bundle of my brother's manuscripts, which he had before shewn me: On which Dr. Fothergill interfered; and, saying they should be returned him, and no improper use made of them, Joseph Banks delivered them.

While Joseph Banks was gone to fetch the papers, I intimated to Dr. Fothergill, that, the shells and other curiosities not having been returned me according to promise, it was proper to take notice of it now, and that, unless they were returned, I would not sign the receipt. But to this intimation Dr. Fothergill hastily replied, "No, no; thou seest he is now in a passion, and it will be improper to speak of them;" adding, that he placed so much confidence in Joseph Banks's integrity, that he would answer for the return of at least the greatest part of them. And thus our meeting ended.

On the examination of the papers, thus delivered to me by Joseph Banks, I found them to be the memorandums and materials, from which, I conceived, my  
brother

brother had written his lost journal: which being desirous of preserving for my own satisfaction, as well as the entertainment of my friends, I caused them to be faithfully transcribed; returning the originals back to Joseph Banks, as well to comply with Dr. Fothergill's promise to him, as to induce him to return me the shells and curiosities he still detained.

It was in vain I expected Joseph Banks would keep his word with me. On the 26th of March, 1772, he sent me back, indeed, my drawers and boxes quite empty, without the civility even of a message by the bearers. I complained, of course, to Dr. Fothergill, who afterwards said he could obtain no satisfaction for me. After several fruitless attempts to obtain it myself, therefore, I wrote to Joseph Banks, acquainting him, that, if he did not immediately return the curiosities, I would inform the world of the whole transaction between us, and endeavour to indemnify myself by publishing also my brother's journal.\* To this letter I received the following answer.

Mr. PARKINSON.

I shall in the present, as well as at all times, refer the dispute between us to Dr. Fothergill's determination: not that I feel conscious of having done any thing amiss, but that I feel loth to endure your scurrilous letters, such as I shall shew him upon this occasion.

With this you receive the administration.

Notwithstanding this declaration of his willingness to refer our dispute to the decision of Dr. Fothergill, Joseph Banks took no step whatever toward an accommodation; nor did he ever shew Dr. Fothergill, as the latter informed me, any of those pretended scurrilous letters he mentions.

On

\* Not that at this time I was furnished with sufficient materials to render it worthy of being laid before the public; having received no drawings or designs of any consequence whatever from Joseph Banks. On application, however, to several of the ship's company, and by a fortunate accident, I recovered soon after other manuscripts of my brother's, together with those drawings which embellish the following sheets: not one of which did I receive from Joseph Banks.



On hearing of Joseph Banks's intended voyage to Iceland, I thought it necessary, therefore, to pursue the advice of my friends, by endeavouring to come at my brother's journal and drawings, which I had now so much reason to think were concealed from me, and to derive what emolument I could from their publication. To this end I caused the following advertisement to be inserted in the news-papers.

#### HIS MAJESTY'S SHIP ENDEAVOUR.

Whereas a Journal was kept on-board the said ship, during her late voyage round the world, by Sydney Parkinson deceased, late draughtsman to Joseph Banks, Esq. which, from the great variety of particulars it contained relative to the discoveries made during the said voyage, was allowed by the ship's company to be the best and most correct that was taken; and whereas the said Sydney Parkinson had, at his leisure hours, made drawings of many of the natives of the new-discovered islands, and had also taken views of several places in the said islands, which he intended as presents to his friends; which said Journal and Drawings are pretended to have been lost. And whereas there is great reason to think that they have been secreted by some person or persons for his or their own emolument. This is to give Notice, that if any one can give Information where the said Journal and Drawings are so secreted, so that the Heir at Law to the said Sydney Parkinson may come by his lawful property, by applying to Stanfield Parkinson in little Pulteney Street, they shall receive One Hundred Guineas Reward.

N. B. It is supposed that they are not many Miles from New Burlington Street.†

In consequence of this advertisement, and personal application to several of the officers and others on-board the ship Endeavour, I procured, by purchase, loan, and gift, not indeed the fair copy of my brother's journal, but so many of his manuscripts and drawings, as to enable me to present the following work, in its present form, to the public.

As I made no secret of my design, and was known to have employed the proper artists to execute it, I was now solicited and entreated by Joseph Banks's friends to desist: Dr. Fothergill, in particular, offered me, at different times, several sums of money, to drop my intended publication, notwithstanding he knew Joseph Banks still detained my curiosities, contrary to agreement, and refused to come to  
c any

† By this intimation, it is plain I meant to insinuate, that I thought the Journal was in the hands of Joseph Banks: but I should never have thought of publishing such an advertisement, had I ever meant to have sold him my brother's papers; as Dr. Fothergill afterwards affirmed I had done.

any accommodation. Nay, James Lee, of whom I have before spoken, proceeded, indiscreetly, to attempt to intimidate me from my design, by pretending himself to have a right to my brother's manuscripts. His letter to me on that occasion may serve to shew the manner in which I was beset, and what methods were taken to induce me, if possible, to relinquish my right.

TO STANFIELD PARKINSON.

S I R,

I have heard of your unaccountable behaviour to my good friend doctor Fothergill relative to your intending to publish your brother's papers, after he had passed his word for your making no improper use of them, contrary to the intention of the lender, for they *was* only lent as a *peice* of indulgence, which the doctor *beged* for you, the use you intend to make of this indulgence in my opinion carries with it the colour of an action so fraught with ingratitude and matchless impudence that should you proceed in it, you will bring a lasting stain on your name and family, and may be followed by the ruin of both.

I little thought that a brother of my late worthy friend Sidney Parkinson, could have even thought of such a peice of treachery, it makes me shudder at your vicious turn of mind, while I *lemante* ever having had any knowledge of a man of such wretched principles. I advise you to desist, and take shame on you before it is *to* late, and that you will for the sake of your family save your reputation which once lost is seldom to be recovered.

One thing more I must tell you which perhaps you think I did not know, which is that in your brother's will, that he left with his sister before he went abroad, he left some legacys to my daughter Ann. amongst other things some paintings that *was* in your hands. I have likeways heard there was something left to me in the will Mr. Banks brought home. You have taken no notice of these things to me, I imputed your *silence* to your avarice and did not think it worth my while to disturb you about it. but since I have heard of your determination, I must tell you if you proceed further in your publication I am determined to call you to an account. the papers you are about to publish, *is* by right mine. I have Mr. Banks's word for it that your brother left them to me. and I will *disput* your title to them, as I have witness's of your brother leaving em to me as my property. Consider the contents of this letter and act like a man of honour, or consider the consequence of doing wrong.

Vineyard, 26th Nov. 1772.

I am, &c.

JAMES LEE.

To this strange epistle I returned the following answer.

JAMES LEE,

11th Mo. 1772.

I received a letter from thee last Friday, the contents of which, as coming from the friend of my dear brother, greatly amazed me, as thou chargest me therein with crimes of the blackest dye; but as they



# P R E F A C E.

xi

they are only charges without foundation, the greater part being, according to thy own confession, founded on hearsay evidence, I can easily clear myself from them, and shall therefore answer them in the order in which they appear in thy letter.

Thou sayest I intend to publish my brother's papers, notwithstanding Dr. Fothergill gave his word that I should make no improper use of them, contrary to the intention of the lender — From which I infer that thou art of opinion that by publishing my brother's papers I shall make an improper use of them. — I cannot see any impropriety at all in publishing what is my own property, not only in my own opinion but that of all my friends. And that my brother's papers were such I shall make appear when I come to answer another part of thy letter: And being my property, Dr. Fothergill had no authority for saying I should not make use of them. He might as well have said I should not sell another piece of furniture out of my shop. That I did not, being present, contradict what the doctor said, was I confess, a fault, but owing to the hurry and confusion I was in at that time through the altercation between J. Banks and myself.

I always had, and still have the greatest regard for Dr. Fothergill, having in many instances experienced his friendship. I should be sorry thy charge of ingratitude in me towards him should be true — I have stated the case between him and me, respecting my intended publication, to many of my friends, and they were all clearly of opinion that the doctor remained entirely excused from any thing he had said respecting the papers, and the blame, if any, wholly devolved on me.

In regard to what thou hast advanced, that the papers were lent as a piece of indulgence which the doctor begged for me, I must beg leave to contradict thee, and to tell thee that thou wert misinformed: the doctor, at the time I was with him at Joseph Banks's house, never spoke about the papers till I had demanded them as my property, and which I had done several times before. Joseph Banks produced them before the doctor spoke about them, and in all probability they would have given me without any condition, as Joseph Banks never requested any.

I had been for a long time past surprized at not hearing from, or seeing, thee, especially as I had wrote to thee of my intentions respecting my brother's Journal; but the great secret, or reason thereof is at last come out. It seems then that thou hast heard that I have kept some legacies bequeath'd to thy daughter Ann, which were left in my brother's will that he deposited in my sister's hands before he went abroad; amongst other things, some paintings that were in my hands: And, that by a will Joseph Banks brought over there was something left to thee, which I have taken no notice of to thee. This is a heavy charge, but from which (as I have already said) I can easily exculpate myself.

In the will left with my sister, a copy of which Dr. Fothergill has, and to which I have administered, is the following clause.

“ 3dly, I desire that my paintings on vellum, &c. may be given to those for whom they are marked on the back, and whatever utensils that are useful in painting or drawing to Mr. Lee's daughter, my scholar.”

I have, accordingly, as bound by solemn affirmation at Doctors Commons, sent thy daughter all my brother's drawing and painting utensils, that I received from Joseph Banks or had by me, and have disposed of the paintings as directed by my brother in his own hand writing on the back of them; if any of them had been marked for thy daughter she wou'd of course have had them with the utensils.

Among the papers I received from J. Banks there was a copy of the will he left with my sister: If Joseph Banks brought over any other will of my brother's, it is more than I know of. I suppose if he had, it would have been produced before now, as it must of course have set aside that he left at home, and to which J. Banks knew I administered.

I therefore indeed *did not think thou* KNEWEST *all* that thou hast charged me with on this head.

Thou sayest that the papers I am about to publish are thine, and that thou hast Joseph Banks's word for it. If by the papers thou meanest the Manuscript of my brother's Journal, I must tell thee I have it not, it being in Joseph Banks's possession, to whom I sent it, in order to oblige Dr. Fothergill. What I have are indeed taken from my brother's papers, but contain far more than what that manuscript does; the other part thereof I have been furnished with by some friends of my late brother.

But allowing that what I am going to publish was no more than what that manuscript contained, thou wouldst find it a difficult matter to persuade me out of my Right of publication, and must bring with thee into a court of Equity something more strong for Evidence than what thou hast mentioned; as I have Dr. Solander as a witness to the contrary, who said in the presence of Joseph Banks's lawyer, whom I can produce as an Evidence, and in my hearing, that my brother desired that thou wast to have only the *perusal* of them. Joseph Banks's lawyer asked him, at that very time, if he had it in writing, that my brother's papers were bequeathed to thee; who answered in the Negative; on which the lawyer pronounced them to be my property. And Joseph Banks was so well satisfied at what Dr. Solander then uttered, that he said he gave it up.

I think thou wilt find I have sufficiently cleared myself from thy charges exhibited against me, which I have done: not that I am any ways fearful of thy threats, for I shall be at all times ready to answer thy suits, but that I am desirous of living peaceably with all men.

As for the words, *matchless impudence, treachery, wretched principles, avarice*, and such like, which thou hast applied to me, I regard them as wrote in heat of passion; and *advise thee* (to make use of thy own phrase) *to take shame on thee* for having written them, as also for having unjustly charged me with crimes I never committed.

I always have, and I trust I always shall, act as a man of honour, and I well know the consequence of doing wrong. I hope, after reading this, thou wilt also act as becomes such towards

STANFIELD PARKINSON.

Persisting still in the preparations for publishing my book, and turning a deaf ear to Dr. Fothergill's remonstrances, as not being of so friendly a nature as I thought becoming him, I forfeited his good-will, and he became all at once as much my declared enemy as he had been before my pretended friend. He traduced my reputation before others, complained of my ingratitude to him, and my injustice to Joseph Banks; appearing to join with Dr. John Hawkesworth, the compiler of the south-sea voyages now published, in representing my book as an unfair



fair and surreptitious publication.\* To this purpose indeed Dr. Hawkesworth caused an advertisement to be inserted in the public news-papers; in answer to which I thought it incumbent on me to insert one, in my own defence; asserting my right to my brother's papers, and my resolution to publish them.

To delay this design, and, if possible, suppress my book, which was almost ready to appear, Dr. Hawkesworth, whose compilation was not so forward, filed a bill in chancery against me, setting forth that I had invaded his property, by printing manuscripts and engraving designs, which I sold to Joseph Banks, and which Joseph Banks had *afterwards* sold to him: even Dr. Fothergill supporting this misrepresentation, by affirming that I had made such sale to Mr. Banks, of which he was a witness. On this application an injunction was granted by the court of chancery, to stop the printing and publishing of my work. Nay, Dr. Hawkesworth, not contented with praying for the suppression of my book, modestly desired also to have delivered up to him the printed copies of it, which I had, at the expence of several hundred pounds, prepared to offer the public.

Put

\* As a proof how far Dr. Fothergill did interest himself on this occasion, I beg leave to give an extract of a letter from a relation at Newcastle on the subject.

Dear Cousin,

Newcastle, 29th Jan. 1773.

— This will inform thee thy favours came duely to hand, and that I was not a little surprized at Mr. Lee's letter and his change of sentiments respecting Mr. Banks, as his friendship for my late cousin seemed so great, and by thine I find I am the only person who have cause of complaint and whose friendship yet remains unstaggered. — But now to what I know of Dr. F's letter to J. K. — The latter called upon me one day and asked me if I knew of any Journal that was printing here, published by my cousin. I told him no; but there was one printing at London, which I expected would be finished by the middle of this month; he then read the Dr's letter, wherein after saying how ill thou had treated both him and Mr. Banks, he says from the regard he had to his promise, he offered thee £. 50 to stop the publication, which thou refusedst, as he supposed only through a mercenary view, to extort more money from him; which however he did not offer.¶ This was the meaning and the words pretty much the same, as well as I can remember, in short he said so much that notwithstanding all I could offer in thy vindication and insisting that the Journal was certainly the property of the family, as well as every curiosity Cousin had collected in the Voyage, yet the Dr. had stated his case in such terms, that James King looks on thee as highly culpable. Had my cousin at first insisted by the proper method of the Law for his brother's last will and Effects, as I advised, he would not only have had a great deal more of the Effects, but have saved both Expence and preserved the friendship of the Dr. and Mr. Lee. However if the Book be ready, I hope a Number may be sold so as to defray the Expence and afford thee something over; but am of opinion if they are not out soon, it will be a very great disadvantage. — Thy truly affectionate Cousin,

J. GOMELDON.

¶ This is not true. The doctor did offer first fifty and afterwards one hundred and fifty pounds.

Put thus to the trouble and expence of defending a suit in chancery, and the publication of my book being delayed when just ready to appear, I had yet no remedy but that of putting in a full answer to the bill, and praying a dissolution of the injunction. This I at length obtained ; the reasons for continuing the injunction not appearing satisfactory to the court; and indeed the pretended transfer of the property in my brother's manuscripts, from me to Joseph Banks, and from Joseph Banks to Dr. Hawkesworth, being attended with a circumstance, that, on the very face of it, might reasonably suggest some collusion. This was, that the alledged date of the assignment of such property, from Banks to Hawkesworth, was prior to that of the receipt for the five hundred pounds before-mentioned, given by Stanfield and Britannia Parkinson to Banks, on which the pretended right of the latter to such manuscript was founded. Can it be supposed, that a man of Dr. Hawkesworth's discretion and abilities would enter into an engagement of this nature, and make a purchase of such moment, without enquiring into the title of the vender?

Be this as it may, such is the fact. Indeed the whole purpose of the bill appears to be litigious, and calculated to answer no other end than to delay my publication, till he should get the start of me and publish his own : and this end, to my great damage and loss, it hath answered. In the mean while, and pending the suit between us, it is said that this prudential author sold the property of his own book, for no less a sum than six thousand pounds : a sum that probably would not have been given for it, had not an injunction been obtained against the publication of mine ; which contains an authentic journal of the last and principal voyage, *viz.* that of his majesty's ship The Endeavour.

Having thus given a simple unvarnished narrative of the causes of the delay of this publication, I submit its encouragement to the judgement and candour of the public. I cannot help concluding, however, with a short reflection or two on the conduct of my principal oppressors.

That of Joseph Banks, in particular, argues a high degree of insolence or avarice : possessed, as he was, of so large a collection of curiosities, as well as of my brother's



brother's drawings and designs, was it not covetous in him to desire also the little store bequeathed to me? Might not I cite, on this occasion, the parable of the prophet, and say to this gentleman, as Nathan did unto David, *thou art the man*? Would it not be with propriety also that I should look on his friend, Dr. Fothergill, as a kind of Ahithophel, by whose pernicious counsel I gave the staff out of my own hands, and by whose officious meddling, to say no worse of it, I have been involved in an expensive and troublesome law-suit? a proceeding the more reprehensible in him, as it is inconsistent with the peaceful rules of that religious society to which we mutually belong. As to Dr. Hawkesworth, I shall only say of him, that, for a man of reputed piety, he hath behaved on this occasion with sufficient eagerness after worldly profit; and hath shewn, that, whatever be his theory of moral sentiments, he is practically qualified for the highest post, in which the exercise of selfish talents may be displayed, and a desire of inordinate gain be gratified.\*

In respect to the comparative merits of his book and mine, it is not for me to say any thing. If I have justified myself in the eye of the impartial world for persisting in this publication, I shall leave the works of my brother to speak his talents; † thinking I have paid a proper respect to his memory, though it should be said of his journal, that its only ornament is truth, and its best recommendation, characteristic of himself, its genuine simplicity.

*Little-Pultney-street, Golden-square,  
June 5, 1773.*

Stanfield Parkinson.

\* It is said this gentleman hath been lately made an East-India director.

† Of those works are all, or most, of the drawings, published in Dr. Hawkesworth's narrative of the voyage of the ship Endeavour; although, while the name of the engraver is pompously displayed, that of the draughtsman, or original designer, is meanly and invidiously suppressed.









# WESTERN HEMISPHERE.

North Pole



South Pole

Engraved by Samuel John Neele N° 352 Strand.



# EASTERN HEMISPHERE.

North Pole



South Pole

Engraved by Samuel John Neale, No 35, Strand.







E X P L A N A T O R Y   R E M A R K S  
O N   T H E  
P   R   E   F   A   C   E  
T O  
S Y D N E Y   P A R K I N S O N ' S   J O U R N A L  
O F   A  
V O Y A G E   T O   T H E   S O U T H - S E A S.  
B Y   J O H N   F O T H E R G I L L,   M. D. F R. S.

**T**O an ingenuous mind, however innocent, it is a humiliating circumstance to be accused: even a consciousness of integrity, both in act and intention, cannot always efface the remembrance of unmerited, unjust imputations.

I feel myself no otherways affected by the accusations I am going to refute; and if I have borne them longer than my friends thought I should have done, I neither was indifferent, nor incapable of refuting them.

I must here acquaint the reader, that the preface to Sydney Parkinson's Journal was not written by the person who signs it. That he supplied the materials, I have no doubt; he was indeed "unqualified to address the publick"—"an unlettered man"—and was he capable of answering for himself I might say more. He had the fortune however to find out a person, whose talents and disposition were exactly suitable to such a work, and who has, indeed, "varnished his materials" admirably. I know the nominal author was incapable of writing a line of it—nay, those letters put down as his own have been corrected; otherwise, a much larger field of Italicks might have appeared than are so invidiously pointed out in a letter, which does the writer's heart great credit with every friend to truth and humanity. It is of consequence to the parties accused, that the reader should know this circumstance, and that whilst he is

d

perusing

perusing the preface to this journal, he is to consider it as the production of a venal pen, and of a writer who has had very little regard to either truth or character.

Another circumstance the reader ought likewise to be acquainted with—The unfortunate Stanfield Parkinson, who signs this preface, is now insane, in confinement, and must probably remain so for life.\* I write, therefore, as if I was treating of a person dead, and utterly incapable of answering for himself—no small disadvantage to an accused person, when the accuser is not present to support his charges—under such a situation, the supposition that he possibly could have done it, stands against the accused.

A short historical detail of this whole transaction, will perhaps be the most satisfactory means of enabling the reader to judge for himself, whether the parties charged in this preface are guilty, and deserve the censures therein passed upon them; or ought not only to be acquitted, as having acted with honour, but applauded for generosity.

I knew Parkinson's father when I studied at Edinburgh; I believe he deserved the character bestowed upon him in the preface, and I retain a just esteem for his memory.

When I removed from the city, about the year 1767, to my present abode in Harpur-Street, I became a member of that part of our religious society which is in Westminster, and to which likewise I found Stanfield Parkinson belonged.

The regard I had for the father, led me to inquire into the situation of the son, who I found was an Upholsterer by trade; Sydney Parkinson, whose journal follows, was then in town, and had engaged to accompany Joseph Banks, Esq; as his draughtsman, in his intended voyage to the South Seas. Being introduced to me in this character, I gave him some small proofs that I considered

\* Since this was written, he died insane in Luke's hospital.

him



him not only as a young man of much ingenuity, but of an unblemished character, and one, who, for his friends sake, I could wish to countenance.

After he embarked in the Endeavour, I took friendly notice of Stanfield Parkinson, for his father's and brother's sake; I occasionally employed him in some little affairs in the way of his business, lent him money on a pressing emergency, and shewed him every proper mark of regard.

Some time after the return of the Endeavour, he called to inform me, that he thought himself ill used by Joseph Banks; that he could neither obtain his brother's effects, nor a settlement of the account, and added many other accusations.

I informed him my engagements were such, that it was not in my power to spare time to inquire into such matters; that the gentleman he complained of would, I doubted not, render him the strictest justice, and more than this, be generous, if he would have patience and allow proper time for adjusting his affairs. I said this on a presumption, which I found afterwards sufficiently justified, that a gentleman of J. Banks's character could never submit to do any thing mean and unbecoming that rank in which he stood with the publick, on account of an undertaking which is yet unequalled.

Stanfield Parkinson repeatedly called upon me, to solicit my assistance in terminating this affair. Even his advocate acknowledges that I dissuaded him from all harsh measures; and this acknowledgment ought to have superseded the insinuation of "officious meddling." But to throw a great deal of dirt, in hopes that some will stick, seems to be the established maxim of this writer. In consequence of these reiterated applications, I wrote to J. Banks, to whom I was then personally a stranger, and acquainted him, "That at Stanfield Parkinson's request, I had taken the liberty to interfere in a business that did not concern me, and to which I thought myself very unequal, but should be much pleased if I could bring them together in such a way as to terminate the misunderstanding between them in an amicable manner."

In

In answer to this, I received the following letter, which, to my great satisfaction, I lately found amongst my papers, and which, I think, will afford the most convincing proof of our intentions. Another letter or two passed between us on the subject, which, thinking the matter only temporary, were destroyed. The letter follows :

“ D E A R   S I R,

“ **I** F E E L myself very much obliged to you, for having interested yourself  
 “ in settling the disputes between me and the Executors of Sydney Parkin-  
 “ son, deceased ; especially, as I always feared that without the good offices of  
 “ some disinterested person, equally to be trusted by both parties, they would  
 “ inevitably end in a law-suit of the most pettyfogging nature, which would  
 “ at once defeat any intention I had of serving them, and lead them into an  
 “ useless expence.

“ On leaving England, I agreed to give eighty pounds a year to S. Parkin-  
 “ son, besides his living of all kinds, as my draughtsman, to make drawings  
 “ for me : of this agreement, £. 151. 8s. 1d. is now due to his executors,  
 “ besides some small sum for such cloths, &c. of his, as I could dispose of,  
 “ or make use of in the ship, which I chose rather to do, than bring them  
 “ home liable to be damaged, as those which came home were in some  
 “ degree.

“ Curiosities of all kinds I gave up to them, and such of his papers as I  
 “ had, excepting only some loose sheets of a journal, which seemed to be only  
 “ foul copies of a fair journal that I never found, and which is now the chief  
 “ object of their enquiry ; these foul papers, as all the journal I had, was to  
 “ be given to Mr. Lee, for his reading, by S. Parkinson's own desire, expressed  
 “ to Dr. Solander just before he died : the curiosities I offered to purchase at  
 “ the time I delivered them, at such price as the executors should put upon  
 “ them, but was refused.

“ Now



“ Now as S. Parkinson certainly behaved to me, during the whole of his  
“ long voyage, uncommonly well, and with unbounded industry made for me  
“ a much larger number of drawings than I ever expected, I always did and  
“ still do intend to shew to his relations the same gratitude for his good services  
“ as I should have done to himself; the execution of this my intention was only  
“ delayed by the fear of being involved in a vexatious law-suit after all.

“ Now you, sir, in conversation with Dr. Solander, have been so good as to  
“ suggest a mode of pleasing all parties, which I confess I very much approve  
“ of; the only thing that now remains is, that, as a friend to both, you  
“ think of a certain sum to be paid by me to them, as an acknowledgement of  
“ S. Parkinson's good services, taking or not the curiosities, &c. just as may  
“ seem to you most proper: in this, if you are good enough to undertake it,  
“ I beg leave to hint, that I do not at all mean to be sparing in my acknowledg-  
“ ment; but to err rather on the other side, that any one who may hear the  
“ transaction may rather say that I have been generous than otherwise.

“ Your obliged, and very

“ Affectionate humble servant,

“ J O S E P H   B A N K S.”

Being thus left solely to compromise the difference between the parties, I  
endeavoured to view them both in the most impartial and dispassionate light.  
Whether my opinion was the most prudent, is now submitted to others to  
determine; that it appeared to me the most equitable and impartial, I can  
safely assert.

c

I did

I did not find there was any stipulated time reserved for the sole use of Sydney Parkinson during this expedition. His salary was fixed, his support engaged for—and of right, his time was the property of J. Banks, who paid this salary, and gave this support.

It followed then that the whole of S. Parkinson's labour as a draughtsman, or in whatever manner he might be employed towards promoting the object of this voyage was the property of his employer. This I considered as including notes, minutes, draughts, and other articles that required time to execute; which time was his master's.

But as it appeared, that he had used extraordinary diligence; had given the most ample satisfaction to J. Banks, both in respect to application and ability; that he was now no more, and could claim from him no farther acknowledgment, I judged that more than barely his wages was due, and embracing the liberty allowed me to propose what was generous, I thought if the sum of £151, which was due to the executors of this young man, was made up £500, it would be a most ample acknowledgment of his services; and prompt any other person who might attend in a second voyage, (which was then in agitation) in the same station, to exert himself with vigour, when he had before him such an instance of generous attention to extraordinary services. I endeavoured to make it my own case, both one side and the other. J. Banks very readily fell in with the proposal, and settled at the same time a pension upon a black woman, the wife of a faithful black servant who went out with him, and perished by the cold of Terra del Fuego.

With regard to the collection made by Sydney Parkinson, it seemed to approach very near being the property of J. Banks; yet part of it might be purchased—might be given him for particular services—might be collected at times when it would be unreasonable to expect he should be labouring at all. In these things I allowed him to be interested, yet with this reserve, that if he had collected any curiosities, which were not in the general collection, it would  
be



be right for J. B. to have every thing of that kind, as the collection could not have been made without his expence and assistance.

I proposed, therefore, in respect to these things, that J. B. should have the privilege of looking them all over—of selecting from them whatever might be agreeable to him, and returning the rest to Stanfield Parkinson.

When Sydney went out, I requested him, if he met with any rare marine productions, which did not interfere with the general business, that he would be kind enough to reserve a few specimens for me—this he promised, and had he lived would, I doubt not, have gratefully performed.

Stanfield allowed me to look over this part of his collection; requesting me at the same time to lay aside a few of such as I thought rare for his cousin at Newcastle. This I performed; took care in selecting for myself those I thought proper, that the rest of the collection should be as valuable as possible, by leaving duplicates, and in good condition.

At my request, and in pursuance of the opinion, that it was necessary that every curious article not in the general collection, if any such there should be, ought to make a part of it, both the shells I had selected for myself and S. P.'s relation, as well as those from whence they were taken, were all sent back to J. Banks, who after some time returned to me all those I had picked out, and those only. In this part of my negociation I was unfortunate. I had not made myself sufficiently understood. I meant that after J. B. had taken out of Sydney Parkinson's collection, whatever he might think fit to add to his own collection, not only those which I had selected, but the rest likewise should have been returned. Papers, manuscripts, drawings, and whatever related to the object of this voyage, the promotion of knowledge, were unexceptionably to be given up to J. Banks, who thought himself likewise entitled to the rest of the curiosities, as well as the manuscripts, papers, &c. in consideration of the ample satisfaction he had made, having presented the family with £349 more than was due to Parkinson; forty-nine of which he judged to be more than an equivalent

equivalent for the whole of his collection ; as indeed it proved to be from the prices they sold at in subsequent auctions.

After the shells were returned to me, I desired Parkinson to say what would content him for those I had selected. He told me that a dealer, who had seen the whole collection which his brother had made, in his absence, said they were worth two hundred pounds. I never fixed any value upon them. I never saw the whole, nor examined any part of his collection but the shells and corals. It is therefore an absolute untruth that I fixed any price upon this collection.

There is nothing more disagreeable than to fix a value upon another's property ; especially where that valuation has no certain standard. Things of this nature are to be rated according to opinion only. Determined therefore to follow the example I had proposed, I paid liberally for those I selected—above twice the real value, as the same kinds have since been sold for at publick auctions. I told him at the time, he must not expect to dispose of the rest on the like terms.

Incapable of feeling the generosity of my conduct, he immediately concluded, that what remained in the hands of J. Banks, were of much greater value than he had suspected ; and from that moment, became importunate to have every thing returned : and this, perhaps, was a principal motive to his future ungenerous and ungrateful conduct. The reader of Parkinson's preface, when he has considered these circumstances, will perhaps acquit me of the charge of having acted the part of a “ pretended friend.” If he does, what name must the man deserve, who had baseness enough to forge the injurious epithet ?

The sum of £500, which I had proposed to be paid by J. Banks, to the executors of Sydney Parkinson, as a full compensation for his extraordinary diligence, instead of £151, was accepted by both parties. I was present at the payment, a witness to the receipt, and hoped the dispute was amicably and honourably terminated.

Stanfield



Stanfield Parkinson then requested he might have the perusal of his deceased brother's papers. J. Banks complied with this request, though not without hesitation; the event too plainly proved, he had stronger reasons for his reluctance than I was aware of: he knew the man much better than I did. Thinking that it must afford Stanfield much satisfaction to peruse these last remains of his brother's industry, I requested it as a favour, engaging, as I thought I might do it safely, that no improper use should be made of them; I meant by printing, or communicating them to the publick in any mode whatsoever. My request was complied with, and he was put in possession of all the papers in J. Banks's custody.

That J. Banks was dissatisfied with the manner, at least, in which Parkinson made the request, was evident, and not without sufficient reason. After such an instance of generosity, as he had just exhibited to Parkinson's family, to have the shadow of a claim urged with heat, was not a little irritating.

By Parkinson's own confession in the preface, as soon as he had got the papers into his hands, it appears, that he immediately set to work to get them transcribed, engravings to be made from some drawings of his brother's, and to put the whole as fast as he could into a form for publication.

Some weeks after the business was, as I thought, happily terminated, I was informed, that Parkinson was preparing his brother's papers for the press. I sent for him immediately, to enquire into the truth of this report, and learned from him, to my astonishment, that the papers were transcribing for this purpose.

I asked, if he had forgot that I pledged myself to J. Banks, that no improper use should be made of them, in his hearing; and that he made not the least objection to my engaging on his behalf in this manner: and told him that it was a piece of the blackest treachery such a transaction could admit of, and he was treating me with no less ingratitude than injustice, silently to acquiesce with

my engaging for him, perhaps at the very moment he was resolving to avail himself of my good nature and humanity towards him, to do an irreparable injury to J. Banks and myself.

I entreated him, if he had any regard for his own interest and reputation, that he would immediately desist from a project, which would be ruinous in all probability to himself, and leave me exposed to reproaches, on my part wholly undeserved. The reader will much more easily conceive than I can express, what I felt on this occasion.

I urged him to lay aside an intention, which, if carried into execution, might involve us both in an imputation of notorious treachery.—Entreated him to recollect in what manner I had behaved to his brother, and himself, ever since I had known them; the acts of kindness I had repeatedly done to himself, and his family.—That it would be forfeiting, not only my future friendship, but the regard of every one who should be made acquainted with this signal act of ingratitude.—That his conduct would be a reproach to the whole society we belonged to, and that J. Banks, if he was not generous enough to think me incapable of it, might accuse me as a party in his guilt. He then promised to desist, upon my engaging to pay the expences he had incurred, for transcribing and engraving. I ordered him to bring me the amount of his expences, he did so, just as I was preparing to set out for Cheshire—I offered him a draft for the money; but he chose to stay for it till my return from the country. At which time, when I sent for him to finish the affair, I was informed the work was advancing, and that the expences were at least £300.

In vain I represented to him this double aggravation of his criminal conduct. All that I could urge was received with an obstinate resolution to persevere.

He said that J. Banks had used him ill, by retaining all the articles sent to him, some of which ought to have been returned to him, and were of as much value



value as the sum he had received ; and that he was therefore determined to do himself justice, by publishing his brother's papers, and informing the publick of his reasons.

This complaint I told him ought first to have been made to me, as I stood guarantee to J. Banks, that no such use should be made of his papers as was then intended ; if J. Banks had withheld any thing that was justly due to him, I was obliged to see justice done him, and should do it, either by application to J. Banks, or out of my own pocket. But all was in vain. Can the reader think, as S. Parkinson has insinuated, that because I declared this conduct ungrateful, therefore my friendship till now was “ meer pretence ?”

Finding all my endeavours to put a stop to this unexpected treacherous behaviour ineffectual, I prevailed upon a reputable sensible person, of our persuasion, and a member of the same meeting, to meet Parkinson at my house, to endeavour, if possible, to put an end to this most disagreeable business ; we met accordingly. What passed amongst us on this occasion, will probably appear most satisfactorily to the reader, from the mediator's own account of it, which I copied from his memorandum.

“ Substance of what passed at Dr. Fothergill's house, November the 22d,  
“ between Stanfield Parkinson and Dr. Fothergill, in the presence of John  
“ Hatch, who, a few days after, put it down in writing, to assist his memory,  
“ if he should be called upon as an evidence in the case.

“ J. Fothergill requested J. Hatch would meet Stanfield Parkinson, at  
“ J. F.'s house, which he did Nov. 22, 1772.

“ J. F. then informed J. Hatch, with the occasion of this appointment.  
“ The following is the purport of what passed between J. F. S. Parkinson,  
“ and John Hatch, on this occasion.

“ That

“ That S. P. had a dispute with Joseph Banks, which was likely to be  
“ attended with a law-suit ; but in order to serve S. P. and prevent so much  
“ trouble and expence, J. F. at the desire of S. P. had taken upon him to  
“ endeavour to settle the matter between them, which J. F. had effected in  
“ the following manner :

“ That Joseph Banks instead of paying S. Parkinson the sum of one hundred  
“ and forty pounds, or thereabouts, which was due to his deceased brother  
“ Sydney Parkinson, should pay Stanfield Parkinson the sum of five hundred  
“ pounds : for which S. P. should let J. Banks select such shells, &c. from  
“ his late brother's collection, as to make J. Banks's complete ; and that S. P.  
“ should make no use of his late brother Sydney Parkinson's papers or  
“ drawings : to which agreement Stanfield Parkinson being present made no  
“ objection.

“ But J. F. complained, that contrary to this agreement he found S. P.  
“ was preparing to publish his brother's observations, which S. P. acknow-  
“ ledged was true, and said he had expended upwards of sixty pounds on that  
“ account.

“ J. F. remonstrated with him on the injustice of such a procedure, and  
“ said for the sake of their own credit, and to avoid disputes, he (J. F.)  
“ desired S. P. would send him an account of what had been expended in  
“ preparing for the publication, and he (J. F.) would pay it him.

“ Accordingly the bill was sent, amounting to upwards of sixty pounds ;  
“ this happened to be about the time when J. F. was going into the country  
“ for some weeks, who soon after his return sent for S. P. in order to pay the  
“ aforesaid bill.

“ But to his great surprise, S. P. told J. F. the work was still going on,  
“ and that the sum of £300 was now expended thereon. J. F. again  
“ remonstrated



“ remonstrated with S. P. on the great injustice done him as a mediator  
 “ between them, but to no purpose, S. P. still persisting in publishing.

“ A little while after S. P. was withdrawn, J. F. desired J. Hatch would let  
 “ S. P. know that J. F. would pay this farther expence, provided he would  
 “ drop the publication : to which J. H. replied, that S. Parkinson told J. H.  
 “ that the work was carrying on so fast that he could not drop it ; on which  
 “ account J. H. did not carry this proposal to S. P.”

Having thus made use of every method in my power, but ineffectually, to prevent the publication of a work obtained from its rightful owner in this treacherous manner, nothing remained for me to do, but to assure my much injured friend J. Banks, that I felt the most poignant distress on this occasion : and that whilst I had been solely intent upon serving both parties, I had been made the instrument of injuring him so materially.

Though I knew Parkinson himself was incapable of publishing the papers which he had thus surreptitiously obtained ; yet it was not to be doubted, but he might readily find some needy writer, who would supply his defects, and perhaps rejoice at an opportunity of defaming those who were most justly entitled to commendation.

When the work appeared, this apprehension was fully justified ; it was ushered to the publick by a preface professing much specious candour, but containing a series of falsehood, misrepresentation, and abuse. To these is opposed the explanation here exhibited, and it is now before the publick, and will probably be before posterity, who will have no partial regards to the accuser or defendants : both have the right of appeal to that tribunal, to explain the motives of their conduct, and must submit to the equity of their decision.

That applications were made by a legal process to stop the appearance of this work by the publisher and booksellers concerned in the edition  
g
of

of Capt. Cook's Voyages, is true, and for very obvious reasons; the sale of it would lessen their benefits, in proportion to its value and its sale. The hope of gain had been Parkinson's chief object—he knew that a much more honourable place \* might and would have been reserved for doing justice to his brother's merit, than in a preface filled with invective and unjust insinuations against his brother's warmest friends. Could poor Sydney have foreseen that he was furnishing avarice and malevolence with the means of traducing such men, he would have swerved from the instructions of his cordial and intelligent friend,† who desired him to “minute every thing he saw, and “trust nothing to his memory.”

It may not be improper here to mention a fact, which, though of no great consequence in itself, is of moment to those who are under the disagreeable necessity of justifying their conduct before the publick.

Parkinson's plea for printing his brother's papers, was, “That Jos. Banks “never returned him any of the clothes, utensils, &c. which were sent to “Jos. Banks for his inspection.”

It was stipulated expressly, that every thing of this nature should be put into the hands of Jos. Banks. But it is evident, that Parkinson had reserved many drawings; whence, otherwise, came the plates which appear in this work?

And there are now in my possession, some clothes and instruments which were collected by Sydney Parkinson, which I purchased of Stanfield Parkinson's executors after his decease, and which were never sent to J. Banks, though *all* were promised. Hence it is very evident, this supposed detention, which might readily have been adjusted, was not the sole cause of the unrighteous act—but the hope of acquiring a large sum of money by the sale of this journal.

However artfully the tale was told, yet the publick could not readily adopt the partial and invidious narrative; they could not believe the account was true; it bore too evident marks of partiality, rancour, and injustice. And

\* The Natural History of this Voyage.

† James Lee.



sensible people could not but suspect the like temper might possibly pervade the work ; and that the same disregard to truth, the same varnish, might be employed to work up a recital of events and circumstances, more suited to the compiler's ideas, than the reality of a journal.

But there seems not much reason to apprehend the latter was the case. The reviser seems to have followed his original pretty closely. What errors it contains were chiefly made by the author, and it was not likely the editor could correct them.

Perhaps it may be asked, whence it happened that two persons, whose characters have been thus sharply attacked, could quietly remain so long under such imputations ? I shall answer for myself, and in doing that, shall perhaps suggest some reasons why J. Banks was as silent myself.

The consciousness of my innocence, and the disinterestedness of my views in this transaction, with a hope that the general tenour of my life, would prevent my suffering greatly in the opinion of those who knew any thing concerning me, alleviated much the sense of the injuries done to me ; and a persuasion, that sensible and impartial people, to whom J. Banks and myself were unknown, would discover in the narrative itself, so many instances of passion and partiality, as would lead them to suspect the charges to be the product of disappointment and malevolence.

Men who wish to pass without blame through life, naturally endeavour to have none imputed to them ; not even undeservedly. It is scarcely possible for persons of any feeling, not to wish to leave behind them an unfulfilled reputation ; and this not only for their own sakes, but for the sake of their friends, and their connections. Not forgetting, likewise, that they owe example to the publick.

Two reasons prevented me from attempting the justification I now submit to the reader's consideration before this time. The first, Parkinson and  
myself

myself were members of a community which enjoins it as an indispensable obligation, not to appeal to the publick, in matters of dispute or disagreement, till the means prescribed by that community have been tried to reconcile the difference.

Agreeable to this fundamental maxim, Parkinson ought first to have applied for justice, had I injured him, in the usual forms of our procedure. Instead of this, he at once, contrary to all advice, traduced me before the publick, and violated the rules of his profession. Had I followed in a reply, I should have been as guilty as himself; guilty of breaking through a regulation, that has been thought to do credit to our institution. I bore it therefore patiently, till a season might arrive when probably he might be, by the interposition of the society, made sensible of the breach of order, might be induced to reflect on the injustice he had done me, and, from conviction, do justice to a much injured character to the utmost of his power. To endeavour to make people sensible of their mistakes by forbearance, by reason, and the motives drawn from religious considerations, is the method we employ on these occasions.

Soon after the publication of this journal, the society finding one of their members exposed to publick censure, by another of the same profession, could not avoid taking notice of it in due form, and they treated with Parkinson, to make him sensible of the breach he had made in the rules of their discipline. After much labour, he was made to comprehend it so far as to own it, and was sorry for it. A written acknowledgment to be entered in the minutes of the society, is always expected on these occasions; whilst this was framing, such evident marks of insanity appeared, as to render it of no consequence to proceed with him any further.

The result of these proceedings, with those who are guilty of breaches of order, is to accept of their acknowledgment, if it appears to be competent and sincere; and this acknowledgment reinstates the offender in his former state of membership. If he proves refractory, he is declared not to belong to the society, in which case he is open to the common modes of prosecution.

Till,



Till, therefore, Parkinson had either reinstated himself in the society, by acknowledging and making proper satisfaction for the breach of a rule, which is not only known to the society itself, but to many intelligent people of other communities; or till he was disowned for refusing this satisfaction—no proper mode of proceeding to do myself justice presented itself. If he remained a member, my application must be to the society. If he refused submission to them, he would be no longer considered as a member, and I should then be left at liberty to seek redress as circumstances might require. It would be tedious and not interesting, to produce undeniable evidence in support of this narrative. So much as is here offered, will, I hope, be received with indulgence, when it is considered I am rescuing myself from charges that must otherwise remain unrefuted, perhaps, as long as letters are esteemed either in this or other nations; for the engravings in this work, as well as the importance of the voyage, will always give the book a place in the libraries of the inquisitive.

It is not improbable, but that a hope of gaining considerably by the sale of this book, might be a very strong inducement to Parkinson to trample in this manner on the laws of friendship, gratitude, and justice. Some of the Endeavour's crew, who soon came about him, after their arrival in England, for their own private ends, buoyed him up with hopes of vast advantage from his brother's labours. This rendered him deaf to all advice; induced him to break the promise he had made me to stop the publication; involved him in many difficulties in respect to his circumstances; and, it is much to be feared, contributed to his ruin. He owned to some of his acquaintance before his faculties were quite disordered, "That he had used me wickedly."

It became necessary soon after his confinement, to look into his affairs, when it appeared, that not much more was left than would barely satisfy his creditors. His wife died a little before he became quite insane, and his children are maintained by the society, of which he was a member.

Amongst his effects were found some remains of his brother's collection of clothes and utensils, though but few, and about four hundred copies of this journal : those who had the management of his concerns, made me an offer of these copies, which I bought at their own price, together with the plates belonging to this work.

There had always appeared to me a great difficulty in respect to a justification of myself from his charges : to do this in a common news-paper, or in a pamphlet, though it might serve the present purpose, yet the calumny would be handed down to posterity ; and if an exculpation gained the notice of a few cotemporaries, it stood but little chance of surviving when personal regard was at an end.

I cheerfully accepted the offer made me of purchasing the remaining copies, as the possession of them would afford me an opportunity of transmitting to future time, such an account of this transaction as might enable those who perused the charge, to judge of it fairly for themselves.

When the reader reflects on the several circumstances here related, and considers this poor man as necessitous, disappointed in his views, and under the commencement of insanity, it will not be difficult to account for his extraordinary behaviour to persons who had acted in all things towards him with disinterestedness and generosity.

J O H N   F O T H E R G I L L.



## P O S T S C R I P T.

SOON after the publication of Parkinson's Journal, a gentleman to whom I was very well known, and who is now absent on duty, in a remote part of the world, was so much affected with the injurious treatment I had met with, as to be at the pains of drawing up the following remarks on the preface, with a view to get them inserted in the Monthly Review. With this intention he put them into my hands, where they have lain ever since. As, on perusing them, I find they have touched upon some circumstances which are not directly noticed in the preceding narrative, it seemed not improper to add them to these remarks.

### To the Publisher of the Monthly Review.

Among the many uses to the publick of a literary review, it cannot be the least, nor out of character, to convey a candid defence against an unjust attack. In virtue of this plea it is that I claim your insertion of this address to you.

A kind of solemn appeal to the publick having been lodged in Mr. Parkinson's preface to his publication of certain remains of his brother's journal and draughts, on his voyage to the South-Seas, in the Endeavour, against the ill treatment pretended to have been received by him, relative to such his edition; in which appeal he has especially involved Dr. Fothergill; it is from a particular regard of this gentleman's character, that the following  
remarks

remarks are derived: yet does the love of truth so far in me out-weight all partiality, that the points of the greatest importance to the decision, are principally taken from Mr. Parkinson's own account of the matter, without falsifying any fact, or straining any inference.

Upon the face then of the premises it appears, that Dr. Fothergill, without the shadow of any interest so much as insinuated, but presumptively with the best of intentions, and agreeably to his well known usual humanity, interfered for the service and satisfaction of Mr. Parkinson, to whose "religious society," to use Mr. Parkinson's own words, the doctor also belonged: it was under this friendly mediation that Mr. Banks, whose debt to the deceased for his salary is not pretended to have been more than about one hundred and fifty pounds, consented to add the sum of three hundred and fifty pounds, which surely was a noble addition, and might very well be allowed to include in it, at once, the gratuity intended as a *douceur* to the family, for the loss they sustained in the death of so valuable a relation, and a consideration as well for any distinction that could be set up between the drawings of the hired botanical draughtsman, and those of the draughtsman in general, as for all the vast treasure of cockle shells, plants, stuffed birds, savage garments, utensils, and implements of war, said to have been left, of infinite curiosity, no doubt; but hardly of so much value as to tempt Mr. Banks to cheat Mr. Parkinson's heirs of them.

That Mr. Banks, however, imagined that this additional sum of three hundred and fifty pounds gave him a right to a fair and full clearance (and perhaps the reader may imagine so too) stands presumably proved by his having prepared a general release, to be signed by Mr. Parkinson and sister on their receipt of the sum, thus even generously made up five hundred pounds; and that it was not signed by them appears, by Mr. Parkinson's own account, to have been purely owing to some delay made necessary by a point of form. (See preface, p. xv.)

That



That Dr. Fothergill might, at that time, promise his good offices for Mr. Banks's letting him have some of those curiosities back that Mr. Parkinson there says he wished to have back, is not at all improbable, if it be true that he expressed at that time such a wish ; but that he should make the receiving them back a condition of his signing the receipt of the £500, is not, perhaps, quite so credible. Whoever, also, will think it worth his while to peruse Mr. Parkinson's own account, his own confession of presence at Dr. Fothergill's engaging for the return of the brother's manuscript, and not contradicting such engagement, will hardly not see and feel that he was bound by it in honour and in justice.

To how poor a prevarication and subterfuge has he recourse in his pitiful chicanery about the expression of making an improper use of his brother's papers ! Can he think to impose on any one, that by that " improper use " he did not understand himself precluded from publishing any thing of his brother's, relative to that voyage, which Mr. Banks might wish not to be published ?

By all accounts then, not even excluding Mr. Parkinson's own state of the case, it appears, that after a final end had (by Mr. Banks's justice pushed to the length of great generosity) been put to any further claim on this part of Mr. Parkinson, for any debts or effects of his brother's, he expressed a very natural curiosity to have the perusal of his journal and manuscripts, very lawfully and honourably in Mr. Banks's possession. Upon which Mr. Banks, with a mistrust which Mr. Parkinson has since abundantly justified, expressing an unwillingness to trust them out of his hands, Dr. Fothergill, in that true spirit of humanity which constantly characterises him, observed, that it would be rather hard to deny a brother such a natural gratification, and interceded for Mr. Banks's letting Mr. Parkinson have them, saying, " They should be " returned, and no improper use made of them." (See preface, p. xv.)

Now what that improper use meant, I presume, there is no reader who will not instantly construe and allow that Mr. Parkinson was at least in honour bound by it, relatively to Dr. Fothergill, who had thus humanely and kindly undertaken for him.

What the sentiments of an intimate friend of his brother's were, who, in a letter to this Parkinson, accuses him of a treachery and avarice that make him shudder for his treatment of so worthy a person as Dr. Fothergill, the reader may see in page xviii of that preface, and judge whether Parkinson's answer to it does not add to the criminality of the ingratitude and breach of trust contained in the transaction, the meanness of shuffling and equivocation in an endeavour to justify it. Mean while the situation of Dr. Fothergill is singularly cruel; his humanity, his tenderness for a brother's supposed fraternal feelings, a desire of procuring him a satisfaction he judged but natural, having made him undertake for one whom he could not conceive possible to be guilty of so mean, so dishonourable a procedure, have exposed him to the reproaches of Mr. Banks, if one so much of a gentleman as Mr. Banks could be capable of not doing justice to the intention, however hurt by the consequences; while, on the other hand, Mr. Parkinson has in his preface aimed at presenting him to the publick in the light of one who is an accomplice of Mr. Banks's in his oppressive procedure, and partial to his injustice, at the same that it will clearly appear, that nothing could be more generous than Mr. Bank's dealing with Mr. Parkinson; nor more humane and friendly, than Dr. Fothergill's interposition in his favour. And such his return from him! Upon which let the reader himself decide, whether this case is not one of those that may fairly be added to the catalogue, already terribly too long, of instances of the danger of doing good. And the reader will also please to observe, that in the premises there have been no consequences drawn but what palpably arise from facts of Mr. Parkinson's own furnishing.

F I N I S.





A  
JOURNAL  
OF A  
VOYAGE to the SOUTH SEAS,  
In his Majesty's Ship The ENDEAVOUR.



ON the 22d of July, 1768, I went on board the ship, ENDEAVOUR, then lying in the Galleons Reach, in the river Thames: on the 3d of August arrived in the Downs; and then sailed for Plymouth Sound, where we anchored on the 14th, and took on board some more seamen, with a few marines. Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Mr. Green, with their attendants, also joined us at this port; and our number was then increased to ninety six. Having taken in some more stores and guns, and made a few necessary alterations in the ship, on the 26th of August we sailed from Plymouth, with the wind at N. N. W. but it did not continue long in that quarter, but changed to S. W. where it held till the 2d of September, soon after which, we discovered Cape Ortugal. From this time, till the 4th of October, we had variable winds, and then we saw Cape Finistere at about ten leagues distance.

We continued our course, and met with no material occurrence till the 12th; when we discovered Puerto Santo, about nine leagues off; soon after we saw the island of Madeira; and, on the 13th, in the morning, anchored in Fonchiale Bay.

This country is very mountainous, yet it is cultivated to the very tops of the mountains; and, being covered with vines, citrons, oranges, and many other fine fruit-trees, it appears like one wide, extended, beautiful, garden. During our stay on this island we resided at Fonchiale, which is the capital. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander lodged at the house of the British consul, W. Cheap, esq. and made several excursions into the country.

A great part of the best provisions used on this island are imported from England and other parts of Europe, especially such as are eaten at dinner; from whence also they import most of their utensils and wearing-apparel; so that many of the necessaries of life bear a very high price amongst them.

While the ship lay in this harbour, we had the misfortune of losing Mr. Ware, the chief-mate, who was a very honest worthy man, and one of our best seamen. His death was occasioned by an unlucky accident which happened to him while he stood in the boat to see one of the anchors slipped. The buoy-rope happening to entangle one of his legs, he was drawn overboard and drowned before we could lend him any assistance.

Having taken in a supply of water, wines, and other necessaries, on the 19th of September we proceeded on our voyage, with the wind at E. S. E. and on the 22d saw the islands of Salvages, at about two leagues and a half distance. They lie between Madeira and the Canaries, are small and uninhabited.

On the 23d we fell in with the trade-winds at N. E. and on the same day discovered the peak of Teneriffe.

On the 24th we sailed between that peak and the grand Canary islands. In our passage we saw some land birds, and caught two of them, which were very much like our water wag-tail.

On the 29th, we had a view of the island of Bona Vista, at about four leagues distance.

Nothing



Nothing material occurred from the 29th to the 7th of October; then we had variable winds, with some showers of rain; and the dampness of the air greatly affected all our iron utensils. We caught two sea swallows, and several curious marine animals, of the molusca tribe, such as sea-worms, star-fish, and sea urchins.

On the 21st, we reached the S. E. trade wind, and continued our course without any remarkable occurrence till the 8th of November; then we discovered land at about eight leagues distance, and spoke with the crew of a Portuguese fishing vessel, of whom Mr. Banks bought a great quantity of fish, among which were dolphins and breams, which afforded much speculation to our naturalists. After having left the vessel, we stood in for the land, which proved to be the Brazils; and coasted along the shore till the 13th, and then sailed into the harbour of Rio de Janeiro, which lies in latitude  $22^{\circ} 56'$  south, and longitude  $42^{\circ} 45'$  west; but before we arrived in the harbour, the captain had sent Mr. Hicks, the first lieutenant, and the chief mate, in the pinnace, to the viceroy, to obtain a pilot; however, as the wind was fair, the captain ventured to continue sailing on, and was assisted by signals from the forts.

The viceroy detained the lieutenant and the mate, and sent back the pinnace with three of his own officers in it (of which one was a colonel) but no pilot. The colonel told us, that our officers would only be detained till the ship should be examined, according to custom: we therefore stood forward into the harbour, and anchored near the north end of Ilhos dos Scobros, or Snakes Island; but the colonel would not permit any of us to go ashore.

Our lieutenant had been instructed to evade answering any questions the Portuguese might ask him respecting our destination; or at least to answer them with reserve: the captain thought such questions would be impertinent, as our vessel was a ship of war; and the lieutenant observed these directions.

The viceroy held a council, the result of which was, to prohibit any person coming on shore from our ship; but they condescended to order all necessary

supplies to be sent to us. We were displeased on receiving this intelligence, as we had expected to have met with agreeable entertainment on shore. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander appeared much chagrined at their disappointment: but, notwithstanding all the viceroy's precautions, we determined to gratify our curiosity, in some measure, and having obtained a sufficient knowledge of the river and harbour, by the surveys that we had made of the country, we frequently, unknown to the sentinel, stole out of the cabin window at midnight, letting ourselves down into a boat by a rope; and, driving away with the tide till we were out of hearing, we then rowed to some unfrequented part of the shore, where we landed, and made excursions up into the country, though not so far as we could have wished to have done. The morning after we went ashore, my eyes were feasted with the pleasing prospects that opened to my view on every hand. I soon discovered a hedge in which were many very curious plants in bloom, and all of them quite new to me. There were so many, that I even loaded myself with them. We found also many curious plants in the fallading that was sent to us; and desired the people that brought it to procure us, if possible, all the different sorts that grew upon the island.

We had plenty of fish from the markets every day, of which they are furnished with a great variety.

We often picked off some curious molusca from the surface of the sea; and also land insects of several kinds alive, which floated round the ship upon the water.

The country, adjacent to the city of Rio de Janeiro, is mountainous, full of wood, and but a very little part of it appears to be cultivated. The soil near the river is a kind of loam, mixt with sand; but farther up in the country we found a fine black mould. All the tropical fruits, such as melons, oranges, mangoes, lemons, limes, cocoa nuts and plantains, are to be met with here in great plenty. The air, it seems, is but seldom extremely hot, as they have a breeze of wind from the sea every morning; and generally a land wind at night\*.

\* S. Parkinson had not been idle from the time he left England, having, as appeared by a letter from him to his brother, finished 100 drawings on various subjects, and taken sketches of many more; which he intended to have finished if he had lived to return.



On the 7th of December, 1768, our necessary provisions, and other supplies, having been taken on board, we left the harbour of Rio de Janeiro, coasting along the Brazils, and met with nothing worthy of note till the 22d of the same month, except, that in coming out of the harbour, Mr. Flowers, an experienced seaman, fell from the main shrouds into the sea, and was drowned before we could reach him.

On the 22d, we saw a great many birds of the procellaria genus, in latitude  $39^{\circ} 37'$  S. and longitude  $49^{\circ} 16'$  W. and we also met with shoals of porpoises of a very singular species.

On the 23d of December, we observed an eclipse of the moon; and about seven in the morning a bright cloud in the west, from which a stream of fire proceeded: it bore away to the westward, and about two minutes after we heard two loud explosions like that of a cannon; and then the cloud soon disappeared.

On the 24th, we caught a logger-head tortoise, which weighed one hundred and fifty pounds; and shot several birds, one of which was an albatros, that measured, from the tip of one wing to the other, nine feet one inch; and from the beak to the tail two feet one inch and a half. Some time after, we met with some birds of the same kind that measured fourteen feet from the tips of the wings.

The thermometer, in the middle of the day, was from 66 to 69; and in the evening 62, when the air was not so dry.

On the 29th, we saw several parcels of rock weed; and, from this time to the 30th, the weather was very unsettled; the wind sometimes blowing very hard; at others only a moderate gale; and then quite calm.

For several evenings, swarms of butterflies, moths, and other insects, flew about the rigging, which we apprehended had been blown to us from the shore. Thousands of them settled upon the vessel; Mr. Banks ordered the men to gather them

up;

up ; and, after selecting such as he thought proper, the rest were thrown overboard ; and he gave the men some bottles of rum for their trouble.

On the 31st, we had much thunder, lightening, and rain, and saw several whales : we saw also some birds about the size of a pigeon, with white breasts and grey beaks.

On the 4th of January, 1769, we saw a cloud which we took for Pepy's Island, and made toward it till we were convinced of our mistake. The air at this time was cold and dry, and we had frequent squalls of wind.

On the 6th, we saw several penguins, with many other sea birds ; and, on the 7th, had an exceeding hard gale of wind from S. W. in latitude  $51^{\circ} 25'$  S. and longitude  $62^{\circ} 44'$  W. We supposed ourselves not far from Falkland's Islands, but, not knowing their longitude, we could not so readily find them.

From several circumstances which occurred on the 8th, it was concluded that we had failed between Falkland's Islands and the main land ; and were in hopes of touching at the former place, from which we designed to have forwarded some letters to Europe.

On the 11th, we discovered Terra del Fuego ; but, having contrary winds, and being apprehensive of danger from the foulness of the ground, which we discovered by foundering, we kept out at sea.

On the 16th, the wind changing in our favour, we approached the land ; and at length anchored in Port Maurice's Bay, situated in latitude  $54^{\circ} 44'$  S. and longitude  $66^{\circ} 15'$  W. Some of our principal people went ashore, and found several pieces of brown European broad cloth, in a hut that had been deserted by the natives. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander collected a great number of plants, shot several birds, and returned to the ship much pleased with their adventure.

On the 17th we left Port Maurice's Bay ; and, at about one o'clock in the afternoon, anchored in the bay of Good Success.

We









A Man, Woman & Child, Natives of Terra del Fuego, in the Drefs of that Country.



We had not been long arrived before some Indians appeared on the beach at the head of the bay; the captain, Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander, went on shore, and soon after returned on board with three of them, whom we cloathed in jackets; gave them some bread and beef, part of which they ate, and carried the remainder with them ashore: We gave them also some rum and brandy; but, after tasting it, they refused to drink any more, intimating, by signs, that it burnt their throats. This circumstance may serve to corroborate the opinion of those, who think that water is the most natural, and best drink for mankind, as well as for other animals.

One of the Indians made several long orations to the rest; but they were utterly unintelligible to every one of us. Another of them seeing the leathern cover of a globe lie in the cabin, found means to steal it, and secrete it under his garment, which was made of a skin of some animal, and carried it ashore, undiscovered; where he had no sooner arrived, than he shewed his prize to the very person it belonged to, and seemed to exult upon the occasion, placing it upon his head, and was highly delighted with it.

The natives make a very uncouth and savage appearance, [see pl. I.] having broad flat faces, small black eyes, low foreheads, and noses much like those of negroes, with wide nostrils, high cheeks, large mouths, and small teeth. Their hair, which is black and straight, hangs over their foreheads and ears, which most of them had smeared with brown and red paint; but, like the rest of the original inhabitants of America, they have no beard. None of them seemed above five feet ten inches high; but their bodies are thick and robust, though their limbs are small. They wear a bunch of yarn made of guanica's\* wool upon their heads, which, as well as their hair, hangs down over their foreheads. They also wear the skins of guanicas and of seals, wrapped round their shoulders, sometimes leaving the right arm uncovered. Both men and women wear necklaces, [see pl. XXVI. fig. 14] and other ornaments made of a small pearly perriwinckle, very ingeniously plaited in rows with a kind of grass. We saw also an ornament made of shells,

\* An animal something like a sheep, but of the size of a mule, and has a thick fleece.

which

which was ten yards long. The shells that composed it were of several sizes ; the largest, about the size of a damascene stone, were placed at one end, from whence they gradually lessened to the other end of the string, where the shells were not bigger than a pepper corn. The larger ornaments are worn about their waists. Many of both sexes were painted with white, red, and brown, colours, in different parts of their bodies ; and had also various dotted lines pricked on their faces. The women wear a flap of skin tied round their loins ; and have also a small string round each ankle : they carry their children on their backs, and are generally employed in domestic drudgery.

These poor Indians live in a village [see pl. II.] on the south side of the bay, behind a hill ; the number of their huts is about thirteen, and they contain near fifty people, who seem to be all the inhabitants of this dreary part of the island, where it is very cold, even in the midst of summer.

Their huts are made of the branches of trees, covered with guanica and seal skins ; and, at best, are but wretched habitations for human beings to dwell in.

Their food is the flesh of seals and shell-fish, particularly muscles, of which we have seen some very large.

They use bows and arrows with great dexterity. The former are made of a species of wood somewhat like our beech ; and the latter of a light yellow wood feathered at one end, and acuated at the other with pieces of clear white chrystal, chipped very ingeniously to a point. [See pl. XXVI. fig. 26.]

There are dogs upon this island two feet high, with sharp ears.

Having seen several rings and buttons upon the natives, we concluded that they must have had some communication with the Indians in the Straights of Magellan ; but they appeared to be unacquainted with Europeans.

The Bay of Good Success is about three miles in extent, from east to west ; two miles in breadth ; is defended from east winds by Staten-land. Near the shore it is  
very





J. Newton sculp.

View of a Village in the Bay of Good Success, in the Island of Terra del Fuego.

A. Buchanan del.







very foul, and full of rocks; abounding with great quantities of sea weed. The soundings are regular from fourteen, to four fathoms; and, at the bottom of the bay, there is a fine sandy beach.

During our stay on this island, the naturalists collected a great many plants, and other curiosities, most of which are non-descript: but an unfortunate accident happened in one of their excursions; Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Mr. Buchan, with several attendants, two of whom were negroes, went far up into the country, and at length ascended the hills, which they found covered with snow, and the air upon them so intensely cold, that they staid but a short time. On their return, they missed their way, and wandered about for a considerable time, not knowing whither they went; but at length they found their former track. While the naturalists were searching for plants upon the hill, two negroes and a sailor, who were left to guard the liquor and provision, having made too free with the brandy-bottle, were rendered incapable of keeping pace with the rest of the company, who made all possible speed, hoping to have reached the ship before the day closed in upon them, dreading the consequence of being exposed in a strange land, and an inhospitable clime; but time, that waits for no man, brought on the night, which put an end to their hopes, and excited the most alarming apprehensions: Being out of breath, fatigued, and dispirited, and almost benumbed with cold, particularly Dr. Solander, inasmuch that he was unable to walk, and was carried near two hours on their shoulders; and it was thought he would not have survived the perils of the ensuing night. In this hapless situation, they held a consultation on what was best to be attempted for their preservation, till the light of the morning should return; and determined, if possible, to kindle a fire, which they happily effected, gathering together some wood, and, by the help of their fowling pieces, and some paper, setting it on fire. The cold was so intense, that they found it would not be safe to lie down, lest they should fall asleep, and be frozen to death; wherefore they walked round it all night. The three men who were left behind, being tired, sat down in the woods, and fell asleep, but one of them providentially soon awoke, started up, and, being apprehensive of the imminent danger they were in, attempted to rouse his companions, but they were too far sunk into the sleep of death to be recovered. In this forlorn situation the man could not expect to survive them long, and therefore he fled for his life, hallooing as he went along, in

hopes that some of the company would hear him, which, after wandering some time in a pathless wilderness, they happily did, and answered him as loud as their enfeebled voices would admit: Overjoyed at the event, he resumed fresh courage, and, making toward the part from which the sound proceeded, at length came up with them. Touched with sympathy for his companions, he told the company of the condition in which he left them; and they were disposed to have yielded them assistance, but, it being almost dark, there was not any probability of finding them, and the attempt would have been attended with the risque of their own lives; they therefore declined it. However, the next morning, after break of day, they dispatched the man in quest of his companions, whom he at length found frozen to death; but the dog that had been with them all the night had survived them: he found him sitting close by his master's corpse, and seemed reluctant to leave it; but at length the dog forsook it, and went back to the company; they all set out immediately towards the ship, which they reached about 11 o'clock in the forenoon, to our great joy, as we had despaired of their return.

Having furnished ourselves with wood and water, and let down our guns and lumber below deck, to be better prepared for the high gales which we expected in going round Cape Horn; on the 21st of January, 1769, we weighed anchor, and left the Bay of Good Success, and proceeded on our voyage through the Straits of Le Maire, which are formed by Cape Antonio on Staten-land, and Cape Vincent on Terra del Fuego to the north; and on the south by Cape Bartholomew on Staten-land, and a high promontory on Terra del Fuego, passing between them, and are about nine leagues long, and seven broad.

The land on both sides, particularly Staten-land, affords a most dismal prospect, being made up chiefly of barren rocks and tremendous precipices, covered with snow, and uninhabited, forming one of those natural views which human nature can scarce behold without shuddering. — How amazingly diversified are the works of the Deity within the narrow limits of this globe we inhabit, which, compared with the vast aggregate of systems that compose the universe, appears but a dark speck in the creation! A curiosity, perhaps, equal to Solomon's, though accompanied with less wisdom than was possessed by the Royal Philosopher, induced some of



us to quit our native land, to investigate the heavenly bodies minutely in distant regions, as well as to trace the signatures of the Supreme Power and Intelligence throughout several species of animals, and different genera of plants in the vegetable system, "from the cedar that is in Lebanon, even unto the hyssop that springeth out of the wall:" and the more we investigate, the more we ought to admire the power, wisdom, and goodness, of the Great Superintendant of the universe; which attributes are amply displayed throughout all his works; the smallest object, seen through the microscope, declares its origin to be divine, as well as those larger ones which the unassisted eye is capable of contemplating: but to proceed.

On the 25th, we saw Cape Horn, at about five leagues distance, which, contrary to our expectations, we doubled with as little danger as the North Foreland on the Kentish coast; the heavens were fair, the wind temperate, the weather pleasant, and, being within one mile of the shore, we had a more distinct view of this coast, than perhaps any former voyagers have had on this ocean.

The point of the Cape is very low; and at the S. E. extremity there are several islands, called, by the French, Isles d'Hermitage; and near it are several ragged rocks. The Cape is in latitude  $55^{\circ} 48'$  S. and longitude  $67^{\circ} 40'$  W. We sounded in fifty-five fathom, and found round stones, and broken shells.

On the 30th, we reached to latitude  $60^{\circ} 2'$  S. and longitude  $73^{\circ} 5'$  W. variation  $24^{\circ} 54'$  E. This was our highest southern latitude; and from thence we altered our course, steering W. N. W. with but little variation, having pleasant weather, and short nights, until the 16th of February, when we had hard gales from W. by S. S. by W. and S. and we continued our course N. W. till the 10th; between that time and the 20th, we had very copious dews, like small showers of rain.

On the 21st, we saw a great number of tropic and egg birds, and shot two of the former, which had a very beautiful plumage, being a fine white, mingled with a most lively red: their tails were composed of two long red feathers; and their beaks were of a deep red. We found ourselves at this time in latitude  $25^{\circ} 21'$  S. and longitude  $120^{\circ} 20'$  W. having fair weather, with a dry, serene, and salubrious air.

Continuing our course N. westerly, between the Dolphin's first and second track, on the 4th of April, about three o'clock in the afternoon we discovered land; and after two hours sailing we approached near to it. It is a flat island, extending a great length from E. to W. describing the form of a crescent; and has a sand-bank joined to it, on which the surf ran very high. In the middle of the island, there is a large salt lagoon, or lake; and at the east end of it are many palm trees. We saw clouds of smoke ascend from different parts, proceeding, as we apprehended, from fires kindled by the natives, and designed as signals to us. Night came on before we could discover the west end of the island; and not knowing but there might be more islands, we lay-to all night, and the next morning we saw another in latitude  $18^{\circ} 23'$ , which, on account of a great salt lagoon in the middle of it, we called Lagoon-Isle: Before noon we made another low island, which we called Thumb-cap Island. It stretched a long way, and is made up of several parcels of land joined together by reefs: it has also a lagoon inclosed with a reef, upon which we discovered many canoes; some having ten people in them, and others a lesser number. As we sailed along, the natives followed us, some on the reef, others in canoes, and seemed desirous to have an intercourse with us; but though we beckoned to them, they would not come off. They appeared to be very stout men; their complexion almost black, with short hair, and quite naked, having long lances, or poles, in their hands. Some of them waded up to the neck in water to look at us, but they did not discover any hostile intentions. Their canoes had out-riggers, with mat-sails: and when we put away from the land one of them followed us.

Upon these islands we saw a variety of verdant trees, amongst which were some palms; and upon the coast, rocks of coral appeared above water. We discovered some of their huts, and several fires burning around them. The land formed a large semicircular bay, and the reef before it the same figure; and the water was as smooth as a mill-pond, and abounded with flying-fish; but, to our surprise, we could not reach the bottom of it with 130 fathom of line, at one mile distance from the shore.

This



This day we also discovered another low island, which we called Chain Island: It is of an oval figure, consisting of a ridge of coral and sand, with a few clumps of small trees, and had a lagoon in the middle of it. These islands were dedicated to the Royal Society.

In the morning of the 10th, we saw Osnabrug Island, bearing N. W. by W. half W. about six leagues distant, and, leaving it to the northward, at noon we discovered George's Island from the main-top mast head, and stood toward it.

The 12th, the sea being mostly calm in the forenoon, we could get very little nearer land; but many of the Indians came off to us in canoes (one of which was double, and had much carved work upon it) bringing with them cocoa nuts, and apples, to truck for nails, buttons, and beads. These canoes were but just wide enough for one person to sit in the breadth: to prevent them from oversetting, they place out riggers, upon the top of which is fixed a bamboe fishing rod. The people in the canoes were of a pale, tawny, complexion, and had long black hair. They seemed to be very good-natured, and not of a covetous disposition; giving us a couple of cocoa nuts, or a basket of apples, for a button, or a nail.

While we lay before these islands, we had squalls of wind, some calms, and heavy showers of rain. Toward night we opened the N. W. point, and discovered the island named by the Dolphin's people, York Island, and called by the natives, as we afterwards learned, Eimayo. A breeze springing up, we lay off and on all that night; and, on the 13th, we made the island of Otaheite, called by the Dolphin's people George's Island, which is opposite to York Island. We entered Port Royal harbour, called by the natives Owarrowarrow, and anchored in nine fathom water, within half a mile of the shore. The land appeared as uneven as a piece of crumpled paper, being divided irregularly into hills and valleys; but a beautiful verdure covered both, even to the tops of the highest peaks. A great number of the natives came off to us in canoes, and brought with them bananas, cocoas, bread-fruit, apples, and some pigs; but they were errant thieves; and, while I was busied in the forenoon in trucking with them for some of their cloth, (an account of which will be given hereafter,) one of them pilfered an earthen vessel out of my cabin. It

was

was very diverting to see the different emotions which the natives expressed at the manœuvres of our ship. They were very social, and several of them came on board; some of them remembered such of our people as had been there in the Dolphin, and seemed highly pleased at our arrival. The captain and Mr. Banks went on shore; but they returned greatly disappointed, as they could not find the principal inhabitants, and perceived that many of their houses had been taken down since the Dolphin left them.

On the 14th, in the morning, a great number of the natives came to us, round a reef point towards the south, and were very troublesome, attempting to steal every thing they could lay their hands upon: they brought with them only two or three hogs, which they would not exchange for any thing but hatchets. Among the rest who visited us, there were some people of distinction in double canoes: their cloaths, carriage, and behaviour evinced their superiority. I never beheld statelier men, [see pl. III.] having a pleasant countenance, large black eyes, black hair, and white teeth. They behaved very courteously, and expressed some uneasiness at the conduct of the rest. We entertained them in the cabin, and then bent our sails, taking them with us for guides, till we had doubled the point, where we found a fine bay to anchor in. In the afternoon, a small party of us made an excursion into the country, and the inhabitants followed us in great numbers. At length, being fatigued, we sat down under the shade of some lofty trees, the undulation of whose leaves rendered it very cool and pleasant. The high cocoas, and the low branching fruit trees, formed an agreeable contrast; while the cloud-topped hills, appearing between them, added to the natural grandeur of the prospect. The inhabitants stood gaping around us while we feasted on the coconut-milk, which afforded us a pleasing repast.

On the 15th, in the morning, several of the chiefs, one of which was very corpulent, came on board from the other point, and brought us some hogs; we presented them with a sheet and some trinkets in return; but some of them took the liberty of stealing the top of the lightening-chain. We went ashore, and pitched the markee: Mr. Banks, the captain, and myself, took a walk in the woods, and were afterwards joined by Mr. Hicks, and Mr. Green. While we were walking,  
and





J. Parkinson del.

R. B. Godfrey Sc.

*A Native of Otaheite, in the Dress of his Country.*





and enjoying the rural scene, we heard the report of some fire-arms, and presently saw the natives fleeing into the woods like frightened fawns, carrying with them their little moveables. Alarmed at this unexpected event, we immediately quitted the wood, and made to the side of the river, where we saw several of our men, who had been left to guard the tent, pursuing the natives, who were terrified to the last degree; some of them skulked behind the bushes, and others leaped into the river. Hearing the shot rattle amongst the branches of the trees over my head, I thought it not safe to continue there any longer, and fled to the tent, where I soon learned the cause of the catastrophe.

A centinel being off his guard, one of the natives snatched a musket out of his hand, which occasioned the fray. A boy, a midshipman, was the commanding officer, and, giving orders to fire, they obeyed with the greatest glee imaginable, as if they had been shooting at wild ducks, killed one stout man, and wounded many others. What a pity, that such brutality should be exercised by civilized people upon unarmed ignorant Indians!

When Mr. Banks heard of the affair, he was highly displeased, saying, "If we quarrelled with those Indians, we should not agree with angels;" and he did all he could to accommodate the difference, going across the river, and, through the mediation of an old man, prevailed on many of the natives to come over to us, bearing plantain-trees, which is a signal of peace amongst them; and, clapping their hands to their breasts, cried Tyau, which signifies friendship. They sat down by us; sent for cocoa nuts, and we drank the milk with them. They laughed heartily, and were very social, more so than could have been expected, considering what they had suffered in the late skirmish. — Have we not reason to conclude, that their dispositions are very flexible; and that resentment, with them, is a short-lived passion?

The horizon not being clear, we could not make any astronomical observations; and therefore did not attempt to go round the point to the other bay. The weather, however, since we arrived here, has generally been clear, with now and then a slight shower of rain, and the wind E. N. E.

Mr.

Mr. Buchan was seized with an epileptic fit this morning, and remained insensible all day.

On the 16th, but few of the Indians came to us in their canoes, being, we apprehended, somewhat alarmed at what had happened the day before. We got the ship moored; and Mr. Banks and the captain went ashore to confer with the natives, and to prevail on them to traffic with us again.

On the 17th, early in the morning, Mr. Buchan died, and we went out in the pinnace and long boat to the offing, and buried him.

Two of the chiefs came on board this morning, bringing with them a present of hogs, fowls, plantains, bananas, cocoas, bread-fruit and a sort of yams. At this season the cocoas are young, many of them yielding a quart of fine milk, and the shell is eatable, but they have no kernel.

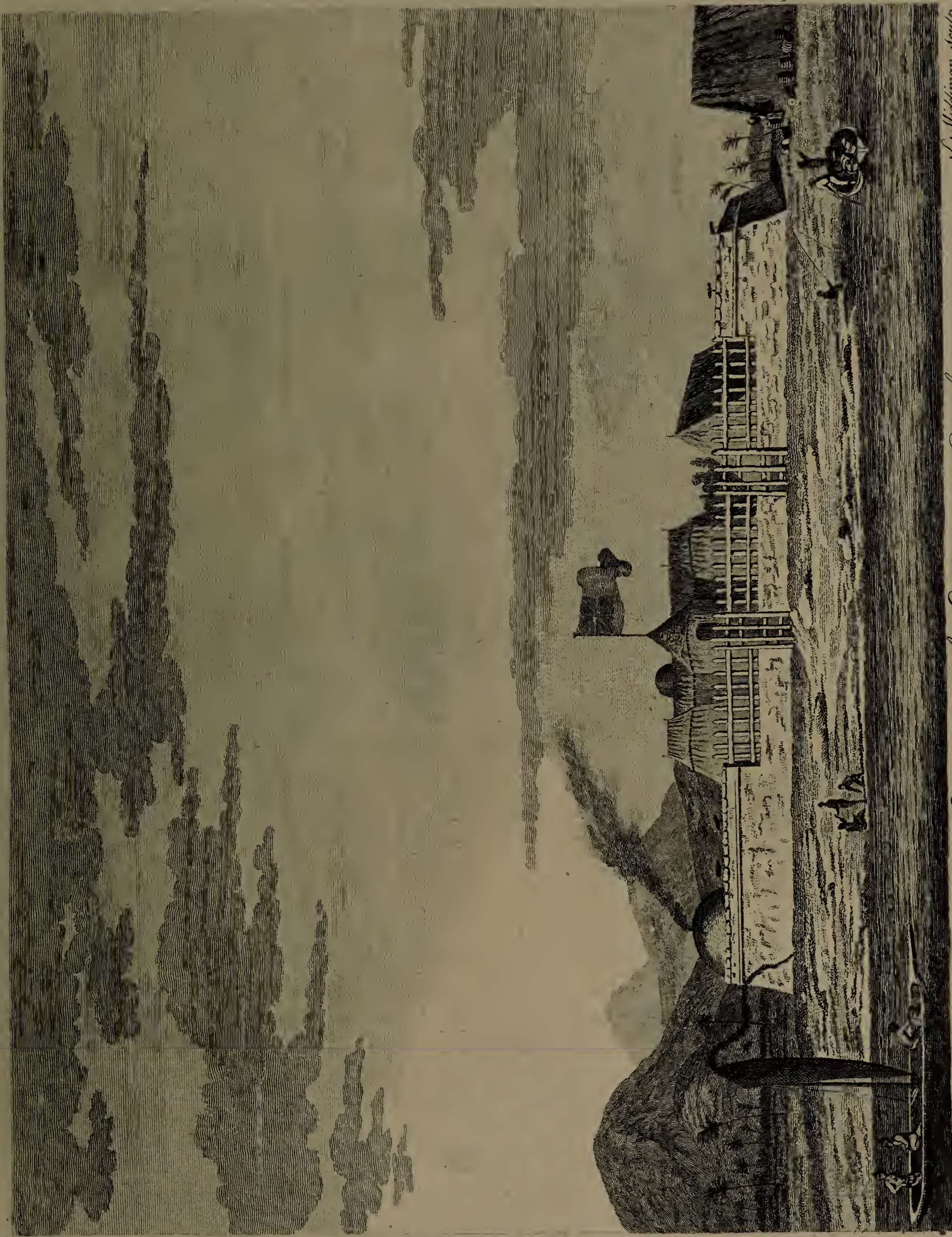
We pitched one of the ship's tents †, and went into the valley, where an Indian invited me to his hut, and sent his son up a tall cocoa-tree to gather nuts: he climbed it very dexterously, by tying his feet together with a withe, then clasping the tree, and vaulting up very swiftly. They admired every thing they saw about me, and I gave them a few trinkets.

On the 18th, in the night, we lay on shore, and were much incommoded with a species of flies with which the island swarms; inasmuch that, at dinner time, it was one person's employ to beat them off with a feather fly-flap, the handle of which is made of a hard brown wood, rudely carved, and somewhat resembles a human figure.

† As we were to make the observation of the transit on this island, we built a temporary fort for our accommodation on shore: [see pl. IV.] It had a fossé, with palisadoes, next the river: guns and swivels mounted on the ramparts; and within, we had an observatory, an oven, forge, and pens for our sheep. Centinels were also appointed as usual in garrisons, and military discipline observed. The sandy ground, on which the fort stood, was very troublesome when the wind was high.

On





J. Parkinson del.

Venus Fort, Erected by the Endeavour's People, to secure themselves during the Observation of the Transit of Venus, at Otaheite.

J. Nodding sculp.







On the 20th, one of their chiefs, named Tubora Tumaida, whom we called Lycurgus, with his wife and son, came to visit and dine with us: While we were at dinner, one of his attendants made up a dish with some garbage which they brought with them, mixing it with cocoa nut liquor in a shell, and it tasted like sowens ‡ This seemed to be a favourite dish with them, but we could not relish it. They have also a kind of food like wheat flour in appearance, of which Lycurgus brought a small quantity, and mixed that also with cocoa nut liquor; and, dropping two or three hot stones into it, he stirred it about till it formed a strong jelly: on tasting it we found it had an agreeable flavour, not unlike very good blanc-mange. These people make up various kinds of paste, one of which, called Makey Poe Poe, is made of fermented bread-fruit, and a substance called Meiya, mixt with cocoa-nut milk, and baked, tastes very sweet. In making these pastes, they use a pestle made of a hard black stone, a kind of basalt, with which they beat them in a wooden trough. See pl. XIII. fig. 10.

The mode of dressing their food too is very singular: they make a hole in the ground, and, placing stones in it, kindle a fire upon them; and when they are sufficiently heated, they sweep off the ashes, and then lay their food upon them. At their meals the married women ate apart from the men, and we could not prevail on them to join us. The men, especially, seemed to like the manner of our eating, and handled knives and forks very well. Hogs and fowls are not very plentiful amongst them; yams, and the best bananas, are very scarce in this island; the natives bring down but few of either sort, and eat of them very sparingly. When the natives want to make a fire, they take a piece of light wood, make a groove in it, and rub along that with another piece till the small dust catches fire: This is very laborious, and requires a considerable time to effect it.

On the 21st, we went round the point, and met with Lycurgus sitting on the ground, with his wife by his side, having a canoe covering, which he brought there on purpose to be near us: he gave us a hearty welcome; and, to divert us, ordered two of his boys to play on their flutes, while another sang a sort of melan-

‡ A kind of flummery made of oatmeal.

choly ditty, very well suited to the music. Lycurgus is a middle-aged man, of a chearful, though sedate, countenance, with thick black frizzled hair, and a beard of the same kind: his behaviour and aspect had something of natural majesty in them. I shewed him some of my drawings, which he greatly admired, and pronounced their names as soon as he saw them. These people have a peculiar method of staining their garments: a girl that was present shewed me the whole process, which is as follows:—She took the young leaves of a convolvulus unfoliated, and then broke off the tops of a small fig, of a reddish hue, and squeezed out of it a milky fluid; which she spread on a leaf; rubbing it gently to mix it with the juice of the leaf, and then it became red; this she soaked up with the leaf of a folanum, and then daubed it upon some cloth: the colour is good, but whether it will stand, I am unable to determine. They make a variety of neat basket-work [see a figure of one of their baskets, pl. XIII. fig. 6.] for holding of their colours; the simplest of all is made of the leaf of a cocoa-nut, which they plait together, and gather up on each side: they also make a kind of bonnet [see pl. VIII. fig. 4.] of the same materials. They do not seem very fond of their cloaths, of which they have a variety of colours, but wear them sometimes one way, and sometimes another, as their humour is. Persons of distinction amongst them wrap a number of pieces of cloth about them; and that which is of a carmine colour is only worn by the superior class. The people in general are very fond of ear-rings, and will exchange for them what they deem the most valuable of their effects. Some of their ear-rings [see pl. XIII. fig. 13; and 14] are made of mother-of-pearl cut into various figures, which are tied to their ears by human hair, curiously plaited by the women. They also tie three pearls together with hair, and hang them on their ears. [See *ibid.* fig. 26.]

The cloth, worn by the natives of this island, is of a very singular kind, being made of the bark of a small tree which contains a glutinous juice, some of which we saw in our excursions. The mode of manufacturing it is very simple, though very laborious, and is mostly performed by women. After the bark has been soaked in water for a few days, they lay it upon a flat piece of timber, and beat it out as thin as they think proper with a kind of mallet of an oblong square, [see pl. XIII. fig. 5.] each side of which is cut into small grooves of four different sizes: they begin with that side where they are the largest, and end with the finest, which  
leaving



leaving longitudinal stripes upon the cloth, makes it resemble paper. These people have garments also made of matting, [see pl. IX.] which are chiefly worn in rainy weather.

The rates, or terms, on which we trafficked with the natives, were a spike for a small pig; a smaller for a fowl; a hatchet for a hog; and twenty cocoa-nuts, or bread-fruit, for a middling-sized nail.

When the natives beckon to any person at a distance, contrary to our mode they wave their hands downwards; and when they meet a friend, or relation, whom they have not seen for some time, they affect to cry for joy, but it seems to be entirely ceremonial.

The tide rises and falls scarce a foot in the harbour; but the surf runs high. The inhabitants are very expert swimmers, and will remain in the water a long time, even with their hands full. They keep their water on shore in large bamboos, and in them they also carry up salt-water into the country. The boys drag for fish with a sort of net made of convolvulus leaves; and sometimes catch them with hooks made of mother of pearl oysters, large pinna marina, and other shells; and the shapes of them are very singular. They have also some made of wood, which are very large; [see figures of several of them, pl. XIII. fig. 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25.] They fish without bait, but the fish are attracted the soonest by such hooks as are made of glittering shells. When they throw their hooks, they row their canoes as fast as possible: sometimes they make use of a decoy made of the backs of cowries, and other shells, which are perforated, and tied together in the shape of a fish, making a head to it with a small cowrey; and the tail is formed of grass ingeniously plaited. At a little distance under this decoy, hangs the hook: [see pl. XIII. fig. 15 and 25.] To sink their lines, they make use of bone, or a piece of spar, which they sometimes carve. See *ibid.* fig. 16, 17.

The chief food of the natives is the bread-fruit and bananas, which they peel and scrape with a sharp shell; but they eat sparingly of flesh, and of fish in general; but of the latter, sometimes alive, or raw; and, as they have no salt, they dip their meat into salt water. The natives, it seems, are very subject to the itch, and other

cutaneous eruptions, which is the more to be wondered at as their diet consists principally of vegetables. They often move from one part to another in their canoes, carrying with them all their household stuff. Sometimes they sleep all night in their canoes \*, but those used for that purpose are made double, and have thatched awnings over them.

Tobiah, Obereah's favourite, being at dinner with us, and not seeming to like our provision, which was pork-pie, remembering that we had a large cuttle-fish, we ordered it to be brought; Tubora Tumaida coming in the mean time, although he said his belly was full, immediately seized on it as if it had been a dainty morsel, and, with another man, ate much of it quite raw; and having the rest roasted, he ate the greatest part of it; the remainder he put into two cocoa nuts, and sent it home with great care; so that, to all appearance, they value this fish, as much as some Englishmen do turtle, or a haunch of venison. When this fish was dressed it ate like stewed oysters, but not so tender. I have been told that this fish makes excellent soup. These people also are fond of dog's-flesh, and reckon it delicious food, which we discovered by their bringing the leg of a dog roasted to sell. Mr. Banks ate a piece of it, and admired it much. He went out immediately and bought one, and gave it to some Indians to kill and dress it in their manner, which they did accordingly. After having held the dog's mouth down to the pit of his stomach till he was stifled, they made a parcel of stones hot upon the ground, laid him upon them, and singed off the hair, then scraped his skin with a cocoa shell, and rubbed it with coral; after which they took out the entrails, laid them all carefully on the stones, and after they were broiled ate them with great goût; nor did some of our people scruple to partake with them of this indelicate repast. Having scraped and washed the dog's body clean, they prepared an oven of hot stones, covered them with bread-fruit leaves, and laid it upon them, with liver, heart and lungs, pouring a cocoa-nut full of blood upon them, covering them too with more leaves and hot stones, and inclosed the whole with earth patted down very close to keep in the heat. It was about four hours in the oven, and at night it was served up for supper: I ate a little of it; it had the taste of coarse beef, and a strong disagreeable smell; but Captain Cook, Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander, commended it highly, saying it was the sweetest meat they had ever tasted; but the rest of our people could not be prevailed on to ate any of it. We have invented a new dish, which

\* The women sometimes row the canoes.



which is as much disliked by the natives, as any of theirs is by us. Here is a species of rats, of which there are great numbers in this island; we caught some of them, and had them fried; most of the gentlemen in the bell-tent ate of them, and commended them much; and some of the inferior officers ate them in a morning for breakfast.

On the 27th, we saw a very odd ceremony performed; Tiropoa, one of Tubora Tumaida's wives, after weeping, and expressing some emotions of sorrow, took a shark's tooth from under her cloaths, and struck it against her head several times, which produced a copious discharge of blood; then, lamenting most bitterly, she articulated some words in a mournful tone, and covered the blood with some pieces of cloth; and, having bled about a pint, she gathered up as much of it as she could, threw it into the sea, and then assumed a chearful countenance, as if nothing had happened. This, it seems, is a ceremony generally performed by widows after the decease of their husbands.

This morning a woman, a fat, bouncing, good-looking dame, whom we found the queen, having a great quantity of their cloth of all colours, made us a visit, and a present.

Tootahau, the king of the island, whom we called Hercules, too, and all his family, came and brought us presents, which we kindly accepted.

On the 30th, the weather being fair, we made a tour in the country, which was very pleasant, and met with several rare plants, which afforded much agreeable amusement to our botanical gentlemen.

On the 2d of May, we missed the astronomical quadrant, it having been brought on shore the day before, in order to make observation of the transit of Venus: several men were immediately dispatched into the country to search for it; and they were informed, by some of the natives, that it had been carried through the woods to the eastward. The captain, Mr. Banks, and Mr. Green, with some other of our men, Tubora Tumaida, and a few of the natives, all armed, set out in pursuit of it. Tootahau, the king, and several canoes, were detained till they returned. While they were on this expedition, I walked out to the east, in the evening, and

was

was almost stunned with the noise of the grasshoppers, with which this island abounds. At length I came to a large open place, on the side of which I saw a long house; and in the area many of the natives assembled, having brought with them large baskets of bread-fruit: some of them were employed in dividing them, and others carried away whole baskets full; so that it had the appearance of a market of bread-fruit. Near to this opening, there was another long house, where, it seems, they coloured their cloth, of which I bought a few pieces, and returned to the fort. About eight o'clock in the evening, the party, that went out in quest of the quadrant, came back, having happily obtained it by the assistance of Tubora Tumaida. Some of the natives had taken it to pieces, and divided it amongst them, but had done it no material damage. It was stolen by a man named Moroameah, servant to Titaboreah, one of their chiefs. They also found a pistol, which one of the natives had stolen some time before. Tootahau wept while the party was absent, and was much alarmed on the occasion, apprehending that he should be killed if the quadrant could not be found; and had sent for two hogs to appease us. Oboreah, the queen, fled from us; nor would any of the natives come to market. When Tubora Tumaida, and his party, who accompanied Mr. Banks, returned, and saw Tootahau confined, they set up the most doleful lamentation imaginable; but they were soon pacified by the assurances made them that we designed them no injury.

On the 4th, very few people came to market with provisions, having been intimidated by the detention of their king Tootahau.

Some of the natives gave us an account of many neighbouring islands, to the number of nineteen, and shewed us one of them from a hill, which was Yoole Etea.

Most of the natives of this island smell strong of the cocoa oil, and are of a pale brown complexion, mostly having black hair, and that often frizzled; black eyes, flat nose, and large mouth, with a chearful countenance; they all wear their beards, but cut off their mustachios, [see pl. VIII. fig. 1.] are well made, and very sturdy, having their bellies in general very prominent; and are a timorous, merry, facetious, hospitable people. There are more tall men among them than among any people I have







*S. Parkinson del.*

*J. Chambers Sc.*

*A Woman & a Boy, Natives of Otaheite, in the Dress of that Country.*



have seen, measuring six feet, three inches and a half; but the women in general are small compared with the men. [See pl. V.] They must be very honest amongst themselves, as every house is without any fastening. Locks, bolts, and bars, are peculiar to civilized countries, where their moral theory is the best, and their moral practices too generally of the worst; which might induce a celebrated writer to conclude, though erroneously, that mankind, upon the whole, are necessarily rendered worse, and less happy, by civilization, and the cultivation of the arts and sciences. Nature's wants, it is true, are but few, and the uncivilized part of mankind, in general, seem contented if they can acquire those few. Ambition, and the love of luxurious banquets, and other superfluities, are but little known in the barbarous nations: they have, in general, less anxious thought for the morrow, than civilized; and therefore feel more enjoyment while they partake of heaven's bounty in the present day. Unaccustomed to indulgences in cloathing and diet, which Europeans have carried to an extreme, they are less subject to diseases; are more robust; feel less from the inclemencies of the seasons; and are, in constitution, what the ancient Britons were before their civilization. Unhappily for us, the athletic constitution of our ancestors is not to be found amongst us, being enervated by excesses of various kinds; while diseases, the effect of intemperance and debaucheries, contaminate our blood, and render them hereditary amongst our offspring.

The natives huts are inclosed by a low fence made of reeds; and the ground within them is very neatly bedded with a kind of straw, upon which they lay mats to sleep on; and, for a pillow, they have a four-legged stool, joined at the bottom, which is made out of a solid piece of wood; and the only tools they have to work with are made of stones, or shells, as they had no iron upon the island until the Dolphin arrived. [See pl. XIII. fig. 7.]

These huts are built at a considerable distance from each other; so that the island looks like one continued village, and abounds with cocoa\*, bread-fruit, and apple-trees; the fruit of which drops, as it were, into their mouths; and may be the cause that they are an indolent people: Were they inclined to industry, provisions might

\* I saw some stalks of cocoa-nuts which were as heavy as I could lift, which surprised me the more as the stalks were very slender.

be found in greater plenty amongst them; and, by proper cultivation, the fruits of the island would not only be increased, but their quality might be improved. They seem, however, as contented with what is spontaneously produced, as if they had attained to the *ne plus ultra*, and are therefore happier than Europeans in general are, whose desires are unbounded. When the men are at work, they wear only a piece of cloth round their middle, which they call *maro*: at other times they wear garments which they call *purawei*, and *teepoota* about their bodies, with a kind of turban on their heads; and, in walking, they carry a long white stick in one of their hands, with the smallest end uppermost.

These people go to war in large canoes, at one end of which there is a kind of stage erected, supported by four carved pillars, and is called *tootee*. Their weapons are a kind of clubs, and long wooden lances. They have also bows and arrows. The former are made of a strong elastic wood. The arrows are a small species of reed, or bamboes, pointed with hard wood, or with the sting of the ray-fish, which is a sharp-bearded bone. [See pl. XIII. fig. 13.] They also make use of slings, [see *ibid.* fig. 1.] made of the fibres of the bark of some tree, of which, in general, they make their cordage too: some of them, as well as their slings, are neatly plaited. Their hatchets, or rather adzes, which they call *towa*, are made by tying a hard black stone, of the kind of which they make their paste-beaters, to the end of a wooden handle; and they look very much like a small garden hoe: and the stone part is ground or worn to an edge. [See pl. XIII. fig. 9.] The making of these stone-instruments must be a work of time, and laborious, as the stone of which they are made is very hard. The natives have *maros*, or pieces of cloth, which reach up from the waist, to defend them from the lances, or bunches of hair curiously plaited. They also wear *teepootas* upon their heads, and *taowmees*, or a kind of breast-plate, hung about their necks; [see pl. XI.] large turbans too, in which they stick a small bunch of parrot's feathers; [see pl. XIII. fig. 12.] and sometimes use what they call a *whaow*, which is a large cap of a conical figure. In their *heivos*, or war-dances, they assume various antic motions and gestures, like those practised by the girls when they dance *taowree whaow*,\* playing on a clapper made of two mother-of-pearl shells; and make the *ephaita*, or wry mouth, [see pl. VII. fig. 2.] as a token of defiance: they also join their hands together, moving them at the same time, and clap the palms of their hands

\* A kind of diversion.





S. Parkinson del.

House and Plantation of a Chief of the Island of Otaheite.

R. B. Godfrey sculp.













S. Parkinson del.

A. B. Godfrey sc.

The Head of a Native of Otaheite, with the Face curiously tattooed;  
And the very Mouth or manner of defying their Enemies, as practised by the People of that, & the Neighbouring Islands.



hands upon their breasts near their shoulders. When they fight in their boats, they generally throw a string to one another to fasten the canoes together; and the men who are employed in doing this are never struck at †.

The natives cut their hair in various forms. When their nearest relations die, some of them cut it off entirely, and go bare-headed; others leave a border all round the head; and others cut it into circles; while some have only a circular piece cut off the crown like a priest's tonsure; others still prefer another mode, leaving the hair upon the crown of the head, and cut off all the rest. All this they perform with a shark's tooth, which cuts it very close: they also shave with a shark's tooth fitted to a piece of coarse shell. The natives are accustomed to mark themselves in a very singular manner, which they call tataowing; [see pl. VII. fig. 1.] this is done with the juice of a plant; and they perform the operation with an instrument having teeth like a comb, dipped in the juice, with which the skin is perforated. [See pl. XIII. fig. 2, 3, and 4.] Mr. Stainby, myself, and some others of our company, underwent the operation, and had our arms marked: the stain left in the skin, which cannot be effaced without destroying it, is of a lively bluish purple, similar to that made upon the skin by gun-powder. These people have invented a musical instrument, somewhat like a flute, [see pl. XIII. fig. 8. and pl. IX.] which they blow into through their noses; but their notes, which are but very few, are rude and ungrateful. Their dances are not less singular than their music; for they twist their bodies into many extravagant postures, spread their legs, set their arms a-kimbo, and, at the same time, distort the muscles of their faces, and twist their mouths diagonally, in a manner which none of us could imitate. [See pl. VII. fig. 2.]

Polygamy is not allowed amongst them; but the married women have not a very delicate sense of modesty: their husbands will allow you any liberty with their wives, except the last, which they do not approve. Most of our ship's company procured temporary wives amongst the natives, with whom they occasionally cohabited; an indulgence which even many reputed virtuous Europeans allow themselves, in uncivilized parts of the world, with impunity; as if a change of place

† We saw two men who had been pierced through the skull by stones from a sling; the wounds were healed up, but had left a large operculum.

altered the moral turpitude of fornication: and what is a sin in Europe, is only a simple innocent gratification in America; which is to suppose, that the obligation to chastity is local, and restricted only to particular parts of the globe.

It is customary for the women to wear garlands of flowers on their heads, [see pl. VIII. fig. 1, 2.] which are composed of the white palm-leaves gathered from the spathas from which the flower proceeds. They also gather a species of gardenia, as soon as they open, and put them in their ears. Both sexes are very cleanly; they wash themselves in the river three times a day; and their hands and teeth after every meal.

The children of both sexes are remarkably kind to one another, and, if any thing be given them, will, if possible, equally divide it amongst them.

On the fifth, the captain and Mr. Banks, with some others, went to the west, and waited upon Tootahau, and some other of the chiefs, who, it was supposed, had taken affront, as the people did not bring fruit, as usual, to market. They received them kindly, and entertained them with wrestling and dancing: when they returned to the ship, Tootahau, their king, came along with them, brought a barbecued-hog, and the captain made him a present.

On the sixth, being the next day, the natives brought their fruits to market as usual.

In walking through the woods we saw the corpse of a man laid upon a sort of bier, which had an awning over it made of mats, supported by four sticks; a square piece of ground around it was railed in with bamboos, and the body was covered with cloth. These burial places are called Morai.

This day we also saw them polishing their canoes, which was done with the madrepore fungites, a species of coral, or sea mushroom, with which they also polish the beams of their houses.

On





S. Parkinson del.

J. Chambers Sc.

Heads of divers Natives of the Islands of Otaheite, Huaheine, & Oheiteroah.







On the 8th, Mr. Mollineux went in the long-boat to the east to buy some hogs, but could not get any: the people told them that they belonged to Tootahau, which evinced the superiority of that man.

We saw a man this day of a very fair complexion, with ruddy nose and cheeks, having the hair of his head, beard, eye-brows, and eye-lashes, quite white; inso-much that he was a *lufus naturæ* amongst them.

On the 13th, as Mr. Banks sat in the boat, trading with them as usual, we saw a very odd ceremony performed:—Some strangers came up, to whom the rest gave way, making a lane for them to pass through: the first person in the procession presented Mr. Banks with a small bunch of parrot's feathers, with some plantain, and malape-leaves, one after another. A woman passed along the next, having a great many clothes upon her, which she took off, and, spreading them upon the ground, turned round, and exposed herself quite naked: more garments being handed to her, by the company, she spread them also upon the ground, and then exposed herself as before; then the people gathered up all her clothes, took leave, and retired.

On the 14th, we saw a person who had the appearance of an hermaphrodite.

On the 15th, we had but a slight sea breeze, and the weather was very sultry, though the clouds hung upon the mountains, and we expected some rain; we had some puffs of wind from the mountains, that raised the sand in little clouds, which covered every thing, and rendered our situation still more disagreeable. In the evening we saw a remarkable large ring round the moon.

On the 16th, it rained very hard, and there were two rainbows. We hauled the Sein in several distant places, but caught no fish.

On the 17th, the centinel fired at one of the natives, who came before it was light with an intent to steal some of the casks, which was the second offence; but the powder flashed in the pan, and the man escaped with his life.

On the 20th, but few of the natives came to market, having been prevented by the rain.

On the 22d, it rained very hard, accompanied with thunder and lightening, more terrible than any I had ever heard, or seen, before. It rained so hard that the water came through the markee, and wetted every thing in it; and we were much afraid the ship would have suffered by the storm, but she providentially escaped.

On the third of June, it being very fair, the astronomers had a good opportunity of making an observation of the transit. Mr. Banks, and a party, went to Eimayo; and another party to the east, to make observations at the same time. Mr. Banks returned with two hogs, which he got from the king of Eimayo.

\* \* The following calculation of the Transit, being found amongst Sydney Parkinson's papers, as also a table of the rising and falling of the Thermometer; between the 27th of April, 1769, and the 9th of July following, they are here subjoined for the information of the curious.

CALCULATION



CALCULATION of the TRANSIT.

Sun's Meridian Altitude on the 2d of June 50 7  
 3d ditto 49 59  
 June the 3d, 1769. Error of 16  
 8 no Error.

H. M. S.	Sun's Altitude before the first external Contact.	D. M.	H. M. S.	Sun's Altitude.	D. M.
8 48 9	First Set.	28 42	2 45 18	First Set.	32 47
50 10		29 5	46 31		32 34
51 41		29 21	47 35		32 22
8 53 19	Second Set.	29 36	2 48 39	Second Set.	32 12
55 7		29 57	49 44		31 56
56 19		30 13	50 33		31 49
8 57 36	Third Set.	30 27	2 51 33	Third Set.	31 39
58 37		30 37	52 28		31 29
59 44		30 47	53 35		31 16
	Before the first Internal Contact.			Before the second external Contact.	
9 25 48	First Set.	35 20	3 13 39	First Set.	27 35
27 46		35 34	14 36		27 24
28 23		35 47	15 35		27 14
9 29 15	Second Set.	35 55	3 16 33	Second Set.	27 3
29 46		36 2	7 25		26 53
30 29		36 9	18 19		26 43
9 31 13	Third Set.	36 13	3 19 14	Third Set.	26 34
32 4		36 23	20 14		26 21
32 43		36 29	21 1		26 12
	After the first Internal Contact.			After the second external Contact.	
9 42 56	First Set.	38 9	3 32 3	First Set.	24 5
43 52		38 25	33 14		23 51
45 25		38 31	34 32		23 36
9 46 32	Second Set.	38 42	3 35 31	Second Set.	23 25
47 59		38 54	36 33		23 11
49 27		39 8	37 30		23
9 50 27	Third Set.	39 17	3 38 29	Third Set.	22 55
51 9		39 25	39 58		22 31
52 6		39 32	41 5		22 21

2d internal Contact }  
 1st external } 0 23 10  
 1st internal } 0 39 30  
 2d ditto - } 3 10 57  
 2d external } 3 29 58

Altitude in the Morning.

Time	H. M. S.	Sun's Altitude	D. M.
	7 42 29		15 51
	0 45 26		16 25
	0 46 38		16 40

The

## The RISING and FALLING of the THERMOMETER.

April, 1769.		M.	N.	A.	June.		M.	N.	A.
Thursday	27	68	82	60	Friday	2			
Friday	28	68	84	70	Saturday	3			
Saturday	29	70	85	68	Sunday	4			
Sunday	30	69	86	70	Monday	5	74	84	78
May.					Tuesday	6	74	86	78
Monday	1	70	85½	77	Wednesday	7	74	86	77
Tuesday	2	79	91	79	Thursday	8	73	87	76
Wednesday	3	78	91	80	Friday	9	72	83	79
Thursday	4	70	91	79	Saturday	10	69	81	78
Friday	5	72	91	79	Sunday	11	72	77	77
Saturday	6	69	86	80	Monday	12	72	82	79
Sunday	7	72	91	80	Tuesday	13	72	83	78
Monday	8	71	86	77	Wednesd.	14	72	87	81
Tuesday	9	70	85	78	Thursday	15	74	87	79
Wednesday	10	70	85	78	Friday	16	72	83	77
Thursday	11	70	86	81	Saturday	17	70	81	77
Friday	12	74	87	79	Sunday	18	72	83	68
Saturday	13	75	86	78	Monday	19	72	82	74
Sunday	14	77	87	78	Tuesday	20	70	83	76
Monday	15	74	85	80	Wednesd.	21	69	86	77
Tuesday	16	74	85	79	Thursday	22	70	86	76
Wednesday	17	72	87	79½	Friday	23	69	86	76
Thursday	18	73	89	79	Saturday	24	67	85	74
Friday	19	72	82	76	Sunday	25	74	84	76
Saturday	20	72	73	73	Monday	26	67	79	75
Sunday	21	72	85	74	Tuesday	27	70	84	76
Monday	22	70	72	75	Wednesd.	28	71	85	77
Tuesday	23	69	86	77	Thursday	29	67	80	78
Wednesday	24	70	87	79	Friday	30	76	82	78
Thursday	25	72	82	78	July. — Sat.	1	70	78	78
Friday	26	73	83	81	Sunday	2	70	85	80
Saturday	27	75	85	81	Monday	3	74	84	78
Sunday	28	71	86	80	Tuesday	4	70	88	78
Monday	29	71	86	78	Wednesday	5	70	88	77
Tuesday	30	70	84	76	Thursday	6	72	83	78
Wednesday	31	70	84	78	Friday	7	76	83	78
June.					Saturday	8	73	83	76
Thursday	1	71			Sunday	9	72	83	70

Dr.



Dr. Solander, Mr. Banks, and several others, went to visit Tootahau, to see if they could obtain any hogs; and, after going much farther than where he usually resides, they met with him, and queen Oboreah: they treated them with fair promises, and invited them to stay the night with them, which they accepted; but, in the morning, some missed their stockings, others their jackets and waistcoats; amongst the rest, Mr. Banks lost his white jacket and waistcoat, with silver frogs; in the pockets of which were a pair of pistols, and other things: they enquired for them, but could get no account of them; and they came away greatly dissatisfied, having obtained but one pig.

On the 12th, we received an account from the natives respecting two ships that had been on their coast; and we gathered from them that the crew were Spaniards, and that they had introduced the lues venerea amongst them ‡.

On the 15th, the oven-rake was stolen, which, joined to the other things that had been pilfered from us by some of the natives, and the insolent treatment Mr. Monkhouse met with, determined the captain to seek redress; he seized twenty-seven double canoes, with sails, which happened to be at the point, in the morning, some of which came from another island; and he threatened to burn them if the stolen things should not be returned. Before noon they brought back the rake, but we had no account of the rest; and the canoes were still kept in custody. Tootahau was much displeased, and would not suffer any of the natives to supply us with bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, or apples. At this time the weather was very wet; P. Briscoe, one of Mr. Banks's servants, was very bad of a nervous fever, and we had but little hopes of his recovery, having been, by a long course of sickness, reduced to very great weakness; and, in this hot climate, it is a long time before an European recovers his strength, as I have known by experience.

On the 19th, in the evening, after dark, Oboreah, the queen, and several of her attendants, came from Opare, Tootahau's palace, in a double canoe, laden with plantains, bread-fruit, and a hog; but brought none of the stolen things with

‡ These ships, we afterwards learned at Batavia, were fitted out by the French, and commanded by M. Bougainville.

them,

them, pleading, that Obade, her gallant, had stolen them, and was gone off with them. Mr. Banks received her very coolly; nor would suffer them to lie in the markee, he being already engaged; and the captain refused their presents, at which the queen appeared very sorrowful. Mr. Banks and the rest, went to-bed; and the whole tribe of the natives would have lain in the bell-tent, but I would not suffer them, and sent them away. The next morning they returned to the tent, and captain Cook altered his resolution, and bought some of their fruit. The queen behaved very haughtily, yet Mr. Banks agreed they should lie in his markee in the day-time. Two of her attendants were very assiduous in getting themselves husbands, in which attempt they, at length, succeeded. The surgeon took one, and one of the lieutenants the other: they seemed agreeable enough till bed-time, and then they determined to lie in Mr. Banks's tent, which they did accordingly: but one of the engaged coming out, the surgeon insisted that she should not sleep there, and thrust her out, and the rest followed her, except Otea Tea, who whined and cried for a considerable time, till Mr. Banks led her out also. Mr. Monkhouse and Mr. Banks came to an eclarcissement some time after; had very high words, and I expected they would have decided it by a duel, which, however, they prudently avoided. Oboreah, and her retinue, had gone to their canoe, and would not return; but Mr. Banks went and staid with them all night.

This day, the princess Tetraoh Mituah's canoes were taken, laden with presents for us; but, as captain Cook knew she was innocent, he let her have her canoes again.

On the 21st, in the morning, many of the natives came to us with presents of various kinds; but, though called presents, they were all paid for. Our tent was nearly filled with people; and, soon after, Amoa, who is chief of several districts on the other side of the island, also came to us, and brought with him a hog. As soon as he appeared, the natives uncloathed themselves to the waist; which mark of obeisance to their superiors we had not observed before, but judged it was usually shewn to every person of distinguished rank amongst them. This man Oboreah called her husband, and Toobaiah his brother; but there is little regard to be paid to what they say. A woman, called Teetee, came from the west, and presented a very fine garment to the Captain, of a bright yellow in the ground, bordered



bordered with red: in the middle of it were many crosses, which we apprehended they had learned from the French.

On the 23d, in the morning, we missed one of our men, a Portugeze, whom we had taken in at Rio de Janeiro; enquiring among the Indians, we learned that he was at Opare with Tootahau; and one of them offered to go and bring him back to us, which he accordingly did the same night. The account which he gave on his return was, That three men came to him crying Tyau, which is the watch-word, amongst them, for friendship, and then carried him from the fort, and dragged him to the top of the bay, where they stripped him, forced him into a boat, and took him to Opare, where Tootahau gave him some cloaths, and persuaded him to stay with him. This account we believed to be true, for, as soon as it was known amongst the natives that he was rescued, all of them in the bell-tent moved off, and went to Opare in great haste, being apprehensive that we should seek our revenge on them.

On the 26th, the captain and Mr. Banks set out to make a survey of the island, and began with the west side.

On the 27th, we saw a favourite game, which the young girls divert themselves with in an evening; dividing themselves into two parties, one standing opposite to the other, one party throws apples, which the other endeavours to catch. The right of the game I am not acquainted with; but now-and-then one of the parties advanced, stamping with their feet, making wry mouths, straddling with their legs, lifting up their cloaths, and exposing their nakedness; at the same time repeating some words in a disagreeable tone. Thus are they bred up to lewdness from their childhood, many of them not being above eight or nine years of age.

The 28th; this evening the captain and Mr. Banks returned from their western excursion. And,

On the 29th, early in the morning, they set out for the east part of the island, to make a survey of it.

Provisions of all kinds were, at this time, very scarce; and some of the inhabitants almost famished. This scarcity was principally occasioned by supplying us too liberally with bread-fruit, which obliged the inhabitants to eat chee, roasted, in its stead, which tastes much like our chestnut: but, as the bread-tree was full of young fruit, we were in hopes that they would soon have another crop to relieve them.

On the first of July, in the evening, the captain and Mr. Banks returned from surveying the island, which they found to be larger than they expected, and brought with them several hogs, and could have obtained more with more hatchets. In their tour round the island, they discovered that it consists of two peninsulas, connected by a low marshy isthmus, through which Mr. Banks supposed canoes might be drawn. From Port Royal, which is situate at the west end, the coast extends E. by S. about nineteen miles to a reef of three small islands, forming a bay, called Society-Bay. From this the land inclines into a deep bay, at the isthmus or juncture of the two divisions, of which the smallest is nearly oval, and surrounded by a reef, which runs parallel to the shore at about two miles distance: This has several apertures, or passages, which afford safe anchorage within. The north side of the island is likewise defended by a similar reef; but the ground within is foul, and unsafe for vessels of burthen. The whole length of the island is about fifteen leagues; and its circumference forty leagues. Besides the above-mentioned, they saw several other bays; some of them very good, and one, in particular, in which a large fleet might have rode with ease and safety: the name the natives give it is Papara.

They also learned, that the island is divided into two principalities, one of which, comprehending the largest peninsula, is called Otaheite Nooa, or Great Otaheite; the other, comprehending the smallest peninsula, is termed Otaheite Eetee, or Little Otaheite. The former of these divisions is also called Oboreano, in honour of of queen Oboreah, who is regent of it. The other division is also governed by a woman named Teideede; she is younger than Oboreah. The people of the two divisions do not seem to be upon good terms, having but little communication with each other.



In their voyage they also saw a large monument, of a pyramidal form, of polished stone, which they were told was the morai of Oboreah and Oamo, and the people there said they were brother and sister.

On the 6th of July, in the evening, a young woman came to the entrance of the fort, whom we found to be a daughter of Oamo. The natives complimented her on her arrival, by uncovering their shoulders. We invited her to the tent, but she did not accept of it.

On the 9th, two of our marines being enamoured with a girl, one of the natives deserted from the fort, and fled to the west part of the island, and intended to have staid there. On the same day one of the natives stole a knife from one of our sailors, and wounded him with it in the forehead, almost through his skull:—a fray ensued, and the Indians ran away.

On this day, Mr. Banks and Dr. Monkhouse went many miles to a valley toward Orowhaina: at length they came to a waterfall, and could proceed no farther. At this spot the mountains were almost perpendicular; and from several parts of them hung some ropes, designed, as was apprehended, to assist those who should attempt to ascend them in times of scarcity, to get fayhee, or wild plantain. The stones and soil, on some of the highest mountains, appeared as if they had been burnt, or calcined: and, on the lower ones, where I have been, the earth is a sort of red-ochre covered with various plants, but chiefly with fern.

Most of the materials which composed the fort having been taken down, and put on board the ship, we prepared to set sail.

On the 10th, hearing no tidings of the two men who deserted us, we resolved to seize several of the principal people, and detain them till we could recover them: we also sent a party in the pinnace who apprehended Tootahau, and brought him to the ship; upon which Oboreah, and several other of the chiefs, sent out their servants, who returned in the evening with one of them, and re-

ported that the Indians had detained one of our officers who commanded the party sent out after him; also one of the men who accompanied him, and, having seized their arms, used them very roughly; upon which the marines were dispatched in the long-boat after them, taking with them some of the natives. In the mean time, the natives, whom we had made prisoners, not knowing what would be their fate, were much alarmed; but the next morning the marines returned with the men that had been detained, with the others that had deserted; and the natives, whom we had imprisoned, were released. After making strong professions of friendship, they left us; and, as soon as they reached the shore, bent their course, as fast as possible, to Opare, shewing tokens of displeasure as they went along.

During our stay here, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander were very assiduous in collecting whatever they thought might contribute to the advancement of Natural History; and, by their directions, I made drawings of a great many curious trees, and other plants; fish, birds, and of such natural bodies as could not be conveniently preserved entire, to be brought home.

The following catalogue exhibits some of the principal botanical subjects, natives of this place, made use of by the inhabitants.

#### PLANTS





## PLANTS of Use for Food, Medicine, &amp;c. in Otaheite.

Native Name.

Latin Name.

Teatea-maowa,

*Jasminum-didymum,*

Grows upon the hills; has a very sweet-smelling white flower, which the natives admire much.

E ava.

*Piper-inebrians.* Forst. M. Esc. 11. 50

The expressed juice of this plant they drink to intoxicate themselves.

E to.

*Saccharum-dulcis.*

Of this cane they make no sugar, but content themselves with sucking the juice out of it.

E mohoo.

*Cyperus-alatus.*

The stalks of this plant, stripped of their pulp, which they perform with a sharp shell, make a sort of thread used for several common purposes.

Taihinnoo.

*Tournefortia-sericea.*

E tow.

*Cordia-sebestena.*

The leaves of these two plants are ingredients in their red dye, or mattee, for their cloth.

E marra.

*Nauclea-orientalis.*

Of the timber of this tree they build their large canoes.

E teea-ree.

*Gardenia-florida.*

This was originally brought from some other island to Otaheite, and there planted on account of its most fragrant flower, which they crop as soon as grown and stick in their ears, calling it E teea-ree, that is, the flower, by way of eminence.

Taowdeehaow.

*Convolvulus-alatus.*

The stalks of this plant they give young children to suck.

E oomarra.

E oomarra, *Convolvulus-chrysoxizus,*

Planted and cultivated by the natives, on account of its root, which is the sweet potatoe of the South-sea Islands.

Pohooe. *Convolvulus-Brasilienfis.*

Of this plant they make a sort of seine, which they use in such ground where they cannot use another.

E maireeo. *Galaxa-oppoiti-folia.*

The leaf of this plant is one of the ingredients in their manoe.

E deva, or E reva. *Galaxa-sparsa.*

This plant has a pretty large white flower like that of an oleander. Of the wood of this tree they make their pahaoos, or drums.

E booa, or E pooa. *Solanum-latifolium.*

The leaves of this plant they use in making their red dye or mattee.

Pouraheitee. *Solanum-viride.*

The leaves of this plant, baked, are eaten as greens.

E nono. *Morinda-citri-folia.*

The root of this tree they use to dye their garments yellow, and eat the fruit of it.

E tee. *Draccana-terminalis.*

Of this plant there are five different sorts, yielding a large root, which is eaten, and counted very good food, by the islanders of the South-seas.

Tootaoopa. *Loranthus-stelis.*

This plant is remarkable for nothing except its name, which signifies the Oopa, or pigeons dung; that bird feeds on the berries, and voids the stones on the trunk of trees, where it grows.

E peeaa. *Chaitea-tacca.*

The root of this plant, properly prepared, makes an excellent strong jelly, like to blanc-mange, of the nature of falop, for which it is very justly admired by these islanders.

Tawhannoo.



Tawhannoo.

*Guettarda-speciosa.*

The timber of this tree, which grows pretty large at Toopbai, and other low islands near Otaheite, serves to make stools, cheits, paste-troughs, and various other utensils; they also build canoes of it.

E àwaow.

*Daphne-capitata.*

This plant is used to poison fish, in order to catch them; and, for this purpose, they beat or mash it together and throw it into the rivers and sea within the reefs.

E owhe.

*Arundo-bambos.*

This is the common bamboe, of which these islanders make great use; the large joints they keep to hold water and oil; of the small they make arrows, flutes, cases to hold small things; and, when cut into slips, they serve them for knives, and cut tolerably well.

E motoo.

*Melastoma-malabathrica.*

This plant is one of those which they hang upon their whatta-note-toobapaow, or burial-stand, to be eaten by the soul of the deceased.

E hee, or E ratta.

*Aniotum-fagiferum.*

This is a tall and stately tree which bears a round flat fruit, covered with a thick tough coat, and, when roasted and stripped of its rind, eats as well as a chestnut.

E avee.

*Spondias-dulcis.*

This is a large stately tree, and often grows to the height of forty and fifty feet: the fruit, which, I believe, is peculiar to these isles, is of an oval shape, yellow when ripe, and grows in bunches of three or four, and is about the size of a middling apple, with a large stringy core: it is a very wholesome and palatable fruit, improving on the taste, which is nearest that of a mangoe; it is strongly impregnated with turpentine, and makes excellent pies when green. The wood serves for building canoes, and for several other purposes.

Pourao, and epcoataroorreo.

*Cratæva-frendosa.*

The fruit of this shrub they lay upon their corpses, and hang it upon their burial whattas,

whattas, it having an agreeable bitter smell: it is one of those which are sacred to their god Tané, and, for that reason, is generally planted in, or by the small Morais, called Morai Roma Tané, which are a sort of altar near the houses, upon which they offer victuals.

E peerepeeree.

*Euphorbia-develata.*

This plant is full of a milky juice, with which they dye their garments of an indifferent brown colour.

E aowiree.

*Terminalia-glabrata.*

This tree, which grows to a large size, is often planted in their Morais, and near their houses, for the sake of its agreeable shade; the wood serves to build canoes, make chests, stools and drums: the kernel of the nut which is in the fruit, though small, has a very pleasant taste. [See pl. X.]

E ratta, or e pooratta.

*Metrosideros-spectabilis.*

This tree, or shrub, grows upon the Tooaroa, or Lower-hills, and is much resorted to by the venee, or small blue parrot, which feeds upon the flowers, and is often caught here, by means of a glewy juice which issues out from the tops of the stalks, when broke by their feeding upon them, and catches them like bird-lime: the flowers are full of beautiful scarlet stamina; the natives stick them in their ears by way of ornament; and the leaves are put in their monoe, when they can get nothing sweeter.

E arrarooá.

*Psidium-myrtifolium.*

The only use they make of this tree, which has a flower like a myrtle, is to make their totos or clubs, and ewha's, or a sort of lances, being very tough: they call it an eraow paree, or the cunning tree.

E heiya.

*Eugenia-mallaccensis.*

This tree grows upon the lower-hills, having great clusters of crimson flowers, full of stamina of the same colour, much like an almond-blossom, but more brilliant: the fruit, when ripe, is red, and as big as one's fist; sweet, very agreeable to the palate; and full of seeds: it is very well known in the East-India islands, where it is esteemed delicious fruit.

Tamanno,



Tamanno.

*Calophyllum-inophyllum.*

This is a most beautiful verdant tree, that grows to a large size, bearing spikes of white flowers: with the juice of the fruit and leaves they dye their garments a pale yellow, which, at the same time, gives them a rich perfume. The wood is greatly valued by them on account of its beauty and duration. They build canoes, make stools, and other utensils of it: it is most likely planted in the Morais, being sacred to their god Tané.

E poo-aiho.

*Saccharum-fatuum.*

With bundles of this grass, lit up, they allure the fish to the edges of the reefs, carrying them in their hands at night.

E atoorree.

*Portulacca-lutea.*

This sort of purslain grows very common in the low islands, where the inhabitants bake and eat it, and account it very good food.

E hootoo.

*Betonica-splendida.*

This beautiful tree grows to a considerable height, and bears a very large and specious white flower, full of long purple stamina, with which they sometimes deck their heads, and sometimes stick them in their ears: the fruit, powdered, they throw into the water to kill fish; and of the wood they build small canoes.

E pooamattapeepee.

*Besleria-laurifolia.*

The flower of this tree is much admired on account of its sweet scent, for which reason they stick them in their ears and hair, and put them among their garments, and into their monoe. The wood is very tough and lasting, and of it they make drums, and thwarts across their canoes.

E neearohettee.

*Stachys-dentata, or ruellia-fragrans.*

The juice of this plant, mixed with several others, they use as a plaister to cure any sort of wounds.

E noonanoona.

*Boerhavia-procumbens.*

The stalks of this plant are eaten when they have no better food.

G

E ava-

E ava-váidái.

*Piper-latifolium.*

The juice of this plant has not the intoxicating quality of the other, so that they prudently make an offering of it to their Eatooas, on whose altars they hang bunches of it.

E pooraow.

*Hibiscus-cuspidatus.*

The bark of this tree yields an excellent stuff for making all sorts of twine, cord, and rôpes. Of the wood they make their bows, beams and pillars of their houses, small canoes, stools, and various other utensils. Of the bark of the plant, when young, they weave a sort of matting, which is very neat, and is called by the same name as the tree. The wood that remains after the bark is taken off, being very light, serves, instead of cork, to float their feins, and for handles to their fishgigs; and to rub together to get fire.

E póoraow-toro-ceree.

*Hibiscus-tricuspis.*

This plant is pretty much like the last, and is used for the same purposes, but is inferior in quality.

E aiowte.

*Hibiscus-rosa-sinensis.*

This tree is admired on account of its beautiful scarlet flower, of which the young people make garlands for their hair, stick them in their ears, and rub their lances with them to make them look red.

E wawei.

*Gossypium-religiosum.*

This is a species of cotton of which they have not yet found out the use.

E meerro.

*Thespesia-populnea.*

This beautiful tree is planted in all Morais, being held sacred to Tané: they also make use of it as an emblem of peace; and always bring it in their hands when they meet with strange people. It yields a middling sort of timber, and is made use of for several purposes.

E peereeperee.

*Urena-lobata.*

The seeds of this plant are of the nature of a burr, from whence its name, to glue or stick to any thing. The boys play the same tricks with it as the children in Europe with the burr. They also make maro's, or a sort of mat of the bark.

Berdee-



Berdeebedeeco.

*Abrus-pricatorius.*

The seed of this plant is the well-known Indian pea with a black spot: of these they form ear-rings, and also stick them on a fillet which they wear on their head.

E atai, erythoina.

*Corallodendron.*

This is a large tree, and remarkable for its bright scarlet flower, making a most beautiful show. The vancee feeds upon its flowers, and is caught with the clammy juice that issues out of it; the women make garlands of them, and put them round their heads.

E owhaee.

*Æschynomene-speciosa.*

This shrub grows wild, in great abundance, on the island of Toopbai; and is planted on the other islands to shade their houses; and the flower of it, which is very beautiful, they often stick in their ears.

E hora.

*Galega-piscatoria.*

With this plant, beaten small, they poison or stupify fish, throwing it into the water, by which means they are caught.

E peepee.

*Phaseolus-amœnus.*

The stalks of this plant make a very good thread for weaving nets and seins. Of the flowers, which are very pretty, they make garlands for their heads.

E vaeenoo.

*Cotula-bicolor.*

E tooho.

*Epipactis-purpurea.*

Both these plants, bruised, are ingredients in their Erapaow-mai, or plaister to cure sores.

Taro.

*Arum-esculentum.*

The roots of this plant, of which there are several varieties, are as good as Ignames, and are reckoned very wholesome common food in the South-sea islands. The leaves, when baked, taste as well as greens.

E ape.

*Arum-costatum.*

The root of this plant is as good as the last, but considerably larger: the leaves, which are very smooth and extremely large, are used to wrap up, or lay any sort of victuals upon.

E toa-casuarina.

*Equisetifolia.*

This is one of the best woods they have; it is very hard and heavy, and coloured like mahogany. They make their clubs, lances, cloth-beaters, and several other knick-nacks and utensils of it.

Tooneenna.

*Hernandia-ovigera.*

Of the wood of this tree they make a sort of very small canoes, and several other necessary utensils.

E hooe-rorro.

*Cucurbita-pruriens.*

The fruit of this tree is about the size of a small orange, very hard, and quite round, serving them, instead of bottles, to put their monoe or oil in.

Moemoe.

*Phyllanthus-anceps.*

The only thing remarkable about this plant is the leaves, which shut up at night, from whence its name, which signifies sleepy.

E aowte.

*Morus-papyrifera.*

This is the shrub from which they make their finest and most beautiful cloth; and is probably the same with that of which they make paper in China. They never let it grow old, but cut it down when it is about a man's height, stripping the bark off, and laying it to soak in water. Of this they make their cloth either thick or thin as they please. They plant it in beds, and take great pains in the cultivation of it.

E roa.

*Urtica-argentea; or Urtica-candicans.*

Of the stalks of this nettle, beaten out, they make their best lines for their fish-hooks, which has the quality of not rotting with salt-water; they also make belts, or girdles of it, but very seldom garments; their best seins are also made of it.

E tootooe.

*Telopaea-perispica.*

Of the bark of this tree, soaked in water, they make that gummy substance which they put upon their dark-coloured cloth to make it glossy, and keep out the rain. The fruit of this tree is a sort of nut, which yields a very fat kernel, of which they make their black dye, used in Tataowing, by burning them and receiving the smoke. Strung upon a reed or stick they serve instead of candles, and give a very good light.

E ooron.



E ooroo.

*Sitodium-altile.*

This tree, which yields the bread-fruit so often mentioned by the voyagers to the South-seas, may justly be stiled the Staff-of-life to these islanders; for from it they draw most of their support. This tree grows to between thirty and forty feet high, has large palmated leaves, of a deep grass-green on the upper-side, but paler on the under; and bears male and female flowers, which come out single at the bottom or joint of each leaf. The male flower fades and drops off; the female, or cluster of females, swell and yield the fruit, which often weighs three or four pounds, and is as big as a person's head when full grown. It is of a green colour; the rind is divided into a number of polygonical sections; the general shape a little longer than round, and white on the inside, with a pretty large core. The fruit, as well as the whole plant, is full of a white clammy juice, which issues plentifully from any part that is cut: it delights in a rich soil, and seldom grows, if ever, on the low islands: it is a very handsome tree to look at, of a beautiful verdure, and well cloathed with leaves, bearing a vast quantity of fruit, which appears to hang in bunches, and, by its great weight, bends down the branches: it bears fruit a great part of the year, and there are several sorts of it, some smaller and others larger, which are ready to pluck at different seasons. They generally pluck it before it is ripe, using a long stick with a fork at the end of it for this purpose; and, before they roast it, scrape all the rind off with a shell; and then, when large, cut it in quarters; and, having prepared one of their ovens in the ground, with hot stones in it, they lay the fruit upon these, having previously put a layer of the leaves between, and then another layer over them, and, above that, more hot stones, covering up the whole close with earth, and, in two or three hours time, it is done; it then appears very inviting, more so than the finest loaf I ever saw; the inside is very white, and the outside a pale brown; it tastes very farinaceous, and is, perhaps, the most agreeable and best succedaneum for bread ever yet known, and, in many respects, exceeds it. When thus baked, it only keeps three or four days, another contrivance being used for keeping it; they take the baked fruit, cut out all the cores, and, with a stone-mallet, mash it to a pulp in a wooden trough, or tray. This pulp they put in a hole that is dug in the ground and lined with leaves; this is close covered up, and left a proper time till it ferments and becomes sour, at which time they take it up, and make it into little loaves, which they wrap up in the leaves, and, in this state, it is baked, and called by them mahe, and

and will keep several months, being eaten when bread-fruit is out of season, and carried to sea with them; and of it they form several sorts of paste, such as pepe, popoe, &c. which are used by them at their meals. The leaves of this tree are very useful to wrap fish and other eatables in, when put into the oven to be baked. Of the wood they build canoes, and make several other sorts of utensils; and, of the bark of young plants of it, which are raised on purpose, they make very good cloth, which is but little inferior to that made of Eaowte, only somewhat more harsh and harder.

## E awharra.

*Pandanus-tectorius.*

This tree generally grows on the sandy hillocks by the sea-side, and is found in great plenty on all the low islands; the leaves are long, like those of sedge, sawed on the edge; the flowers are male and female, growing upon different trees; those of the male-flower smell very sweet; and, of the bractea of them, which are white, they make a sort of garlands to put round their heads; the fruit is orange colour, and as big as one's head, consisting of a congeries of small cones, like those of the Anana, or Pine-apple, which they much resemble: the bottom of these cones, sucked when full ripe, yield a flat insipid sweetness, and are eaten by the children; but the chief use of this tree is in the leaves, which, when plucked and dried, make excellent thatching for their houses, and various sorts of mats and baskets. This is the Palmetto of the eastern voyagers.

## E mattee.

*Ficus-tinctoria.*

The figs of this tree are one of the chief ingredients in their red-dye for their garments: when they use them they nip or bite off the stalk close to the fruit, at which time a small drop of milky juice issues out; this they either shake upon the tow-leaves, used in this dye, or else into a cocoa-nut shell, with a little water, or cocoa-nut milk; and then dip the leaves into it, which they roll up in a small bundle, and work or squeeze them between the palm and their fingers, till the red colour is produced by the mixture of the two juices; but, what is very odd, these leaves being beaten in a mortar, and the juice taken from them and mixed with the fig-milk, will not produce the same colour. Of the bark of this tree very good twine is made, which is of particular use for making of seins, and other nets.

E aowa.



E aowa.

*Ficus-prelixa.*

This tree is remarkable on account of its trunk, which grows to an enormous size, by the branches hanging down, and taking root again, which makes a very grotesque figure. Of the bark of young plants, raised on purpose, they make a sort of cloth, naturally of a russet-hue, which they call Ora, being worn in the mornings, and much valued by them, especially that which is beaten very fine and thin.

E toee.

*Zezyphoides-argentea.*

The wood of this tree they make use of for various purposes, such as sterns of canoes, heightening boards for ditto, and beams to beat their cloth upon.

E apeeree.

*Dodonæa-viscosa.*

The wood of this tree, which is very tough, serves to make a particular sort of weapon, which they carry in their hand when they dive after sharks, and other large fish.

E tive.

*Dracontium-polyphyllum.*

The root of this is used to make a jelly like the Peea, but is not near so good.

Meiya.

*Musa-paradisica.*

This is the well-known tropical fruit called Plantains, and Bananas, of which there is a great variety in these islands: they reckon more than twenty sorts which differ in shape and taste; some of these are for eating raw, and others best boiled, and will serve instead of bread: they plant them in a rich soil, and take great pains in their cultivation.

Faihe.

*Musa-bibai.*

This is another sort of Plantains, which generally grow wild in the mountains, and sometimes are planted by them; they are far inferior to the last, have a considerable astringency, and eat best boiled or roasted. There are four different sorts, and the leaves of this and the last, serve to put victuals upon; and the rind of the trunk to make a sort of baskets called Papa-meiya.

E aree.

*Coccus-nucifer.*

This palm, the fruit of which is so well known in all places within the tropics, seems to be a native of these islands, being found every where in the greatest plenty, and

and in the greatest perfection, especially on the two low islands, called by them Motoos : these are many of them uninhabited, and are resorted to for the sake of the cocoa-nuts, which grow to a very great size on these islands ; they love a sandy soil, and thrive much near the sea-side on the rising of the hills : they are smaller, and later in growth ; they begin to bear when they are about ten feet high, and yield fruit several times in the year, and continue growing till they are so very tall, that they, by far, overtop all the rest of the trees : the leaves grow all at the top, from which the fruit hangs in several clusters of twenty or thirty, so enormously heavy, it is amazing how the slender stem of this tree can support them : when they have a mind to gather any for present use, they send up a boy who ties his feet together with a string, and vaults up to the top with great ease ; when there, he gets them off the stalk by screwing them round, and then flings them down, taking care to give them a twirl first, otherwise they would fall to the ground with such force, from such a height, as would split them, and lose all the liquor. When they have a mind to gather the whole bunch, they cut it off, and lower it down with a rope ; the way of opening them for present use is with their teeth, with which they pull off the outer rind, and then break the shell with a stone ; but when they have many to peel, they do it by driving them upon a pointed stick, which is fixed in the ground for that purpose. Some sorts of these nuts will not keep at all ; and other sorts, when pulled ripe, and properly dried and cured, will keep good a whole year : upon these racemi, or bunches, are ripe fruit, those that are half ripe, and others just set at the same time. The uses of this tree are many to the islanders of the south seas ; the fruit, when half ripe, yields about a pint to a quart of one of the most refreshing and agreeable liquors in nature : this delicious beverage they often put amongst their pastes and puddings, and delight much to wash their mouth and hands with a little of it ; the shell is, at this time, very soft, and is often eaten together with a little of the rind, but in no great quantities, it being apt to occasion costiveness ; as the fruit grows older, the milk turns thicker, more luscious, and wastes away ; the kernel begins to form round the edge, like a white transparent jelly, and is very nice eating in this state. When it is ripe, the kernel is hard and white, about half an inch thick, and eats as well as a good nut ; but the liquor is very indifferent, and, in a little time, wastes away intirely ; of the kernel they make two sorts of puddings, called Poe, and Etoooó, and eat it roasted alone ; they also make a sauce for fish of it, called Taiyero, by steeping



steeping the kernel in sea-water, and often shaking it, till it is almost dissolved; but the greatest quantity is used in making monoe, or oil, to anoint their hair; for this purpose they grate the kernel very small, then put it into a wooden tray, or trough, cover it, and set it in the shade, and, as the oil falls to the edges, they take it up with a shell, and put it into a calabash for use; it smells very rank, for which reason they put it into a quantity of scented woods and plants; but after all it smells very heavy, and is apt to give an European the head-ach. The shell is used for their drinking cups, vessels to hold water, and to put their victuals in; and, for this purpose, they make them smooth by rubbing them with coral. The shell of the ripe ones is black, and the others brownish white; the outer-rind, after being soaked in water, and well beaten, is drawn out into threads, of which they make variety of plaited-line for girdles, to frap their flutes, for slinging their calabashes, and has the quality of not rotting with salt-water: with this stuff they also calk their canoes; and, in the East-Indies, they make cables of it; of the leaves they make bonnets, and baskets to put their bread-fruit and apples in: the liber of the young leaves, which are very thin and transparent, they tie up in bunches, and stick in their hair by way of ornament: the brown skin, which covers the leaf, before it is unfolded, serves also for various purposes; and the wood of this tree answers all other common purposes very well.

## E papa.

Of the leaves of this tree, which are very white and glistering, when dried, they make their evanne-matting, much admired for its beauty.

## E howira.

This grows chiefly in the low islands; of the split leaves they make their best mats for garments, to sit, and sleep upon.

## E yeiei.

This plant is of the nature of osier; of the stalks of it they work their round baskets, which they call Heenei, and in which they keep their victuals, and all their utensils.

## Doodooe-awai &amp; Oheparra.

With these they dye their poowhirre, or brown cloth.

Patarra.

An eatable root, which I did not see.

Enioee.

A fine eatable fruit, of a red colour, which I did not see.

E apatahei.

An elegant flower, which I also did not see.

Oowhe note Maowa.

*Dioscorea-alata.*

This plant produces the root so well known by the name of Ignames, all over the East and West-Indies: they have several sorts of it, but that which grows upon the hills is the best.

E nahae.

This is a fern, which has an extraordinary sweet smell, and, for this reason, it is used by the better sort of people to sleep on.

E ahei.

The wood of this tree, has a very rich and delicious smell; is of a yellow colour, and is the principal ingredient used in perfuming their monoe, being grated small, and put to soak amongst it; as it is very scarce, it is in great request amongst them; we could never get a sight of the tree, but were told it grew on the mountains. They have various other vegetables with which they perfume their monoe, and likewise their cloaths: the names of these are, Pooeva, Maiteeraow, Annee, Noon-na, Ehace, Amea, and Matchooa.

E atoo.

A plant of which they make mat garments.





## A VOCABULARY of the LANGUAGE of O T A H E I T E .

Aree,	<i>A chief.</i>
To aree,	<i>A secondary chief.</i>
Toomeite,	<i>A superior officer.</i>
Taowaa,	<i>A priest.</i>
Eiya,	<i>A centinel.</i>
Tootuai,	<i>A trader.</i>
Teine,	<i>A dependant, or tenant.</i>
Tatta màd̀wreà,	<i>A poor man that gets his livelihood by labour, as a fisherman.</i>
Taow taow,	<i>A menial servant.</i>
Tata,	<i>People.</i>
Midee,	<i>A child.</i>
Earee,	<i>A boy.</i>
Aheine,	<i>A woman.</i>
Mituatane,	<i>Father.</i>
Mituaheine,	<i>Mother.</i>
Tooboonah,	<i>A grand-father.</i>
Teine,	<i>A brother.</i>
Tooaheine,	<i>A sister.</i>
Tooanah,	<i>An elder brother, or sister.</i>
Teine,	<i>A younger brother, or sister.</i>
Tane,	<i>A husband.</i>
Huaheine,	<i>A wife.</i>
Eeàpeèttè, taowa, or tyau,	<i>A friend.</i>
Midya,	<i>A widow.</i>
Opareemo,	<i>A skeleton, or bones.</i>
Eeree,	<i>The flesh.</i>

Ewey, or aëe

*The skin.*

Matee,

*Blood.*

Ewaowa,

*The veins.*

Eraowroo,

*The hair.*

Erowroo,

*The head.*

Eto,

*The top of the head.*

Eboo,

*The temples.*

Irai,

*The brow.*

Matau,

*The eyes.*

Eahoo,

*The nose.*

Paparia,

*The cheeks.*

Tarecha,

*The ears.*

Ewauha,

*The mouth.*

Eoto,

*The lips.*

Enecho,

*The teeth.*

Treero,

*The tongue.*

Maomee,

*The beard.*

Eaee,

*The neck.*

Trapooa,

*The gullet.*

Etaona,

*The shoulders.*

Erimau,

*The hands and arms.*

Aiai,

*The arm-pits.*

Watcea,

*The elbows.*

Aboorima,

*The palms of the hands.*

Epai,

*The thumb.*

Meyoooo,

*The nails.*

Eoma,

*The breasts.*

Eoo,

*The nipples.*

Eoboo,

*The belly.*

Pito,

*The navel.*

Etooa,

*The back.*

Etohai,

*The hips.*

Ehoorai,

*The anus.*

Cowhau,

*The thighs.*

Etooree,



Etooree,	<i>The knees.</i>
Eawy,	<i>The legs.</i>
Edeai,	<i>The calf of the leg.</i>
Moa moa,	<i>The ancles.</i>
Etapooai,	<i>The foot.</i>
Oütoo,	<i>The heel.</i>
Matiyo,	<i>The toes.</i>
Eyoare,	<i>A rat.</i>
Eairo,	<i>The tail of a quadruped.</i>
Manoo,	<i>A bird.</i>
Mato manoo,	<i>A bird's eye.</i>
Eneèhote manoo,	<i>A bird's beak.</i>
E haòw pè,	<i>The tail.</i>
Maniaow,	<i>The claws.</i>
Eroòppe,	<i>A pigeon, or dove.</i>
Ohaa te manoo,	<i>A bird's nest.</i>
Hooira moa,	<i>An egg.</i>
Aa,	<i>A green parrot.</i>
Veene,	<i>A blue parroquet.</i>
Morai,	<i>A duck.</i>
Eiya,	<i>A fish.</i>
Ewhai, or ephai,	<i>A cuttle-fish.</i>
Ehoomè,	<i>A seal.</i>
Ehoona,	<i>A turtle.</i>
Emahoo,	<i>A shark's skin.</i>
Eiyoo,	<i>Shagreen.</i>
Porahaaw,	<i>Shell-fish.</i>
Mapeehee,	<i>A limpet.</i>
E boòboo,	<i>A wilk.</i>
Aupuhua,	<i>Muscles.</i>
E ròrree,	<i>An actinia, or pisser, [a marine insect.]</i>
Peeyaow,	<i>A libella, or dragon-fly.</i>
Ootooròhonnoo,	<i>A spider.</i>
Oatoo,	<i>A louse.</i>
	<i>E reemo,</i>

E reemo,	<i>Sea-weed.</i>
Ewawaow, or erao,	<i>A leaf.</i>
Eramaiya,	<i>A plantain-leaf.</i>
Meiya,	<i>Plantains.</i>
Meiya èpé,	<i>Ripe plantains.</i>
Eaow,	<i>A tender green stalk.</i>
Epeea,	<i>A woody stalk.</i>
Ehooai,	<i>A calabash.</i>
Eboo,	<i>A cocca-nut shell.</i>
Po-ooroo,	<i>The bark of the bread-fruit tree.</i>
Hooa-ooiro,	<i>Fruit.</i>
Ooroo,	<i>Bread-fruit.</i>
Ooroo epé,	<i>Bread-fruit kept till it is half rotten, which is, nevertheless, sweet when roasted.</i>
Bidibidio,	<i>Small red Indian pease.</i>
Etoomoo,	<i>Wood.</i>
Hanooa,	<i>A sort of wood like crab-tree wood.</i>
Whanooa,	<i>Land.</i>
Ewha,	<i>An opening in the land.</i>
Maowa,	<i>Mountains and hills.</i>
Te Maowa, tei tei,	<i>Steep or perpendicular hills.</i>
Orowhaina,	<i>A high peaked hill in Otageite.</i>
Hiahia,	<i>Level or flat country.</i>
E rapao,	<i>Mud.</i>
E àrahow,	<i>Ashes.</i>
Owhai,	<i>A stone.</i>
Owhai mamòe,	<i>A soft or splintery stone.</i>
Owhai maowree,	<i>A hard or flinty stone.</i>
Tatteiaowra,	<i>A transparent crystal.</i>
Wahaa, or eahei,	<i>Fire.</i>
Eahei,	<i>Light.</i>
Avy,	<i>Water.</i>
Eàrroe,	<i>The swell of the sea, and the surf.</i>

Oròmàtooa,



Oròmàtooa,	<i>The air, or breath.</i>
Hiamdorre,	<i>Light puffs of air.</i>
Matai,	<i>Wind.</i>
Eata,	<i>The clouds.</i>
Eohoo,	<i>Smoke.</i>
Anooa nooa,	<i>The rainbow.</i>
Manaha,	<i>The sun.</i>
Toobatoora,	<i>The setting-sun.</i>
Marama,	<i>The moon.</i>
Efedeea,	<i>A star.</i>
Taowruah,	<i>The planet Venus.</i>
Nataihieah,	<i>The planet Saturn.</i>
Eparai,	<i>The horizon.</i>
T'Oheètee-otera,	<i>The east.</i>
T'Otera,	<i>The west.</i>
Oàpitoaraow,	<i>The north.</i>
Tahèaweira,	<i>The south.</i>
A fale,	<i>A house*.</i>
E taòwteea,	<i>The rafters of a house.</i>
E ahaow,	<i>The beams.</i>
E toorroo toorò,	<i>The posts.</i>
Kipoo a meemhee,	<i>A chamber-pot.</i>
Ebupau,	<i>A stool.</i>
Tota, also Eeno,	<i>A looking-glass.</i>
Mayo,	<i>A small rail.</i>
Ithee dee,	<i>A wooden image.</i>
Eiei,	<i>A mallet for cloth.</i>
Mahai,	<i>An oven for baking bread.</i>
Oorè dehaiya,	<i>A large nail.</i>
Oorè oorè,	<i>A middling-sized nail.</i>
Oorè eetea,	<i>A small nail.</i>

\* Tootahau's house is one hundred and twenty yards long, and twenty yards broad: the roof is supported by twenty posts, each nineteen feet high.

Utoi, or towa,	<i>An axe, or hatchet.</i>
Itee,	<i>A fly-flap.</i>
Whata,	<i>Sticks raised to hang baskets upon.</i>
Eitai,	<i>A straw-bag.</i>
Edevai,	<i>An open-wrought bag.</i>
Moean,	<i>Mats.</i>
Iteehahào,	<i>Red paint or dye.</i>
Matee,	<i>Red dye for cloth.</i>
Pace,	<i>A ship.</i>
Pace,	<i>A large canoe.</i>
Ewaha,	<i>A small canoe.</i>
Ewhàrraow,	<i>A boat-house.</i>
Taoda,	<i>A thick rope.</i>
Eaha,	<i>A plaited line, and thread for making nets.</i>
Ehow,	<i>A fishing-line.</i>
Oopeia,	<i>A seine.</i>
Hobuhoo,	<i>White cloth.</i>
Tuorloo,	<i>Thick white cloth.</i>
Ahao apau,	<i>Buff-coloured thin cloth.</i>
Habau,	<i>Thin buff-coloured cloth spotted with red.</i>
Poohiree,	<i>Reddish cloth.</i>
Ahao ora,	<i>Russet thin cloth.</i>
Haowaraia,	<i>Gummed cloth.</i>
Eiboo,	<i>Cloth made of old cloth.</i>
Pooroaw,	<i>A sort of stuff, taken from some tree, like hemp, of which they make cloth and girdles.</i>
Aihoo,	<i>A garment.</i>
Parawei,	<i>A shirt, or under garment.</i>
Ma. oa,	<i>A piece of cloth worn round the middle.</i>
Evane,	<i>A garment made of fine matting.</i>
Tupataw,	<i>A bonnet.</i>
Opaitea,	<i>A mat-girdle.</i>

Tamoou,



Tamoou,

*Wreaths of plaited human hair, which they  
set great value upon, worn as an orna-  
ment, chiefly on the head.*

Poe,

*Ear-rings.*

Poe oole oole,

*A yellow bead.*

Poe meedee,

*A green bead.*

Poe ere ere,

*A blue bead.*

Ewhahana,

*A bow.*

Eahe,

*An arrow.*

Epanoo,

*A drum.*

Paraow,

*A pair of clappers.*

Vivo,

*A flute.*

Mama,

*Child's pap.*

Poe,

*A paste, or pudding, made of the roots of arum.*

Peea,

*A strong jelly, or paste, made of the roots  
of arum.*

Mahei,

*A kind of sour paste, made of fermented  
bread-fruit.*

Opepe,

*A sort of paste.*

Monoe,

*Cocoa-oil.*

Toonoah,

*A mole in the skin.*

Ehaow,

*Sweat.*

Hooàre,

*Spittle.*

Hoope,

*Snot.*

Paiya,

*Fat.*

Matàiree tona,

*The flye in the eye.*

Trapaou,

*A scab.*

Ewhàiwai,

*The elephantiasis.*

Eowhàoo,

*The windy dropsy.*

Opeepee,

*The numbness in the feet when they sleep.*

Màtte noa,

*A natural death.*

Heiva,

*A ceremony performed by the deceased's re-  
lations.*

Poohira,

*A place, or residence.*

I

Morai,

Morai,	<i>A burying-ground.</i>
Morino Tootahau,	<i>The burying-ground of Tootahau.</i>
Morai natówa,	<i>Our burying-place.</i>
Whata,	<i>The edifice they lay their dead upon.</i>
E peènei,	<i>An echo.</i>
E paeèna,	<i>The sound or noise which forms the echo.</i>
Ahoo,	<i>A fart.</i>
Mahana,	<i>A day.</i>
Poa,	<i>A night.</i>
Po oore,	<i>A dark night.</i>
Otaowa,	<i>Yesterday.</i>
Aouna,	<i>To-day.</i>
Oboboa,	<i>To-morrow.</i>
Obabadura,	<i>The day after to-morrow.</i>
Itopa de mahano,	<i>Sun-set.</i>
Otooe te po,	<i>Late in the night.</i>
Hàmanee,	<i>The temper or will.</i>
Tatta te Hàmanee maitai,	<i>A good-natured person.</i>
Tatta marò,	<i>A contradictory person, one that will not allow another to know as well as he.</i>
Tatta maowra, & tatta whattaow,	<i>A great lazy, idle, or loitering person.</i>
Tatta taowra,	<i>An industrious man, also an active, clever, stirring man.</i>
Amawhàttoo,	<i>A shrew, or scold.</i>
Maheine eawaow,	<i>An housewife.</i>
Niaowniaow,	<i>The stench of a carcase.</i>
Ehaowa,	<i>A smell.</i>
Motoo & puta,	<i>A hole.</i>
Epehe,	<i>A song.</i>
Tetooa,	<i>A title usually given to their women of rank, though every woman will answer to it.</i>
Teà,	<i>White.</i>
Amawhàttoo,	<i>Inaustrious, pains-taking.</i>
Peèò,	<i>Bent, bending, crooked, turning, winding.</i>
	<i>Téehaòwratea,</i>



Téehaòwratea,	<i>Strait, even.</i>
Epàceya,	<i>Smooth.</i>
Anànnà,	<i>Transparent or clear.</i>
Po-eèrree,	<i>Opake or dull.</i>
Eawhà,	<i>Brittle.</i>
Orroo, òrroo,	<i>Limber, or pliable.</i>
Eoròee,	<i>Tapering to a point.</i>
Oèòè, teres,	<i>Long, small, or slender.</i>
Toòmmoo,	<i>Blunt, opposed to oèòè.</i>
Mènne, mènne,	<i>Thick, short, and round.</i>
Tàrra tàrra,	<i>Crumpled or creased.</i>
Verra verri,	<i>Hot, applied to victuals.</i>
Marroowhai,	<i>Dry.</i>
Emàioèeya,	<i>Lame, or crippled.</i>
Oohàmmama,	<i>Open, expanded wide.</i>
Ooa-peèrree,	<i>Shut, fastened, or glued together.</i>
Hoònnéhoònnè,	<i>Swelled.</i>
Nooè,	<i>Large, grand, or chief.</i>
Etee,	<i>Little, or lesser.</i>
Nìnnoo nìnnoo,	<i>Juicy.</i>
Ewàwa,	<i>Hard and dry.</i>
Opàirirèè,	<i>Blown down, or blown away.</i>
Etooa,	<i>Under.</i>
Earò,	<i>Upper.</i>
Mona,	<i>Deep.</i>
T'joota,	<i>Ashore.</i>
Whattata,	<i>Near at hand.</i>
Oeta,	<i>Yonder, or without.</i>
Epapa tahei,	<i>Single.</i>
Niteeya,	<i>Double.</i>
Ataowa,	<i>Together.</i>
Woreede,	<i>Stolen.</i>
Ooapa,	<i>Given away.</i>

Tei modà,	<i>Before.</i>
Tei modrree.	<i>Behind.</i>
Tei ròtto poo,	<i>In the middle, or between.</i>
Tei ròtto,	<i>Within.</i>
Tei wahao,	<i>Without.</i>
Nehàia,	<i>When.</i>
Tèiene,	<i>Just now.</i>
T'èna,	<i>This.</i>
Ehai,	<i>When, where.</i>
Pahà,	<i>Perhaps, may be, very likely.</i>
No reira,	<i>From their.</i>
Paraow, peès,	<i>Rough or hard speech or tongue.</i>
Paraow teeahaowratea,	<i>Soft speech.</i>
Paraow ohodmmoo,	<i>Low or soft talking.</i>
Paraow tooirro,	<i>Loud or high talk.</i>
Taowna,	<i>A word of great contempt.</i>
Myty,	<i>Good.</i>
Maw myty,	<i>Good victuals.</i>
Manamanatey,	<i>Very good, or sweet.</i>
Eena,	<i>Middling, or so-so.</i>
Porai,	<i>To talk.</i>
Meetee, & ehioèe,	<i>To kiss.</i>
Woradee,	<i>To be angry.</i>
Mataow,	<i>To be affronted, or indisposed.</i>
Eàwow,	<i>To scold.</i>
Emòto,	<i>To box, or fight.</i>
Mareere,	<i>To be cold.</i>
Eporiree,	<i>To be hungry.</i>
Eci,	<i>To eat.</i>
Eotte,	<i>To suck.</i>
Norothoe dé adée t'avai,	<i>To drink cocoa-nut liquor.</i>
Amama,	<i>To yawn.</i>
Iradwai,	<i>To dose, slumber, or be drowsy.</i>
Màtte roah,	<i>To die, or be dead.</i>

Edeodoo,



Edoodoo,	<i>To make cloth.</i>
Eaow,	<i>To swim.</i>
Toobàipai,	<i>To knock.</i>
Toataow,	<i>To anchor.</i>
Heapoonnè,	<i>To encompass, or encircle.</i>
Ooawhèwhè,	<i>To entangle.</i>
Ehodtè te Oops,	<i>To pull one by the hair.</i>
Eninnei,	<i>To squeeze, or press one.</i>
Pattòe,	<i>To jostle, or shake one.</i>
Ewhàttoe,	<i>To jog, or shuffle against a person.</i>
Oòmohaooa,	<i>To cram, or thrust into one.</i>
Tawèèrree,	<i>To twine or whirl any thing about; to wring; also to pluck or gather cocoa-nuts, by twirling them round.</i>
Hiaree,	<i>To pluck or gather fruit.</i>
Taowra,	<i>To twine, cord, or line.</i>
Eàee niea te mâtto,	<i>To climb up rocks.</i>
Epèe niea,	<i>To go up with a rope.</i>
Tìrai te pàhee,	<i>To build, or make a ship, or large canoe.</i>
Whainaow,	<i>To beget.</i>
Eeraira,	<i>To jump, or leap over.</i>
Eheèya,	<i>To tumble.</i>
Etoòràì,	<i>To drive, throw, or push down.</i>
Emàiroo,	<i>To sting.</i>
Ephàow,	<i>To smell.</i>
Eoòma,	<i>To nip.</i>
Tootoòà,	<i>To spit.</i>
Eetoò,	<i>To stand.</i>
Ehèhe,	<i>To buzz like a fly.</i>
Mèamèa, & èrea èriea,	<i>To shrink or shudder at any thing.</i>
Airareè,	<i>To fly.</i>
Emàow,	<i>To stick or adhere to any thing.</i>
Taimòradèe,	<i>To reel to and fro.</i>
Ehò,	<i>To buy, exchange, or barter.</i>

Manoo-

Manooaheènnée,	<i>To depend or hang upon.</i>
Etoò,	<i>To lower, or set down upon the ground.</i>
Eàma,	<i>To carry on the shoulders.</i>
Madàidài,	<i>To look at, handle, or touch; to view.</i>
Epa,	<i>To give.</i>
Evaha,	<i>To be carried over the water.</i>
Mayneenee, or myneerea,	<i>To tickle.</i>
Itopa,	<i>To fall.</i>
A wharr awai,	<i>To go or pass away.</i>
Wahoeè & chaòe,	<i>To turn, or go back again.</i>
Eheèro harre ehòe,	<i>To come and go.</i>
Toòiro,	<i>To shout or halloo at one.</i>
Aiwee,	<i>To understand, or comprehend; to listen, or give ear.</i>
Ewhàro,	<i>To believe.</i>
Emàro,	<i>To disbelieve.</i>
Hoòna haòwnna,	<i>To deny, or disbelieve.</i>
Ewa, or ooai,	<i>It rains.</i>
Eoeffra,	<i>It lightens.</i>
Patiree,	<i>It thunders.</i>
Whaow whaow,	<i>It stinks.</i>
Eho mai, & harre mai,	<i>Come to me.</i>
Ehòee mai,	<i>Row to me.</i>
Paraow mai,	<i>Speak to me.</i>
Aremina,	<i>Come with me.</i>
Eeyaha, or lhaya,	<i>Get away, or get you gone.</i>
Hareioota,	<i>Go you there or yonder.</i>
Harenaow,	<i>Do you go with me.</i>
Ara mai,	<i>Follow me, or come hither.</i>
Atira,	<i>Stop.</i>
Area,	<i>Stay.</i>
Parahei,	<i>Sit down.</i>
Ainao,	<i>Take care.</i>
Eeyo, or tirara,	<i>Look you.</i>

Titara,



Titara,	<i>Let me look, or shew me.</i>
Mamoo,	<i>Hold your tongue.</i>
Tehai,	<i>Where is he?</i>
Oewai,	<i>What is your name?</i>
Noa oie tehai,	<i>Where is such a person?</i>
Harehiea,	<i>Whither do you go?</i>
Wahoëe,	<i>What is it?</i>
T'ahoe t'eha,	<i>Of what is this garment made?</i>
Eha,	<i>What? or What say you?</i>
Eha t'oe, tirree eetee,	<i>What would you please to have?</i>
Tai poe etee noòw,	<i>Pray give me a little bead?</i>
Ooàteea te tirre n'oe,	<i>You shall have what you want.</i>
Eaoòwha te matai,	<i>The wind has changed.</i>
Mate,	<i>My sickness.</i>
Neeheeo,	<i>Good night.</i>
Waow,	<i>I.</i>
Naow,	<i>Myself.</i>
Tooanahoe & tooanahahow,	<i>You and I.</i>
Nat'owa,	<i>Ours.</i>
Potohe,	<i>Firstly.</i>
Aiba, aim, aipa, aita, & aiya,	<i>Are all negatives, and pronounced with the tongue thrust a little way out of the mouth.</i>
Nata,	<i>An article which signifies of.</i>
Taipara, tideo, tidoo,	<i>Words used in their songs.</i>

## An OTAHEITEAN S O N G.

TAOWDEE waow, tetatta waow, t'eva heinéa waow, te tanè a waow, teina  
ye waow, e tottee era waow, e moo era waow, e pai era waow, e tei moore era  
waow, e tei whattee era waow, é tei niea era waow, e doo doo wai too mahioee,  
tootromaoo tooaipai toowaiwhatta too te whainè toota pèa tooaimoca e tootre deerce:  
too wai doeo.

M E N ' S.

## M E N S N A M E S.

Arabo.	Teetee.	Tooaoo.
Oaiyo.	Tiaree.	Toobaiah.
Obade.	Tirooduah.	Toobairoo,
Otapairoo.	Tirooroo.	Toopuah.
Otee.		

## W O M E N S N A M E S.

Aidada.	Matai Irowhoa.	Oteateah.
Deaiyo.	Otapairoo.	Tirahaow diea.

*Names of Islands near Otakeite.*

Aiteah.	Maowrooah.	Tabuahmanoo.
Atiarabo.	Matea.	Taha.
Bola-bola.	Mopipahau.	Taheeree.
Eimayo.	Oheiteroah.	Tetiroah.
Huaheine.	Onooahaora.	Toopbai.
Maitoo.	Otahau.	Yoolce-Etea.

## N U M E R A T I O N.

Tohe,	One.
Rooa,	Two.
Torhoo,	Three.
Ha,	Four.
Illemei,	Five.
Whaine,	Six.
Hitoo,	Seven.
Walhoo,	Eight.
Iva,	Nine.
Hoolhoo,	Ten.
Matohe,	Eleven.

Marooa,



Marooa,	<i>Twelve.</i>
Matorhoo,	<i>Thirteen.</i>
Maha,	<i>Fourteen.</i>
Maillemei,	<i>Fifteen.</i>
Mawhaine,	<i>Sixteen.</i>
Mahitoo,	<i>Seventeen.</i>
Mawalhoo,	<i>Eighteen.</i>
Maiva,	<i>Nineteen.</i>
Arooato,	<i>Twenty.</i>

REMARKS on the *Otabeitean Language.*

The language is very soft, having a great number of vowels, diphthongs, and triphthongs.

Every word, almost, begins with a vowel, which they most commonly drop.

It is also very metaphorical, as I have observed in many instances; as Matapoa, a person blind of an eye, which literally is Night-eye. Mataavai, the name of the bay we anchored in, literally signifies Watery-eye; which appellation is not unapt from the great quantity of rain which falls in the bay. Tehaia, a woman's name, who being lost when a child, her friends went about, crying Tehai? which means, Where is she?

The natives could not repeat, after us, the sounds of the letters, Q, X, and Z, without great difficulty; G, K, and S, they could not pronounce at all.

Many of the names of the people of our ship having the G, K, or S, in them, they could not approach nearer the sound of them than as follows:

Toote,	for	Cook.	Mata	for	Monkhouse.
Opane	—	Banks.	Petrodero	—	Pickerfgill.
Tolano	—	Solander.	Tate	—	Clark.
Treene	—	Green.	Poline	—	Spoving.
Hite	—	Hicks.	Taibe	—	Stainsby.
Towara	—	Gore.	Patine	—	Parkinson.

K

They

They have various sounds peculiar to themselves, which none of us could imitate; some of them they pronounced like B and L mingled together; others between B and P, and T and D. Some like B h, L h, and D h.

When they mean to speak of a thing somewhat small, they often double the word, as Oorè oorè, a smallish nail.

They also double the word for the superlative, as Teá teá, very white.

Mai, when placed after a verb, signifies that the action was done to you.

Mai, when added to an adverb, signifies several things, as Mai Maroo, somewhat soft, or inclining to be soft.

They have a whoop, when they call after any person, which they pronounce like Ahu ! raising their voice very high at the last syllable.

On the 11th, the tents were struck, and we got every thing on board; but, on examining the anchor-stocks, we found them very much worm-eaten, and were obliged to wait till the carpenter had made new ones, which detained us two days longer. None of the Indians came near us till the next day, except Toobaiah, who is a sort of high-priest of Otaheite; and he designed to sail with us; however, several of the principal natives sent their servants on board with presents; we sent them others in return, and left them tolerably well reconciled to us.

On the 13th, several of the natives came on board to take leave of us, to whom we made some presents; and, at parting with us, they appeared very sorrowful. In the forenoon we weighed anchor, and sailed, with a fine breeze, from the west, steering our course W. by N. having Toobaiah, and his little boy Taiyota, on board with us. [See pl. IX.] On our leaving the shore, the people in the canoes set up their woeful cry, Awai, Awai; and the young women wept very much. Some of the canoes came up to the side of the ship, while she was under sail, and brought us many cocoas.

Toward





S. Parkinson del.

R. B. Godfrey Sculp.

*The Lad Taiyota, Native of Otaheite, in the Dress of his Country.*





Toward night we saw an island called, by Toobaiah, Tetiroah, and altered our course a little to the westward, steering for the island of Yoollee-Etea, the native place of Toobaiah.

On the 14th, we discovered the isle of Huaheine, which is high land, but the wind being against us, we could not reach it; we therefore tacked about, and took a stretch toward an island that we saw at a distance, which Toobaiah told us was Yoollee-Etea.

In the afternoon of this day it was almost calm; and we had but little wind till the next day, being the 15th: at noon we had a fine breeze; and at five in the afternoon were within six leagues of the island of Huaheine. It was made up of several peaks of high land, and divided, like Otaheite, by some lower land intervening. The island appeared to be almost as large again as Eimayo; and, from the mast-head, we could discover the tops of the mountains of Yoollee-Etea, over those of Huaheine.

Toobaiah praying in the afternoon, in the stern-windows, called out, with much fervor, O Tane, ara mai, matai, ora mai matai; which is to say, Tane (the god of his Morai) send to me, or come to me with a fair wind; but his prayer proving ineffectual, he said, *Wooreede waow*, I am angry. However, he told us that we should have wind when the sun arrived at the meridian, and so it happened, though we did not impute to him the gift of prophecy or foresight.

Toobaiah told us they often had wars with the natives of Atiarabo, a neighbouring island; and that, when they take any of them prisoners, they cut off their under-jaws, and hang them up. Several of these trophies of victory Mr. Banks saw hung up in a man's house at Atiarabo, in one of his excursions among the people of Oboreano, at a time when they had made prisoners Oroamo's four brothers, and two of Oboreah's, and had taken all her canoes.

Early on the 16th, we were close to the shore of the island of Huaheine; but, meeting with no safe place to anchor in, we doubled the point, and went to the N. W. side of the island, where we anchored, in a pretty little bay, close by the shore in eleven fathom water: the water was very smooth, and the banks shoaled so steep, that we might have rid safe within forty yards off the shore. Several canoes came off to us as we sailed along the coast, and some of the natives came on board, amongst whom was a king, who was the first that ventured to come up the ship's side, and he approached it trembling. Toobaiah conversed with them very freely.

This country affords a more pleasing prospect than Otaheite, being more picturesque. Some of the hills are very high; and, from this bay, we can see the islands Yoollee-Etea, Otahau, and Bolabola; which last appears like a hill of a conical form, forked at the top. Before the bay, and a good way farther on, runs a reef which opens at the two ends, but has no opening in the front. The Captain, Toobaiah, and some others, went on shore with the aree, or king; and, as soon as he landed, he immediately repaired to an adjacent morai, and returned thanks to Tane for his safe passage, whom he presented with two handkerchiefs, and some other trifles; and, to the surgeon who assisted him, he presented a hog.

On the 17th, several of the inhabitants came on board, and brought with them some cocoa-nuts; and one of them, a friend of mine from Otaheite, brought a basket of paste or pudding, baked in bread-fruit leaves, which was made of the roots of Taro and cocoa-nuts: they call it Etaoo, and it tastes very much like the poe of Otaheite, and is very good food. The custom of changing names prevails much in this island, and is deemed a mark of great friendship.

During the short time we were upon the coast of this island, we purchased twenty-four hogs and pigs, besides fowls, fruits, and roots, at reasonable rates; but they raised the price of their commodities before we left them.

This



This island, the extent of which we had not time to learn, is considerably longer than broad; and, to all appearance, very fruitful in cocoas, bread-fruit, plantains, and eatable-roots, such as taro, eape, and the sweet potatoe. These roots, with different sorts of paste, are their principal food when there is no bread-fruit. They have a plenty of cuttle-fish, but not so many of other kinds as are to be found at Otaheite. Their cloth-tree is planted very neatly, and cultivated with great care, having drains made through the beds of earth to draw off the water; and the sides neatly built up with stones: and, in the drains, they plant the arum which yields the yam they call Taro.

We found great quantities of a bastard sort of shagreen upon the island, and many pearls of an indifferent sort.

The natives of this island are not of such a dark complexion as those of Otaheite, and the other neighbouring islands; and the women are, in general, as handsome, and nearly of the same colour, as Europeans; [see pl. VIII. fig. 3 and 4.] from which we may draw a reason for the name of this pretty island ||, which I left regretting that I did not see more of it.

On the 19th, in the afternoon, we set sail for Yoolee-Etea, and the next morning, being the 20th, we cast anchor in a bay, which is formed by a reef, on the north side of this island. Two canoes of people came to us from the shore, and brought with them two small hogs; they took but little notice of us, and expressed as little surprize at any thing they saw. The captain went on shore and took possession of the island for the king; he saw but few inhabitants, and scarce any of distinguished rank amongst them. They behaved so coolly that the captain did not know what to make of them. Toobaiah, who was with him, seemed to be quite displeased. We did not know the occasion of their reservedness; but conjectured that the Bolobola people had been amongst them.

|| Huaheine, the name of this island, means also a wife.

On the 21st, some of us went on shore, and bought many plantains, and coconuts. The plantains were mostly green, and, boiled or roasted, ate as well as a potatoe.

In the afternoon we went on shore again, and saw but few of the natives in the country, which, though very pleasant, looks like an uninhabited or deserted place. We saw some morais, [see pl. X.] or burial places, which are similar in all these islands, and went into one of them, in which there was a whatee, or altar, with a roasted hog, and fish upon it, designed as an offering to the Ethooa, or god. Near to the whatee, or altar, there was a large house, which contained the coongdrums used at their solemnities: and, adjoining to this house, were several large cages of wood, having awnings of palm-leaves upon them. These cages are called Oro, and rested upon beams laid upon others that stood upright, and seemed intended for the reception of the birds sacred to Ethooa, of which there are two that fly about their morais, the grey heron, and a blue and brown king-fisher. These morais are paved, or rather covered with a sort of coral, and planted with various sorts of flowering shrubs, such as nonoah, etoa, and hibiscus. At the front of the morai, which faces the sea, they have built a sort of amphitheatre, of large rough stones; and, among these stones, there are a great many long boards set up, carved in various figures, according to their fancy. Every family of note has one of these morais ornamented as much as they can afford \*. I have been told, that the inhabitants of these three isles worship the rainbow, which they call Toomeitee no Tane.

On

\* A kind of priest, [see pl. XI.] called heiva, attends these Morais, cloathed in a feather garment, ornamented with round pieces of mother-of-pearl, and a very high cap on his head, made of cane, or bamboo; the front of which is feather-work; the edges beset with quills stripped of the plumage. He has also a sort of breast-plate, of a semicircular shape, made of a kind of wicker-work, on which they weave their plaited twine in a variety of figures: over this they put feathers of a green pigeon in rows; and between the rows is a semicircular row of shark's teeth. The edge of the breast-plate is fringed with fine white dog's hair.

This priest is commonly attended with two boys, painted black, who assist him in placing the hog and fish for the Ethooa; as also in strewing the body of the defunct with leaves and flowers of bamboo; and,





J. Parkinson del

J. Newton Sculp.

*A Morai, or Burial Place, in the Island of Yoolee = Etea.*













*S. Parkinson del.*

*J. Chambers Sculp.*

*An Heiva, or kind of Priest of Yoolee-Eltea, & the Neighbouring Islands.*



On the 24th, in the afternoon, we went out at the west end of the bay, which the natives call Opou, but found our passage very difficult on account of the shoals, one of which we narrowly escaped: the man, who sounded, crying out Two fathom, we wore ship directly, or we should have been on a bank. At length, however, we cleared the shoals; but not being able to get out in time, anchored over-against a deep bay, and some of our men went on shore to look for hogs.

This island is, in many respects, much like Huaheine, and the country as much variegated; but this side of the island seems to have undergone some revolution; the inhabitants are but few, and poor, and have no political distinction of rank amongst them. The shagreen is in greater plenty here, and at Huaheine, than at Otaheite, where it was a scarce commodity. They have also great plenty of taro, and eape. As to the bread-fruit it was but young; and of apples I saw none.

On the 25th, we set sail from the bay of Owhare, and steered our course to the westward, designing to go to Bolobola, or round Otahau, to the south-side of Yoollee-Etea; but, the wind blowing from the westward, we could not double the point of Otahau; so that we did nothing that day but traverse the coast of Bolobola.

The island of Bolobola is made up of one very high forked peak of land, with seven low hills round it.

In the evening, at sun-set, we discovered the island of Toopbai, making in low land.

and, for two or three days after, is constantly employed in ranging the adjacent fields and woods, from which every one retires on his approach. The relations, in the mean time, build a temporary house near the Morai, where they assemble, and the females mourn for the deceased, by singing songs of grief, howling, and wounding their bodies in different places with shark's teeth; after which they bathe their wounds in the sea or river, and again return to howl and cut themselves, which they continue for three days. After the body is corrupted, and the bones become bare, the skeleton is deposited in a sort of stone pyramid built for that purpose.

On

On the 28th, the wind blowing full from the west, and being often becalmed, we could not weather the point, the wind hauling round the island, and meeting us as we tacked about.

In the evening, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and the Master, went on shore, in the pinnace, to Otahau, and, not returning so soon as expected, we fired a cannon at nine o'clock; and, still neither seeing nor hearing of them, we fired another, and hung out a light in the shrouds. We were soon answered by them with a musket, by which we found they had got out to sea; and about ten they arrived, and brought with them three hogs, fifteen fowls, with a great quantity of plantains, cocoa-nuts, and taro.

This island is but thinly inhabited, and some parts of it very barren.—We had a great swell among these islands.

On the 30th, we went round to Bolobola, and beat up to windward, to get to the other side of Yoolee-Etea, and had a sharp breeze from the S. E. all night. This day we saw the island of Maowroah, consisting of a large round hill, with a small one on the side of it.

On the 1st of August, after so long beating to windward, we at last got along-side of Yoolee-Etea; but even then we could not get into the bay which we designed to enter; and, the wind being against us, we were obliged to cast anchor at the entrance of it, between two reefs. In the afternoon we attempted to warp the ship into the bay, but endeavouring to heave the anchor, we found it was fastened to some rock, where we left it till the next morning. The natives came off to us in great numbers, and we bought of them ten hogs, for ten spikes each, with plenty of cocoas, and plantains, and they seemed very joyful at our arrival.

Early on the 2d, we attempted again to get up the anchor; with some difficulty happily succeeded; and, afterwards, warped the ship into the bay, which is called Amameenee, and moored her in a proper station, about a mile from shore. The natives flocked to us again; appeared highly delighted, and were so fond of  
our



our commodities, that, for a few small nails, they gave us many things of considerable value amongst them; and whatever we gave them, whether nails, pewter, watches, or other toys, were immediately hung upon their ears.

On the 4th, we went on shore, and took a walk up into the country, which is very pleasant, and saw a great quantity of Taro and Eape growing: We saw also a great quantity of the true Yam, which is so common in the West-Indies; and bread-fruit trees, which were nearly in perfection; though the crop of fruit upon them did not appear to be so large as I have seen.

There are several Morais in this part of the island; in one of which we saw a string of jaw-bones hung up on the Afale, or house, of the Ethooa, with several skulls laid in rows: and we met a man of a fair complexion, whose hair was white as milk; also their Aree Dehei, or king, who is called Oorea, and his son; the former appeared to be a very modest sort of a man, and the latter as handsome a youth as I ever saw. Opoone, who is king of Bolobola, stays in the next bay; they say he is a very old man, and we suppose the people of this island have submitted to him\*.

The border of low land round the hills is very narrow here, and not very populous; but several of the inhabitants are comely, and in a much more flourishing

\* Toobaiah informed us, that, some years past, the chiefs of Otaheite, and the neighbouring islands, banished such of their criminals as were convicted of thefts, and other crimes which they thought did not deserve death, to an adjacent island called Bolobola, which, before the commencement of that law, was almost barren and uninhabited; which practice continued several years. In process of time their numbers so greatly increased, that the island was insufficient for their subsistence. Being men of desperate fortunes, they made themselves canoes, turned pirates, and made prisoners such of the people of the islands near them as had the misfortune to fall in their way, and seized their canoes and effects. Opoone, who was one of the worst of these criminals, by artful insinuations so wrought on the rest, that he was admitted their chief, or king; and, growing still more powerful, by frequent acquisitions of prisoners, he adventured to make war on the people of Otahaw, a neighbouring island, who, not expecting so sudden an invasion, were not prepared for defence, and were obliged to submit to be tributaries to him. He afterwards conquered Yoolce-etea, and other islands, which he annexed to his dominion of Bolobola.

state than those on the other side of the island, who are men of Yoollee-etea, or men of Bolobola, we could not learn which.

There is a great number of boat-houses all round the bays, [see pl. XII.] built with a Catanarian arch, thatched all over; and the boats kept in them are very long, bellying out on the sides, with a very high peaked stern, and are used only at particular seasons.

We had a great quantity of fish brought on board in the afternoon of this day, and three pounds and a half were served to each man of the ship's company.

On the 7th, in the afternoon, Mr. Banks and myself went to see an entertainment called an Heivo. We passed over four bays E. and were carried, by the natives, till we came to the bottom of a bay called Tapeeoe, where a number of people was assembled. A large mat was laid upon the ground, and they began to dance upon it, putting their bodies into strange motions, writhing their mouths, and shaking their tails, which made the numerous plaits that hung about them flutter like a peacock's train. Sometimes they stood in a row one behind another, and then they fell down with their faces to the ground, leaning on their arms, and shaking only their tails, the drums beating all the while, with which they kept exact time. An old man stood by as a prompter, and roared out as loud as he could at every change. These motions they continued till they were all in a sweat; they repeated them three times alternately, and, after they had done, the girls began. In the interval, between the several parts of the drama, some men came forward, who seemed to act the part of drolls; and, by what I could distinguish, they attempted to represent the Conquest of Yoollee-etea, by the men of Bolobola; in which they exhibited the various stratagems used in the conquest, and were very vociferous, performing all in time to the drum. In the last scene, the actions of the men were very lascivious.

The people, in the part where this farce was performed, are chiefly Bolobola men, and they seem to be settled in the best part of the island, the low-land being wider here than in any other part near the harbour. On this coast there are many spits and shoals, formed of coral rocks; and, on the reef, the surf breaks very high,





S. Parkinson del.

A Boat-House, in which the Natives of Yoollee-Eteea, and the  
Neighbouring Islands, preserve their Canoes of State from the Weather.

J. Newton scul.

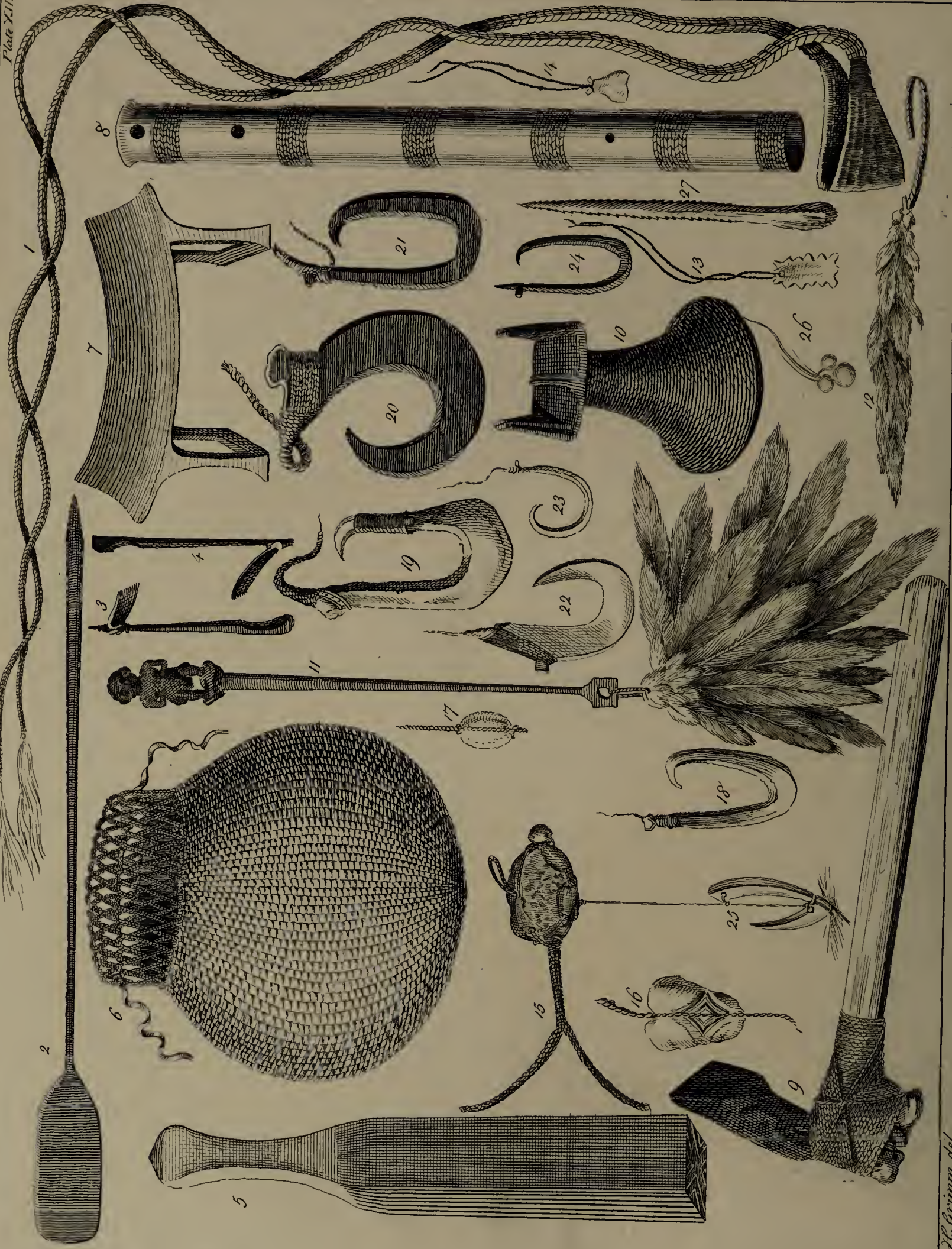












S.H. Grimm del.

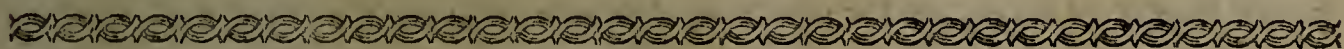
Various Instruments, & Utensils, of the Natives of Otahite, & of the adjacent Islands.

W. Darling Sculp.



high, and makes a noise as loud as thunder. There are some plantations of pepper in this part of the island.

It is remarkable, that, notwithstanding the people of these islands cannot pronounce the sound of the letter K, yet I have met with a great number in Yoollee-etea, who, having a *bec* in their speech, continually substitute it instead of that of their favourite letter T.



The UTENSILS of the inhabitants of the island of Otaheite, and the neighbouring islands, being similar, we have here annexed a plate of some of them, to which we have occasionally referred; but, as we have not mentioned the sizes of them, we shall here recapitulate those drawn in the plate, and shall give a particular account of each. The number of the plate is XIII. of which,

- No. 1. Is a Sling, about four feet long, made of plaited twine, formed from the fibres of the bark of a tree; the part, which holds the stone, is woven very close, and looks like cloth, from which the string gradually tapers to a point.
2. The Paddle, made of wood neatly shaped, and worked very smooth, used to strike the instruments No. 3 and 4, wherewith they indent or mark their skins, which they call Tataowing. It is about eighteen inches long.
3. and 4. Are their Tataowing Instruments, the handles of which are wood; towards the end of which is a hollow made to lay the fore-finger of the hand in which holds it: the head is made of one or two flat pieces of bone, of various breadths, tapering to a point towards the handle, to which it is fastened very tight with fibres of the bark of a tree: the broad part, or bottom, is cut into many small sharp teeth. When they mark any person, they dip the instrument, a small one or large one, according to the figure intended, into a black liquid, or juice, expressed from some plant, and, placing it on the part intended to be marked,

marked, give it a small blow with the paddle, which causes a great deal of pain. These instruments are about five inches in length.

5. The Cloth-beater, about fourteen inches long.
6. One of their Baskets; round the mouth is a kind of netting made of plaited twine, through which a string is put, which draws the plaiting together, and closes up the mouth. It is eleven inches high, and three feet in circumference.
7. An Ebupa, or Stool, used as a pillow; they generally put a piece of their cloth on it before they lay their head on it. There are many sizes of them; the very large ones they use also as stools to sit on. This, expressed in the figure, was twelve inches and a half long; but some are of the length of two feet.
8. Is one of their Flutes, made of Bamboo, and ornamented with the plaited twine, which also strengthens it; they are about one foot and a half long.
9. One of their Hatchets, the handle of this was fourteen inches and a half long; the head about four inches and a half in length, and the edge about two inches broad.
10. Is a figure of the Stone Paste-beater: this was seven inches and a quarter high.
11. A Fly-flap, the handle made of a hard brown wood, is thirteen inches long.
12. The Feather Ornament for the Head, six inches long.
- 13, 14. Mother-of-pearl Ornaments for the Ears, about half an inch long.
15. The Decoy used in fishing, made of shells; the length, from the head to the extremity of the tail, seven inches and a half.
16. A Bone Plummet for their fishing lines, carved, two inches and a quarter long.
17. Another Plummet, made of Spar, about one inch long.



18. A Mother-of-pearl Fish-hook, two inches long.
19. A Fish-hook made of wood, and pointed with a piece of shell, three inches and three quarters long.
20. A Fish-hook made of a large Pinna-marina shell, three inches and three quarters long.
21. Another Fish-hook, made of a large Pinna-marina shell, three inches and three quarters long.
22. Another ditto, made of Mother-of-pearl, two inches long.
23. Another ditto, three quarters of an inch in length.
24. Another ditto, made of Pinna-marina shell, one inch and half long.
25. Another ditto, made of two pieces of Mother-of-pearl, one for the shank, the other for the point. The line is fastened both at the top and bottom. The points of these hooks are sometimes barbed like ours; at the bottom they tie some hair.
26. Three Pearls tied together by plaited hair, worn as an ornament for the ears; each pearl was about the size of a small pea.
27. Sting of a Sting-Ray, used to point their lances and arrows, four inches and a half long.



A

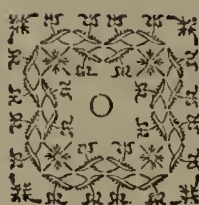
## J O U R N A L

O F A

V O Y A G E to the S O U T H S E A S,

In his Majesty's Ship The E N D E A V O U R.

## P A R T II.

 N the 9th of August we weighed anchor, and proceeded from this bay to the southward, to see what discoveries we could make there, pursuant to the directions of the admiralty, and carried with us as many hogs from this island as we could stow, with a great number of Plantains, Taro, Eape, and Yams, to serve us instead of bread.

On the 13th, at noon, having had a brisk wind for three days, we discovered high land, and, toward night, approached near it. Toobaiah informed us that it was an island called Oheiteroah, being one of the cluster of nine, and bore the title of Oheite added to them.

We hauled in our wind, and, on the 14th, in the morning, bore down to the island, and hoisted out the pinnace, in which Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went

on,



on shore to seek for an anchoring place in a large bay formed by two points of land. They returned with an account that they could find none, nor any good landing for the boat: and that, when they got near the shore, several of the natives jumped into the pinnace, and attempted to seize on Mr. Banks, which obliged our people to fire, and some of the natives were wounded. They were armed with long clubs, and spears, made of the wood of a tree which they called Etoa; and their cloaths were red and yellow, made of bark, striped and figured very regularly, and covered with gum. They had also curious caps on their heads, and made a very martial appearance. Mr. Banks brought some wooden-work on board, very ingeniously wrought, and told us that they saw canoes which were carved with great ingenuity, and painted very neat.

These people are very tall, well proportioned, and have long hair, which they tie up, [see pl. VIII. fig. 5 and 6.] and are tataowed, or marked on different parts of their bodies, but not on their posteriors, like the people of the other islands. On one of our boats approaching them, they began to talk to Toobaiah, though they seemed very much intimidated, and begged that our people would not kill them; and said they would not furnish us with any eatables unless we came on shore, which they intreated us much to do. They saw no women among them. From the ship we observed a few houses.

This island does not shoot up into high peaks, like the others, but is more even and uniform, divided into small hillocks, like England, which are here and there covered with tufts of trees. At the water's edge there are many cliffs almost perpendicular. We saw no bread-fruit, and very few cocoas; but all along the edge of the beach was thick planted with Etoa, which served to shelter their houses and plantations of Meiya from the wind.

This island is situate in  $22^{\circ} 23'$  south latitude, and  $150^{\circ} 5'$  west longitude, and has no reef surrounding it, like the other islands.

On the 15th, in the morning, we passed the tropic of Capricorn, having a fine breeze from the north, with clear pleasant weather; and saw several tropic birds.

On

On the 16th, we saw the appearance of several high peaks of land, which deceived us all: we bore away for them, but, the sky clearing up, we found our mistake, and so resumed our course to the south. Thermometer 72, and a cold air.

On the 17th, we were becalmed most part of the day, and had a great swell from the west in latitude  $26^{\circ} 25'$  S. Thermometer 70.

On the 20th, we had light breezes, and were often becalmed; but, toward night, we had a brisk breeze from the north, which increasing, we brought the ship to, under the two topails, and remained so all night, and had a continual swell, which made the ship roll very much.

On the 21st, we had a stiff gale all day, with hazy weather, and some thunder and lightening from the west; we scudded before the wind, having the forefail and two topails close-reefed set. The swell was so great that the ship rolled prodigiously, and every thing was thrown down. We saw several Pintado birds, and Shear-waters.

On the 22d, we had fine clear weather, and the wind much abated. We saw some Albatrosses, and several Pintado birds. This bird is barred on the wing with black and white, from whence the name in Spanish, a Cheque-board. We also saw several parcels of sea-weed. Latitude  $31^{\circ} 3'$  S. Wind S. W. and by W.

On the 23d, we had light breezes, and it was calm most part of the day. Toward night, it rained very hard, with the wind to the north. We saw a grampus, or young whale, and an albatross. Lat.  $32^{\circ} 5'$ .

On the 24th, we had heavy squalls, with rain, from the south, and saw a water-spout. The wind still continuing to blow very hard, we lay-to under our main-sail; and, in the night, the wind was excessive cold.

On



On the 25th, we had fair weather, but the air was still sharp, though the wind was moderate, and came about to the S. W. Lat.  $32^{\circ} 3'$ . Thermometer 62.

On the 26th, we had variable weather, with a westerly wind, and saw a grampus and an albatross. Latitude  $32^{\circ} 15'$ .

On the 27th, we had clear weather, with the wind at north, but, toward the evening, it was squally. We saw several albatrosses, pintados, and shear-waters. Latitude  $33^{\circ} 35'$ .—On the same day we killed a dog, and dressed him, which we brought from Yoollee-Etea: he was excessively fat, although he had eaten nothing while he had been on board.

On the 28th, we had hazy weather, and a drizzling rain all day, with a faint breeze from the north, and saw a great many birds called Shear-coots. This morning, John Raden, the boatswain's mate, died. His death was occasioned by drinking too freely of rum the night before. In the evening the wind came about to the west, and, the next morning, the 29th, the weather being clear, at about four o'clock we saw a comet, about 60 degrees above the horizon. Latitude  $37^{\circ}$ .

On the 30th, we had a brisk breeze, and a great swell from the west, with fair clear weather, but very cold. The Thermometer, in open air, was at 52. One of Mr. Banks's servants saw a bird of a fine green colour, and likewise some sea-weed. In the night, we had heavy showers of hail, and sudden gusts of wind, which were very piercing, and so violent, that we were obliged to lay the ship to under the fore-sail. The same weather continued all the next day, the 31st, accompanied with a high swell from the west, which made the ship run gunnel-to under water. A vast number of birds, of different kinds, followed us all day, sporting on the surface of the water. These were Pintados, (a bird of a silver colour, such as we saw in the Atlantic ocean,) Albatrosses, and various sorts of Procellariæ. Several parcels of rock-weed were also seen by some of our people. Latitude  $39^{\circ} 25' S$ . Thermometer, in open air, 48.

On the 1st of September, we had hard piercing gales and squalls from the W. and N. W. with violent showers of hail and rain. The sea ran mountain-high, and tossed the ship upon the waves: she rolled so much, that we could get no rest, or scarcely lie in bed, and almost every moveable on board was thrown down, and rolled about from place to place. In brief, a person, who has not been in a storm at sea, cannot form an adequate idea of the situation we were in. The wind still increasing, we laid the ship to under the foresail. The heavens, however, being clear, at four in the morning, we saw the comet again between Aldebaran and Orion. Latitude, by account,  $40^{\circ}$  and odd; and Thermometer 44.

On the 2d, we had hard gales, and squally weather. About noon we set the mainsail, and bore away N. N. W. the captain having, pursuant to his orders, gone in search of the continent as far as  $40^{\circ}$  south latitude, and determined to stand to the southward, to see what discoveries he could make in that quarter, apprehending that, if we continued much longer in these high latitudes, we should not have sails enough to carry us home: besides, the weather was so tempestuous, that, had we made land, it would not have been safe to have approached near it.—The course which we have steered to the southward, has been mostly between  $147^{\circ}$  and  $150^{\circ}$  degrees, west longitude.

On the 3d, we had dark and gloomy weather, with a light westerly breeze, and the air was very cold.

On the 5th, we had variable weather, with some rain: we saw some Albatrosses with white beaks, and others all white, except the tips of their wings.

On the 6th, we had hard gales from the west, which obliged us to go under our courses; but the weather was clear, though cold.

On the 8th, we were becalmed most part of the morning; but, in the afternoon, the wind came about easterly, and brought with it some rain.

On



On the 9th, we had a fine breeze, all day, from the south, with clear weather; and, toward night, saw some parcels of sea-weed.—This day a whole allowance of beef was given to the ship's company.

On the 10th, we had squally weather, with the wind at S. S. W. saw some sea-weed, and had several white squalls, which looked as if we had been near land.

On the 11th, we had some squalls, with light showers of rain, and the wind at S. W.

On the 12th, the wind varied between S. and W. and we had agreeable clear weather, with some few squalls. Latitude  $33^{\circ} 18'$ . Thermometer 57.

On the 14th, we had moderate, though variable, weather, with the wind at north. We saw several Albatrosses flying about the ship, and two very large ones, quite white, swimming upon the water.

On the 15th, we had hard gales of wind from the E. and S. E. the weather very hazy, with some rain, and saw a few Pintados.

On the 16th, the weather was squally, but clear, and the wind S. W.

On the 18th, we were becalmed most part of the day; however, the weather was clear, and the wind S. W.

On the 19th, it was calm till the afternoon, and then we had a short breeze from the east. Mr. Banks went in the boat, and shot some Pintados, and caught some Molusca, Doris, Phyllodora, and the fine purple Limax, which were swimming upon the water. At night the water was full of flashes of light, occasioned by the Molusca. Latitude  $29^{\circ}$  S. Longitude  $159^{\circ}$  W. and we had a great swell from the S. W.

On the 21st, we had a smart breeze from the S. E. supposed to be the tail of the trade winds, with clear weather. This breeze continued till the 24th, with fair and moderate weather. We steered S. S. W. in hopes of discovering the continent. Latitude  $31^{\circ} 24'$  south, and  $162$  west longitude.

On that day the wind came about to the east: we saw some sea-weeds, and a log of wood about three feet long.

On the 26th, we had a fresh breeze from the north, with the weather gloomy. We saw several parcels of sea-weed, of that kind called Leather-weed, in latitude  $35^{\circ} 53'$  S.  $162$  longitude. In the night we had a very hard gale from the north, with heavy showers of rain.

On the 27th, early in the morning, the wind was moderate, but the sea ran very high, and the ship rolled so much that every moveable on board was thrown about; and it was with great difficulty that we saved ourselves from being tossed out of our cots. The night came on while we were in this situation, which proved very dark, and every thing conspired to make it dismal, and aggravate our distress. The next morning, however, was fair; the heavens cloudless; the sun rose peculiarly bright, and we had a fine breeze from the west. In the afternoon the wind veered to the north, and we saw many parcels of sea-weed of different sorts. We also saw a seal, and concluded that we were not far from land. Latitude  $37^{\circ} 30'$  south.

On the 28th, we had a fresh gale from the west, which continued till noon, and then chopped about to the S. W. We altered our course to W. N. W. having run to the south as far as  $40^{\circ}$  latitude, and longitude  $166^{\circ}$  west; met with some sea-weed; and saw several black-beaked Albatrosses and Shear-waters.

On the 29th, we had a smart breeze from the south, with clear, though sharp weather; thermometer  $54$ ; — saw several parcels of sea-weed, and a land-bird that flew like a plover; with a great number of Pintados, Shear-waters, and large white Albatrosses, with the tips of their wings black. We sounded, but found no bottom, with  $120$  fathoms of line. The captain apprehended that we were near land,



land, and promised one gallon of rum to the man who should first discover it by day, and two if he discovered it by night; also, that part of the coast of the said land should be named after him.

On the 1st of October, the weather was fair, but very cold, and almost calm. In the morning, we saw a seal asleep upon the surface of the water, which had, at first, the appearance of a log of wood; we put the ship about to take it up, but it waked, and dived out of sight. Great flocks of Shear-waters flew about the ship, and several parcels of sea-weed floated by the side of it. We found, by this day's observation, that we had gone ten leagues farther to the northward, than what appeared by the log-account. The master was sent in quest of a current, but could find none. Latitude  $37^{\circ} 45'$  south, and  $172^{\circ}$  longitude, west from London.

Though we had been so long out at sea, in a distant part of the world, we had a roasted leg of mutton, and French-beans for dinner; and the fare of Old England afforded us a grateful repast.

This day we sounded, and found no bottom at 120 fathoms.

On the 2d, the sea was as smooth as the Thames, and the weather fair and clear. Mr. Banks went out in a little boat, and diverted himself in shooting off Shear-waters, with one white Albatross, that measured, from the tip of one wing to the other, ten feet, seven inches; and also picked up a great many weeds of various kinds: we saw also several sorts of rock-weed; and the water looked as green as it does in the channel.

On the 4th, we had light breezes from the S. E. with clear sharp weather. In the morning we saw some rock-weed; and, in the evening, a great shoal of bottle-nosed porpoises swam along side of the ship, with a great number of other porpoises, having sharp white snouts, and their sides and bellies of the same colour.

On the 5th, we had light breezes from the N. E. and pleasant weather: about two o'clock in the afternoon one of our people, Nicholas Young, the surgeon's Boy, descried a point of land, of New Zealand, from the starboard bow, at about  
nine

nine leagues distance, bearing W. and by N. we bore up to it, and, at sun-set, we had a good view of it. The land was high, and it appeared like an island. We regaled ourselves in the evening upon the occasion; the land was called Young Nick's Head, and the boy received his reward. The sea, on this coast, was full of a small transparent animal, which, upon examination, we called *Beroë Coarctata*. Latitude  $38^{\circ} 49'$  \*.

On the 8th, we had light breezes and dead calms all day, and could not get in nearer the land than two or three leagues; but it appeared, at this distance, to be of considerable extent, with many small islands around it; and had rising hills like the coast of Portugal. We saw smoke ascend from different parts, and thence concluded that it was inhabited. The two extreme points of the land bore N. and S. S. W. We saw several grampusses, but few birds.

On the 9th, early in the morning, the wind being favourable, we stood in nearer land, where it seemed to open and form a deep bay; [see pl. XIV.] but, on approaching it, we discovered low land, and it was much shallower than we expected. Upon entering we had regular soundings all the way, from twenty-six to six fathoms, and cast anchor on the east side in ten fathoms water, about two or three miles from the shore, over-against the land on the right, where there was the appearance of a river. At the entrance of the bay, which is a very large one, being about three leagues in breadth, and two in depth, are several chalky cliffs, from which runs a low ridge of land that ends in a hillock: at a little distance from the hillock, there is a small high island, and, on the top of it, an inclosure of pales. Abundance of white cliffs are seen all along the coast; and the hills appear to be covered with small wood and bushes, affording but an indifferent landscape. We discovered several houses by our glasses. They seemed to be thatched, and the eaves of them reached to the ground. Within the bay there are many hills one behind another; though most part of the bay is surrounded by a valley in which is a number of trees; from whence, as well as other parts of the country, we saw some smoke arise. We also

\* As we have, in pl. XXV. given a map of the coast of New Zealand, in which the latitudes and longitudes, of the several places we explored, are correctly set down, we shall, in our account of that island, omit mentioning the situation of places in that respect, and, once for all, refer the reader to the map.

discovered





View of the North Side of the Entrance into Poverty Bay, & Morai Island, in New Zealand.

1. Young Nick's Head.  
2. Morai Island.



S. Parkinson del.

View of another Side of the Entrance into the said Bay.

R. B. Godfrey Sc.





discovered many of the natives (who seemed to be of a very dark hue) and several of their canoes hauled upon the beach. The natives, on approaching nearer to them, took but little notice of us. Having cast anchor, the pinnace, long-boat, and yaul, were sent on shore with the marines. As soon as the people who were in the pinnace had passed a little way up into the country, while the long-boat went up the river to see for water, some of the natives, who had hid themselves amongst the bushes, made their appearance, having long wooden lances in their hands, which they held up in a threatening posture, as if they intended to throw them at the boys in the yaul. The cockswain, who stayed in the pinnace, perceiving them, fired a musketoon over their heads, but that did not seem to intimidate them: he therefore fired a musket, and shot one of them through the heart; upon which they were much alarmed, and retreated precipitately.

The water in the river was found to be brackish, in which we were disappointed; but they shot some wild ducks of a very large size, and our botanical gentlemen gathered a variety of curious plants in flower.

In the ensuing night, while we were all on board, the natives assembled on the shore, which was about three miles distance, talked loud, and were very clamorous. We ordered a strict watch to be kept all the night, lest they should come off in their canoes and surprise us.

Early on the morning of the 10th, the long-boat, pinnace, and yaul, went on shore again; landed near the river where they had been the night before, and attempted to find a watering place. Several of the natives came toward them, and, with much entreating, we prevailed on some of them to cross the river, to whom we gave several things, which they carried back to their companions on the other side of the river, who seemed to be highly pleased with them, and testified their joy by a war-dance. Appearing to be so pacifically disposed, our company went over to them, and were received in a friendly manner. Some of the natives were armed with lances, and others with a kind of stone truncheon; through the handle of it was a string, which they twisted round the hand that held it when they attempted to strike at any person. [See pl. XV.] We would have purchased some of their weapons, but could not prevail on them to part with them on any terms.



terms. One of them, however, watched an opportunity, and snatched a hanger from us; our people resented the affront by firing upon them, and killed three of them on the spot; but the rest, to our surprise, did not appear to be intimidated at the sight of their expiring countrymen, who lay weltering in their blood; nor did they seem to breathe any revenge upon the occasion; attempting only to wrest the hanger out of the man's hand that had been shot, and to take the weapons that belonged to their other two deceased comrades; which having effected, they quietly departed. After having taken possession of the country, in form, for the king, our company embarked, and went round the bay in search of water again, and to apprehend, if possible, some of the natives, to gain farther information of them respecting the island. They had not gone far before they saw a canoe; gave chase to it, and, when they came up with it, the crew threw stones at them, and were very daring and insolent. Our people had recourse to their arms: the Captain, Dr. Solander, and Mr. Banks, fired at them, and killed and wounded several of them. The natives fought very desperately with their paddles, but were soon overpowered: their canoe was taken, three of them made prisoners, and brought on board the ship, and the rest were suffered to escape. They were, in person, much like the natives of Otaheite, and had their lips marked with a blue colour, but no other part of their bodies, in which they differed from the before-mentioned people. They talked very loud, but were rude in their address, and more unpolished than the Otaheiteans. We were much surprised to find they spoke the Otaheitean language, though in a different dialect, speaking very guttural, having a kind of *bec*, which some of the people of Yoolee-Etea have in their speech. Toobalah understood them very well, notwithstanding they make frequent use of the G and K, which the people of Otaheite do not. Their canoe was thirty feet long, made of planks sewed together, and had a lug-sail made of matting.

On the 11th, in the morning, the boats went on shore again, and carried the three men whom we had taken, dressed up very finely. The men did not seem willing to land, and when we left them, they cried, and said that the people on that side of the bay would eat them. While a party of our men went to cut wood, these men hid themselves in the bushes, and many of the natives appeared on the other side of the river. We beckoned to them, and, at length, one man, of more courage than the rest, ventured over to us without arms, with whom we conferred,  
by





*S. Parkinson del.*

*A New-Zealand Warrior in his proper Dress, &  
Compleatly Armed, according to their Manner.*

*J. Chambers Sc.*







by our interpreter Toobaiah, for a considerable time; and, during the conference, about two hundred more, armed with lances, poles, and stone bludgeons, made up to us, which the captain seeing, and being apprehensive they intended to cut off our retreat to the boats, as they had got to the other side of the river, he ordered us to embark, and return to the ship; which we did accordingly, taking with us the three natives whom we had brought on shore; but, in the afternoon, we set them on shore again; they parted with us reluctantly, and went into the woods; but, some time after, we saw them, with our glasses, come out again, make signs to us, and then go in again.

These men, while on board, ate an immoderate quantity of every thing that was set before them, taking pieces at one time into their mouths six times larger than we did, and drank a quart of wine and water at one draught. They informed us, that there was Taro, Eape, Oomara, Yams, and also a peculiar kind of Deer, to be found upon the island.

The natives on this side of the bay were tataowed, or marked, in various forms on their faces; and their garments, wrought of rushes, reached down below their knees, and were very thick and rough. They tie their foreskins to their girdle with a string, and have holes pierced in their ears, which shews that they sometimes wear some sort of ear-rings: they have also some bracelets; necklaces they well knew the use of; but they did not like our iron wares. We saw a piece of wood which looked as smooth as if it had been cut with an axe; but of what materials the instruments are composed, which they use for that purpose, we could not learn. We went into some of their houses, which were very meanly thatched, having a hole in the center of the roof to let out the smoke; but we saw nothing in them except a few cockles, limpets, and muscle-shells.

We found here a sort of long-pepper, which tasted very much like mace; a Fulica, or bald Coot, of a dark blue colour; and a Black-bird, the flesh of which was of an orange colour, and tasted like stewed shell-fish. A vast quantity of pumice-stone lies all along upon the shore, within the bay, which indicates that there is a volcano in this island.

On the 12th, early in the morning, we weighed anchor, and attempted to find some better anchoring-place, as this bay (which, from the few necessities we could procure, we called Poverty Bay) was not well sheltered from a S. E. wind, which brings in a heavy sea. The natives call the bay Taoneroa, and the point of land, at the entrance on the east side, they call Tettua Motu.

In the afternoon we were becalmed, and six canoes came off to us, filled with people; some of them armed with bludgeons made of wood, and of the bone of a large animal. They were a spare thin people, and had garments wrapt about them made of a filky flax, wove in the same manner as the cotton hammocks of Brazil, each corner being ornamented with a piece of dog-skin. Most of them had their hair tied up on the crown of their heads in a knot, and by the knot stuck a comb of wood or bone. In and about their ears some of them had white feathers, with pieces of birds skins, whose feathers were soft as down; but others had the teeth of their parents, or a bit of green stone worked very smooth. These stone ornaments were of various shapes. They also wore a kind of shoulder-knot, made of the skin of the neck of a large sea-fowl, with the feathers on, split in two length-ways. Their faces were tataowed, or marked either all over, or on one side, in a very curious manner; some of them in fine spiral directions like a volute, [see pl. XVI.] being indented in the skin very different from the rest: and others had their faces daubed over with a sort of red ochre. The bottom of their canoes was made out of a single tree; and the upper part was formed of two planks, sewed together, narrowed both at head and stern. The former was very long, having a carved head at the end of it painted red, and the stern ended in a flat beak. They had thwarts to sit on, and their paddles were curiously stained with a red colour, disposed into various strange figures; and the whole together was no contemptible workmanship. After we had given them a variety of beads and other trinkets, they set off in so great a hurry, that they left three of their people on board with us. We were at this time off a cape, which we named Table Cape: we made but little way that night.

On the 13th, two canoes came off to us, and one of the natives came on board of our ship, but, being much intimidated, could not be prevailed on to stay long. He  
was





*S. Parkinson del.*

*J. Chambers Sc.*

*The Head of a Chief of New Zealand, the face curiously tataowd, or mark'd, according to their Manner.*







was tataowed in the face, and wore a garment made of a sort of filky flax, wrought very strong, with a black and brown border round it, and a weapon in his hand made of the bone of a grampus. [See pl. XXVI. fig. 22.] There were several women in the canoe with uncommon long breasts, and their lips stained with a blue colour.

In the afternoon, more canoes came to us. Some of the people in them were disfigured in a very strange manner; they brandished their arms, and shewed signs of contempt, while the rest paddled hard to overtake us; and, at length, attempted to board us. The captain ordered one of the men to fire a musket over them, which they did not regard. A great gun, loaded with grape shot, was fired, which made them drop astern; but whether any of them were wounded, we could not discover. Several of the canoes had outriggers; and one of them had a very curious piece of ornamental carving at the head of it.

At this time we were doubling the west point of the land, formed by a small high island, and got into very foul ground, the soundings being from seven to thirteen fathoms, and were afraid of running upon it, but we happily escaped. After we had doubled this island, which was called Portland Isle, or, according to the natives, Teahowray, we got into a sort of large bay, and, the night coming on, we thought it best to drop anchor, designing, next morning, to make for a harbour in the corner of the bay, where there was the appearance of an inlet. Most of the country in view makes in flat table-hills, with cliffs of a white clay toward the sea. In the evening, several of the natives came, in two canoes, to visit us: they seemed to be more friendly than the former; but were, however, so frightened, that we could not persuade them to come on board: we offered them various things, which they kindly accepted.

On the 14th, we made for the inlet, which we saw the night before, and, on coming up to it, found that it was not sheltered, having only some low land at the bottom of it. Ten canoes, filled with people, chased us; but our ship sailing too fast for them, they were obliged to give over the pursuit.

We sailed round most part of the bay without finding any opening ; and the soundings, all along the shore, were very regular. The country appeared more fertile hereabout, and well covered with wood, the sea-shore making in clayey cliffs, upon which the surf broke very high. This bay was called Hawke's Bay.

In the afternoon, a canoe followed us, with eighteen people in her, armed with lances ; but as they could not keep pace with us, they gave up their expedition.

In sailing along, we could plainly distinguish land that was cultivated, parcelled out into square compartments, having some sorts of herbs growing upon them.

On the 15th, in the morning, we bent our course round a small peninsula, which was joined to the main land by a low isthmus, on which were many groves of tall straight trees, that looked as if they had been planted by art ; and, within-side of it, the water was quite smooth. We saw some very high ridges of hills streaked with snow ; and, when we had doubled the point of this peninsula, the low isthmus appeared again, stretching a long way by the sea-side. The country looked very pleasant, having fine sloping hills, which stretched out into beautiful green lawns, though not covered with wood, as other parts of the coast are.

In the morning, while we were on the other side of the peninsula, nine canoes came to us, in which were one hundred and sixty of the natives : they behaved in a very irresolute manner, sometimes seeming as if they would attack us ; then taking fright, and retreating a little ; one half paddling one way, and the other half paddling another, shaking their lances and bone bludgeons at us, talking very loud and blustering, [see pl. XVII.] lolling out their tongues, and making other signs of defiance. We did all we could to make them peaceable, but to no purpose, for they seemed, at length, resolved to do us some mischief ; coming along-side of the ship again, and threatening us, we fired one of our guns, loaded with grape-shot, over their heads : they looked upon us for some time with astonishment, and then hastened away as fast as they could. By this time two other canoes came toward us, but stopped a little, and held a conference with those that were returning, and then made up to us, leaving the rest at some distance, who seemed to wait





*The manner in which the New Zealand Warriors defy their Enemies.*

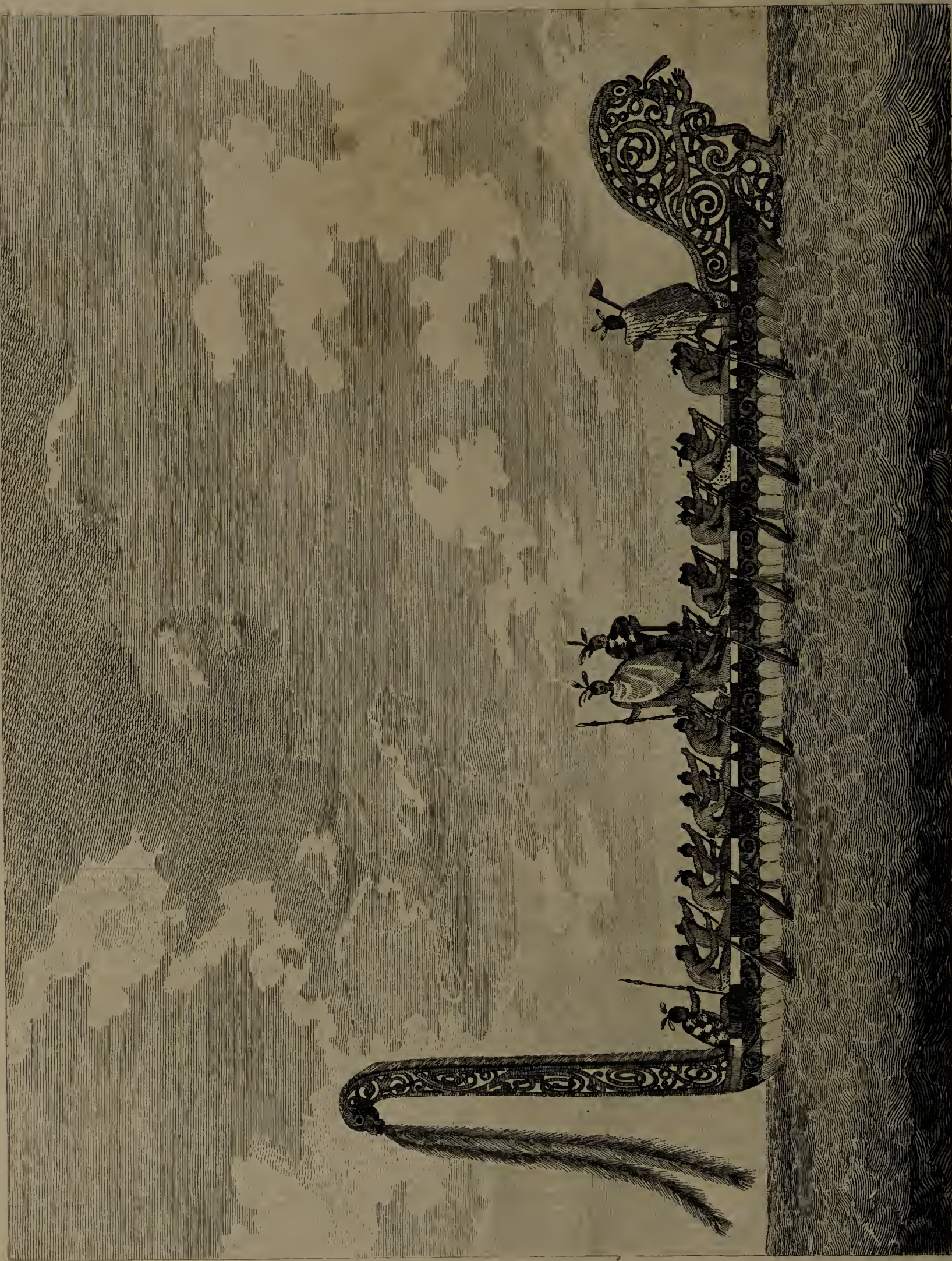












S. Parkinson del.

R. B. Godfrey sculp.

A War Canoe, of New Zealand.



wait their destiny. We made signs to them that we meant them no harm, if they would behave peaceably, which they so well understood, that they took all their weapons and put them into a canoe, and sent it off while they came close to the ship. We threw them several kinds of things, but they were so timorous that they durst not venture on board; nor would they send any thing to us. During this interview another canoe came up, threw a lance at the stern of the ship, and made off again. The lance fell into the water and sunk immediately. There were some good-looking people in these canoes, others were disfigured, and had a very savage countenance. One old man, in particular, who seemed to be a chief, was painted red, and had a red garment, but the garments of some others were striped. The principals amongst them had their hair tied up on the crown of their heads; and some feathers, with a little bundle of perfume, hung about their necks. Most of them were tataowed in the face, and many of them quite naked, who seemed to be servants to the rest. Several of them had pieces of a green stone\* hung about their necks, which seemed to be pellucid, like an emerald. Their spears were not unlike our sheriffs halberts, having red and yellow tassels tied to them. In one of their canoes we saw a hatchet, made of the green stone, in shape like those of Otaheite. Their canoes [see pl. XVIII.] had from eighteen to twenty-two men in them, and were adorned with fine heads made out of a thick board, cut through like filigree-work, in spirals of very curious workmanship. At the end of this was a head, with two large eyes of mother-of-pearl, and a large heart-shaped tongue. This figure went round the bottom of the board, and had feet and hands carved upon it very neatly, and painted red: they had also high-peaked sterns, wrought in filigree, and adorned with feathers, from the top of which depended two long streamers, made of feathers, which almost reached the water. Some of these canoes were between fifty and sixty feet long, and rowed with eighteen paddles. They gave us two Heivos, in their canoes, which were very diverting. They beat time with their paddles, and ended all at once with the word Epaah; at the same instant striking their paddles on the thwarts: all which afforded a truly comic act. -

\* Pieces of this kind of stone were brought home in the Endeavour; on examination it appears to be a fine sort of Nephritic stone. This remark will serve for all their ornaments hereafter mentioned, said to be made of a green stone.

The weather was remarkably fine for some time before and after we came to this island, having light breezes, and clear weather, with some calms.

On the 16th, we had several fisher canoes come to us; and, after much persuasion, they gave us some fish for cloth and trinkets; but none of their fish was quite fresh, and some of it stank intolerably. They went away very well satisfied, and then a larger canoe, full of people, came up to us, having their faces shockingly besmeared with some paint. An old man, who sat in the stern, had on a garment of some beast's skin, with long hair, dark brown, and white border, which we would have purchased, but they were not willing to part with any thing. When the captain threw them a piece of red baize for it, they paddled away immediately; held a conference with the fishers boats, and then returned to the ship. We had laid a scheme to trepan them, intending to have thrown a running bow line about the head of the canoe, and to have hoisted her up to the anchor; but, just as we had got her a-head for that purpose, they seized Toobaiah's little boy, who was in the main-chains, and made off with him, which prevented the execution of our plan. We fired some muskets and great guns at them, and killed several of them. The boy, soon after, disengaged himself from them, jumped into the sea, swam toward the ship, and we lowered down a boat and took him up, while the canoes made to land as fast as possible.

The speech of these people was not so guttural as the others, for they spoke more like the Otaheiteans. Many of them had good faces; their noses rather high than flat; and some of them had their hair most curiously brought up to their crowns, rolled round, and knotted.

In the evening, we were over-against a point of land, which, from the circumstance of stealing the boy, we called Cape Kidnappers. On doubling the cape, we thought to have met with a snug bay, but were disappointed, the land tending away to a point southward. Soon after we saw a small island, which, from its desolate appearance, we called Bare Island.

On



On the 17th, we sailed along the coast, near as far as forty-one degrees, but, not meeting with any convenient harbour to anchor in, the land lying N. and S. when we came abreast of a round bluff cape, we turned back, being apprehensive that we should want water if we proceeded farther to the southward. We saw no canoes, but several villages, and, in the night, some fires burning upon the land. The coast appeared more barren than any we had seen before. There was clear ground, and good anchorage upon the coast, two or three miles from the shore; and from eight to twenty fathoms water. This cape we named Cape Turn-Again.

On the 19th, in the afternoon, we were off Hawke's Bay, which we could not enter, the wind being foul. A canoe came to us with five people in it, who seemed to place great confidence in us: they came on board, and said they would stay all night. The man, who seemed to be the chief, had a new garment, made of the white silky flax, which was very strong and thick, with a beautiful border of black, red, and white round it.

On the 20th, early in the morning, having a fine breeze, we made Table Cape, passed Poverty Bay, and came to a remarkable point of land, being a flat perpendicular triangular-shaped rock, behind which there appeared to be a harbour, but, on opening it, we found none: this point we called Gable-End Foreland. The country is full of wood, and looks very pleasant in this part; but, toward night, we saw some land that appeared very broken and dreary, formed into a number of points, over which we could see the back land.

On the 21st, we anchored in a very indifferent harbour, in eight fathoms and a half water, about one mile and a half from the shore, having an island on our left hand, which somewhat sheltered us. Many canoes came off to us, and two old men, of their chiefs, came on board. These people seemed very peaceably inclined, and were willing to trade with us for several trifles which they had brought with them. We saw many houses, and several tracts of land, partly hedged in and cultivated, which formed an agreeable view from the harbour, called, by the  
the

the natives, Tegadoo. Some of our boats went on shore for water, and found a rivulet where they filled their casks, and returned to the ship unmolested by the inhabitants, many of whom they saw near the rivulet.

On the 22d, in the morning, the boats went on shore again for wood and water; and, a short time after, Mr. Banks and some others followed them; and, while they were absent, the natives came on board and trafficked with us; having brought some parcels of Oomarra, and exchanged them with us for Otaheite cloth, which is a scarce commodity amongst them. They were very cunning in their traffic, and made use of much low artifice. One of them had an axe made of the before-mentioned green stone, which he would not part with for any thing we offered him. Several of them were very curiously tataowed; and one old man was marked on the breast with a large volute, and other figures. The natives, both on board and on shore, behaved with great civility, and, at night, they began to heivo and dance in their manner, which was very uncouth; nothing could be more droll than to see old men with grey beards assuming every antic posture imaginable, rolling their eyes about, lolling out their tongues, and, in short, working themselves up to a sort of phrenzy.

The surf running high, the men who went on shore found great difficulty in getting the water into the long-boat, and, in coming off, the boat was swampt; we therefore enquired of the natives for a more convenient watering-place, and they pointed to a bay bearing S. W. by W. On receiving this information we weighed anchor; but, the wind being against us, we stood off and on till the next morning, the 23d, and then bore away to leeward, and looked into the bay which we had passed before. About noon we dropped anchor, and one of our boats went into a little cove where there was smooth landing and fresh water, and we moored the ship about one mile and a half from the shore. This bay is called, by the natives, Tolaga, and is very open, being exposed to all the violence of the east wind. Several canoes came along-side of the ship, of whom we got some fish, Oomarras, or sweet potatoes, and several other things; but the natives were very indifferent about most of the things we offered them, except white cloth and glasses, which suited their fancy, so that we found it difficult to trade with them. They had some green stone axes and ear-rings but they would not part with them,



them on any terms; and as to their Oomarras, they set a great value upon them.

The country about the bay is agreeable beyond description, and, with proper cultivation, might be rendered a kind of second Paradise. The hills are covered with beautiful flowering shrubs, intermingled with a great number of tall and stately palms, which fill the air with a most grateful fragrant perfume.

We saw the tree that produces the cabbage, which ate well boiled. We also found some trees that yielded a fine transparent gum: and, between the hills, we discovered some fruitful valleys that are adapted either to cultivation or pasturage. The country abounds with different kinds of herbage fit for food; and, among such a variety of trees as are upon this land, there are, doubtless, many that produce eatable fruit. Our botanists were agreeably employed in investigating them, as well as many other lesser plants with which the country abounds. Within land there were many scandent ferns and parasitic plants; and, on the sea shore, *Salicornias*, *Misembrean*, *Mums*, and a variety of *Fucus*'s. The plant, of which they make their cloth, is a sort of *Hemerocallis*, and the leaves yield a very strong and glossy flax, of which their garments and ropes are made. Adjoining to their houses are plantations of Koomarra\* and Taro†: These grounds are cultivated with great care, and kept clean and neat.

The natives, who are not very numerous in this part of the country, behaved very civil to us: they are, in general, lean and tall, yet well shaped; have faces like Europeans; and, in general, the aquiline nose, with dark-coloured eyes, black hair, which is tied up on the crown of the head, and beards of a middling length. As to their tataowing, it is done very curiously in spiral and other figures; and, in many places, indented into their skins, which looks like carving; though, at a distance, it appears as if it had been only smeared with a black paint. This tataowing is peculiar to the principal men among them: servants and women content themselves with besmearing their faces with red paint or ochre; and, were it not for this nasty custom, would make no despicable appearance. Their cloth is white, and as glossy as silk, worked by hands, and wrought as even as if it

O

had

\* A sweet potatoe, which the Otaheiteans call Oomarra.

† Yams.

had been done in a loom, and is chiefly worn by the men, though it is made by the women, who also carry burdens, and do all the drudgery. Their cloathing consists in a girdle of platted grafs, which they wear round their loins, having some leaves hung upon it, and a kind of grafs-rug cloak thrown over their shoulders. Many of the women, that we saw, had very good features, and not the savage countenance one might expect; [see pl. XIX.] their lips were, in general, stained of a blue colour, and several of them were scratched all over their faces as if it had been done with needles or pins. This, with a number of scars which we saw on the bodies of the men, was done upon the decease of their relations. The men have their hair tied up, but the womens hangs down; nor do they wear feathers in it, but adorn it with leaves. They seem to be proud of their sex, and expect you should give them every thing they desire, because they are women; but they take care to grant no favours in return, being very different from the women in the islands who were so free with our men.

The men have a particular taste for carving: their boats, paddles, boards to put on their houses, tops of walking sticks, and even their boats valens, are carved in a variety of flourishes, turnings and windings, that are unbroken; but their favourite figure seems to be a volute, or spiral, which they vary many ways, single, double, and triple, and with as much truth as if done from mathematical draughts: yet the only instruments we have seen are a chizzel, and an axe made of stone. Their fancy, indeed, is very wild and extravagant, and I have seen no imitations of nature in any of their performances, unless the head, and the heart-shaped tongue hanging out of the mouth of it, may be called natural, [See pl. XXVI. fig. 16.]

The natives build their huts on rising ground under a tuft of trees; they are of an oblong square, and the eaves reach to the ground. The door is on one side, and very low; their windows are at one end, or both. The walls are composed of several layers of reeds covered with thatch, and are of considerable thickness. Over the beams, that compose the eaves, they lay a net made of grafs, which is also thatched very close and thick. Their fires are made in the center upon the floor, and the door serves them for a chimney. Their houses, therefore, of course, must be full of smoke; and we observed that every thing brought out of them smelt strong of it; but use, which is a kind of second nature, makes them insensible





S. Parkinson del.

A New Zealand Warrior, & his Wife, in the Dress &c, of that Country.

W. Darling Sculp.













S. Parkinson del.

J. Vinton sculp.

View of a curious Arched Rock, having a River running under it, in Tolago Bay, on the East Coast of New Zealand.



fible of the inconvenience, or they would have found out some means to have removed it; for necessity is the mother of invention. We saw but few of their houses, and those few were mostly deserted, their inhabitants having forsaken them through fear of us, who, doubtless, appeared as strange kind of beings to them as they did to us.

We saw many beautiful parrots, and birds of various kinds, one in particular that had a note very much like our blackbird; but we found no ground fowl, or domestic poultry. Of quadrupeds we saw no other than dogs, which were like those on the island of Otaheite, and of them but a few, though it cannot be supposed that so large a country, as this appears to be, should be destitute of deer, and other kind of four-footed animals.

This bay abounds in a variety of fish, particularly shell and cray-fish; some of the latter, which we caught, weighed eleven pounds; these are found in great plenty, and seemed to be the principal food of the inhabitants, at this season of the year, though they have a kind of fern, the roots of which, roasted, make a good substitute for bread, especially when their Koomarra is young and unfit for use.

Most of the rocks, which are many on the sea shore, are composed of a sandy stone, through which the surf had worn several passages. One of them, in particular, was very romantic, it had the appearance of a large arch which led from the sea-side into the vallies, and through it ran a stream of water. The whole formed a very uncommon view, [see pl. XX.] peculiarly striking to a curious spectator.

From the view which we had of the coast, and the observations made, we might judge that the country is well situated, naturally fertile, and capable of great improvement by cultivation, especially as the climate is distinguishably mild and favourable.

We had clear and fair weather all the time we were upon the coast, excepting one day, and, though the weather was hot, yet it seemed, by what we observed, that a sea breeze constantly set in about eleven o'clock in the forenoon, which moderated it.

On the 30th, having obtained a sufficient quantity of wood and water, we left the bay, and, sailing along the coast, about noon came up with a point of land before an island: this point we called East Cape; and the island, East Island, from which the land altered its direction, and tended away to the west. This day the land appeared to us considerably higher than the rest. It was divided by fine deep valleys, and had all the appearance of a rich fertile country, being cloathed with large verdant trees, had some parcels of ground cultivated, and several rivulets among them which lost themselves in the sea. We could also discover several villages, which seemed to have been fenced in by art. We passed a bay which we called Hicks's Bay, after our first lieutenant.

On the 31st, we sailed along the coast, and had light breezes, and pleasant weather. In the forenoon seven canoes came off to us in a hostile manner, brandishing their lances, and waving their paddles. One of these canoes was very large, and had between fifty and sixty people in her; some of them gave us an heivo; and one of them, a priest, as we supposed, talked very much. They kept paddling about us, calling out to us *Kaka kee, no Tootwais, harre yoota patta pattoo*; that is to say, if we would go on shore they would beat us with their patta pattoos; and, being apprehensive that if we suffered them to approach nearer to us, we might be obliged to offer violence to them, the captain ordered a gun, loaded with grape-shot, to be fired over their heads, the report of which terrified them so much, that they paddled away till they had got, as they supposed, out of our reach, and then they stopped, and held a consultation; after which they seemed as if they intended to return, and we fired another gun loaded with ball, and then they made as fast as possible to the shore. These were the same sort of people, and their canoes of the same kind with those we had seen before. Being at this time off a cape, we named it, from the hasty retreat of the natives, Cape Run-away. This day we discovered land to the N.E. of us.

On



On the 1st of November, a great number of canoes came off to us, one of which had part of a human skull to throw out the water with. We prevailed on some of the natives to come along-side of the ship, and traded with them for cloth, cray-fish, and muscles. They gave us several Heivos, but some of them seemed to threaten us. A breeze springing up, we left them; and, a little farther on the coast, another squadron of fisher-boats came off to us, with whom also we had some traffic. These, as well as the rest, were very ready to snatch any thing they could lay their hands on; and, watching an opportunity, they stole a pair of sheets that were tied by a line at the ship's stern, and were going off with them, upon which we fired several muskets, but they did not much regard them; we then fired some grape-shot amongst them, and they paddled away something faster, till they imagined themselves out of our reach, and then they held up their paddles, and seemed to defy us. We fired another gun loaded with round and grape-shot, which passed between two canoes, and narrowly missed them; on which they hesitated no longer, but repaired immediately to the shore.

Toward night, we were near a small high island, called by the natives Mow-tohora, about three leagues from the land. In going between this and the main land, a canoe came off to us from the island. This canoe was double, and differed in other respects from those we had seen before. After we had talked with the people which came in it a considerable time, they gave us several heivos, then looked at us very stedfastly, and, having threatened us, they stood off toward the main land. Opposite to this there is a high peaked hill, which we named Mount Edgecombe; and a small bay, which we called Lowland Bay, and the two points thereof, from their situation, Highland Point, and Lowland Point; the latter of which stretches a great way, and is covered with trees; near it there are three small islands, or rocks, and it was with difficulty that we steered clear of them in the night, and got into six fathoms water; soon after which we made a point of land, which we called Town Point: this was at the entrance of a little cove.

On the 2d, in the morning, we discovered three sorts of land; but, as the weather was hazy, could not make many observations. We also passed three other islands: one of them was rocky, high and barren, which we called White Island. The other two were lower; one of them we named Flat Island, in which which we saw a village. A canoe pursued us, but, having a brisk breeze, it could not overtake us. Toward night it blew pretty hard, right on shore; we therefore tacked about, and sailed backward and forward till the next morning, the 3d: then the canoe which we saw the night before gave us chase again; having a fail, they at length came up with us; sailed along-side of us for a considerable time, and now and then gave us a song, the tune of which was much like the chant which the popish priests use at mass: they also gave us a heivo, but soon after threw some stones at us: we fired a musket, loaded with small shot, at a young man who distinguished himself at the sport, and he shrunk down as if he had been wounded. After a short consultation they doused the fail, and stood back for an island.

We sailed along with a moderate breeze, and passed an island, or cluster of rocks, which we called the Court of Aldermen: and, from the vicinity of one of the three last mentioned islands to them, we gave it the name of The Mayor.

This cluster of rocks lies off a point of land, and terminates the bounds of this large bay to the N. W. which, from the number of canoes that came off to us, bringing provisions, we named The Bay of Plenty.

The coast hereabout appeared very barren, and had a great number of rocky islands, from which circumstance we named the point, Barren Point. The land is very grotesque, being cleft, or torn into a variety of strange figures, and has very few trees upon it. About noon, several canoes came off to us, and the people in them were so daring as to throw a lance into the ship, but we fired a musket, and they paddled away from us. Their canoes were formed out of one tree, and shaped like a butcher's tray, without any ornament about them. The people, who were naked, excepting one or two, were of a very dark complexion, and made a mean appearance. We stood in for a bay, and, at night, anchored in it, having seven fathoms water. Several canoes, like the former, followed us; the people in them  
cut



cut a despicable figure; but they were very merry, and gave us several heivos, or cheers.

This bay, which the inhabitants call Opoorangee, is the best harbour we have found, being well land-locked; and we found good landing at the watering-place, in a salt-water river, which winds a great way up into the country. At the bottom of the bay there is another river, which also seems to extend very far within land. The name the natives gave to the country, about the bay, is Konigoo-taoivrao.

On the 4th, early in the morning, we were visited by several canoes; the people in them, about one hundred and thirty-five in number, had a few arms, but seemed unresolved what to do; sometimes staring at us in a wild manner, and then threatening us: but, at last, they traded with us, exchanging the few trifles they had brought for cloth. They were very sly, and attempted to cheat us. We fired several muskets at them, and wounded two of them; the rest, however, did not seem to be alarmed till the captain shot through one of the canoes, which struck them with a panic; and, on firing a great gun, they made off to land.

On the 5th, in the morning, two of the natives came on board, and seemed to be very peaceably inclined: we made them some presents; they exchanged what trifles they had for small pieces of cloth, which they were very fond of, and went away highly pleased, promising to bring us some fish. Some people, it seemed, came to them now-and-then from the north, plundered them of every thing they could find, and carried their wives and children away captives; and not knowing who we were, nor our design in visiting their coast, was the reason that they were at first so shy of us. To secure themselves from these free-booters, they build their houses near together on the tops of rocks, which, it seems, they can easily defend against the assaults of their enemies; but, being so subject to the ravages of those ruffians, they are much dispirited, and that may be the principal cause of their poverty and wretchedness.

We

We sent the pinnace to haul the seine, and caught a large draught of mullets, and other kind of fish. In the mean time the yaul drudged for shell-fish, and met with indifferent success.

On the 9th, a great number of the natives came in canoes about the ship, and brought us a large quantity of fish, mostly of the mackrel kind, with a few John Dories; and we pickled down several casks full of them.

Some of these canoes came from another part of the country, which were larger, and of a better sort than the rest: the people in them, too, had a better appearance; among whom there were some of superior rank, furnished with good garments, dressed up with feathers on their heads, and had various things of value amongst them, which they readily exchanged for Otaheite cloth. In one of the canoes there was a very handsome young man, of whom I bought some things: he seemed, by the variety of his garments, which he sold one after another till he had but one left, to be a person of distinction amongst them: his last garment was an upper one, made of black and white dog-skin, which one of the lieutenants would have purchased, and offered him a large piece of cloth for it, which he swung down the stern by a rope into the canoe; but, as soon as the young man had taken it, his companions paddled away as fast as possible, shouting, and brandishing their weapons as if they had made a great prize; and, being ignorant of the power of our weapons, thought to have carried it off securely; but a musket was fired at them from the stern of the ship: the young man fell down immediately, and, it is probable, was mortally wounded, as we did not see him rise again. What a severe punishment of a crime committed, perhaps, ignorantly! The name of this unfortunate young man, we afterwards learned, was Otirreecònooe.

The weather being clear all day, we made a good observation of the passage of Mercury over the sun's disk, while Mr. Green made an observation on shore. From this circumstance the Bay was termed Mercury Bay.

On the 11th, it blew very hard all day from the N. and N. by E. and a great swell tumbled into the bay, which rendered our situation a very favourable one;



one; for, had we been out at sea, we should have had a lee-shore. The inhabitants did not venture out in their canoes this day; and, the night before, we were almost swamped in coming off in the long-boat, being upon the shoals, and the sea running high.

While we lay in this bay the natives brought us a great number of crayfish, of an enormous size, which were very good. These were caught by women, who dived for them in the surf amongst the rocks. A long-boat full of rock oysters, too, were brought on board of us at one time, which were good food, and tasted deliciously. A little way up the river there were banks entirely composed of them. We also got abundance of parsley for the ship's use; and, at the place where we watered, we found a great quantity of fern, the root of which partakes much of a farinaceous quality: the natives dry it upon the fire, then beat it upon a stone, and eat it instead of bread.

On the 16th, in the morning, the weather being very fair, we weighed anchor, and stood out to sea, but, having a strong breeze from the west, which was against us all this day and the next, being the 17th, we did nothing but beat to windward. The country in view appeared rather barren, and had but few signs of inhabitants. We saw several islands, which we named Mercury islands.

On the 18th, in the morning, we passed between the main and an island which appeared to be very fertile, and as large as Yoolee-Etea. Two canoes came to us from the main, having carved heads, like those we had seen in the bay of Opoo-rangee: one of them was longer than the other, and had sixty of the natives in her: they gazed at us awhile, and then gave us several heivos; but the breeze freshening, they were obliged to drop astern, and we soon left them. The coast hereabout is full of islands: the name of the largest is Waootaia; and one of the small ones is called Matoo Taboo. After we had passed this island, (the passage between which and the main we named Port Charles,) it seemed as if we were in a large bay, the land surrounding us on every side, excepting a-head, where we could discover none: we bent our course that way, and got, at length, inclosed between two shores, which seemed to form a kind of strait. Night coming on, we anchored here, not daring to venture farther, as we knew not whether we were

in a strait or a bay. The land on both sides of us appeared very broken, and had a high and bold shore, tolerably well cloathed with verdure; but it appeared to be thinly inhabited; nor did we see any signs of cultivation. There are many small islands along the shore, among which are some good harbours.

On the 19th, in the morning, several of the natives came on board of us: their canoes were the largest we had seen, and the people in them behaved very friendly. By what we could learn, they had got intelligence of us from the people that inhabit the country about Opoorangee Bay, which is not very distant. They told us this was not an entrance into the main, but a deep bay. Some of them presented us with a large parcel of smoaked eels, which tasted very sweet and luscious. We observed that the natives mode of salutation was by putting their noses together.

We sailed along till we came to six fathoms water, and then let go our anchor. The weather being hazy, we could not have so good a view of the land upon the coast as we wished to have; but it appeared to be well covered with wood, and some parts of it cultivated. This day we caught a considerable quantity of fish, with hook and line, of the scienna or bream kind. The natives call this harbour Ooahaowragee.

On the 20th, early in the morning, the Captain, Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander, set out, in the long-boat and pinnace, for the bottom of this gulph, to see in what manner it terminated: and, as it blew very fresh, and a great swell rolled into the Bay all day, they did not attempt to return till the next morning, the 21st; then, with some difficulty, on account of the swell, they reached the ship again, and reported, that they had been a considerable way up a fresh-water river, at the end of the gulph, in which they found three fathoms water. It was about half a mile broad, and would make an excellent harbour. Near the entrance of this river, which they named the Thames, there was a village, and a Hippa, or place of refuge, erected to defend it, which was surrounded by piquets that reached above-water when the tide was up; and, at low-water, it was unapproachable on account of a soft deep mud. The inhabitants of the village behaved civil and obliging, and promised to bring some provisions to the ship; but, the weather proving unfavourable, they could not fulfil their engagement. On that day they also met  
with



with the large tree of which we had seen so many groves formed in different parts of the coast. This tree has a small narrow leaf, like a juniper's, and grows to the height of ninety feet, and is nine feet in girth. It is generally found in low land, and has a very dark-coloured appearance at a distance. The natives, it is thought, make their canoes of this tree. They also saw several young cabbage palm-trees, and a new species of *Pardanus*, or palm-nut.

In the afternoon we weighed anchor, proceeded down the gulph with the tide, the wind blowing hard from N. N. W. and, toward night anchored pretty near the shore.

On the 22d, in the evening, several canoes, full of people, some of whom we saw the night before, came on board, brought us some provisions, and parted very readily with their cloaths, and any thing they had about them, for pieces of waste paper and Otaheite cloth, which they put about their heads and ears, and were very proud of their drefs.

The wind being still against us, we were obliged to tide it down the river, and anchored between tides, and passed a point of land which we called Point Rodney.

The next day, being the 23d, we had heavy rains, accompanied with thunder.

On the 24th, we had a smart breeze from the S. W. and, sailing along shore, passed between the main and a number of islands of several sizes. The appearance of the coast was very different at different places; well cloathed and verdant in some parts, and barren in others; but we saw no signs of inhabitants in any. We anchored in an open bay, and caught a great number of large fishes of the *icienna* or bream kind; we therefore named this Bream Bay; and the two extreme points which formed it, Bream Head and Bream Tail. Off this bay lies a parcel of rocks, to which we gave the appellation of the Hen and Chickens.

On the 25th, we had clear weather, with the wind at S. W. The coast we passed along that day was mostly level, having but few signs of inhabitants: to-

ward night several large canoes came off to us, filled with people, armed with a variety of weapons; they paddled round the ship, singing and dancing; sometimes grinning, and then threatening: we trafficked with them for some things; but they went off with some others, meaning to take an advantage of us. While they were parlying among themselves we fired several muskets at them, loaded with small shot, which they attempted to screen themselves from with their ahavos, or cloaks. We fired again, and splintered one of their canoes, which seemed to alarm them much, and they paddled away from us as fast as possible, till they thought themselves out of our reach, and then they stopped and threatened us; but we fired a great gun, which so thoroughly disconcerted them, that they made the best of their way to the shore. These people were much like them we had seen heretofore, excepting that they were more tataowed: most of them had the figure of volutes on their lips, and several had their legs, thighs, and part of their bellies, marked. One woman, in particular, was very curiously tataowed. The tataow upon their faces was not done in spirals, but in different figures from what we had ever seen before.

On the 26th, many canoes visited us. The people in them were much the same as the former. They had a variety of things on board, and about them, but were loth to part with any of them excepting fish, of which we obtained a large quantity.

The coast we sailed along this day, was generally barren, and broke into a number of small islands, among which we presumed there might be safe and good anchorage. We had calm and pleasant weather.

On the 27th, we were among a parcel of small broken islands, which we called the Poor Knights; and many canoes came along side of us, but the people in them seemed to be half mad. We asked them for some fish, and they took them up by handfuls and threw them at us, not regarding whether they had any thing from us in return: more canoes coming up, they began to behave very rudely, and heaved stones at us. One man, in particular, more active than the rest, took up a stick and threw it at one of our men on the taffel. A musket loaded with small shot was fired at him, upon which he clapped his hands to his face and fell flat in  
the









*S. Parkinson del.*

*T. Chambers Sculp.*

*Head of Otegoongoon, Son of a New Zealand Chief, the face curiously tataou'd.*



the canoe. This event alarmed the rest, and they made off as fast as they could, and we saw no more of them.

The wind having been against us for several days, and as we could get no farther with our heavy ship, on the 29th, in the morning, having weathered a long point of land, which we named Cape Brett, we bore away to leeward; got into a very large harbour, where we were land-locked, and had several pretty coves on every side of us. We passed a small island which we named Piercy Island, and soon after cast anchor. Many canoes came off to us; and the people in them, according to custom, behaved somewhat unruly: while I saluted one of them, in their manner, he picked my pocket. Some of our people fired upon them, but they did not seem to regard it much. One of our boats went on shore, and then they set off all at once, and attempted to seize her, in which, however, they failed; but soon after Mr. Banks got on shore, he had like to have been apprehended by one of the natives, but happily escaped. The marines fired upon them; five great guns were fired from the ship, and Otegoowgoow, [see pl. XXI.] son to one of their chiefs, was wounded in the thigh. The natives, affrighted, fled precipitately to a Hippa, where our people followed them; and, at length, they became very submissive. Had these barbarians acted more in concert, they would have been a formidable enemy, and might have done us much mischief; but they had no kind of order or military discipline among them. They gave us some large mackarel, which ate very deliciously, and that was almost the only article they would part with.

On the 5th of December, we weighed anchor, but were becalmed at the entrance of the bay, which we called the Bay of Islands, from the many islands in it. However, as it frequently happens in life, a lesser evil secured us from a greater; being detained here, we escaped a severe gale at sea, that might have proved very dangerous to us, as the wind blew a perfect hurricane, one day, accompanied with heavy showers of rain.

The natives (being more sensible of our power) behaved very civil, and brought us a great many fish; and while we lay here, we caught some ourselves with hook and line.

A canoe came into the bay that had eighty people in her, most of whom paddled; the chiefs wore garments of dogs skins, and were very much tataowed; the men upon their hips, and the women on their breasts, necks, and bellies. We saw many plantations of the Koomarra, and some of the Eaowte, or cloth trees.

At night, again, it was almost calm, and we were near the shore. We designed to tack about, but were hurried, by an eddy-tide, upon the breakers, off a point of land called, by us, Point Pococke, before we were aware of it, which threw us into a panic, and occasioned great confusion. Not having room to anchor, we hoisted out the pinnace to tow her off: we thought we had seen a whale, but it proved to be a rock, and we struck upon it twice. We got clear of it again, and streamed the buoy, but luckily did not let go the anchor. Soon after we saw several small islands, which we named Cavalle Islands. We passed two points of land which formed a bay, to which we gave the appellation of Doubtless Bay; and the two points which formed it were called by us Bay Point, and Knuckle Point. We were now got into a very long open bay, which, from the appearance of the country, we named Sandy Bay.

We beat to windward four days, and made but little way, having continual breezes from the west; and, on the 19th, many canoes came off to us, of which we bought a good quantity of fish. The land hereabout looked very barren, and tends away to the north.

On the 10th, the wind was N. W. we beat to windward, and made but little way. The land in sight was very low, and very barren, being mostly sandy, having here and there a few bushes, but scarce a tree to be seen, yet it appeared to be inhabited.

On the 13th, the N. W. wind still prevailing, we could do nothing but lie on and off the land, without making any way. It blew very hard, and we had some fierce squalls, attended with heavy showers of rain, which drove us back to where we had been four days before.

On



On the 14th, we were quite out of sight of land; the wind continued to blow very strong; we had great swells from the west; and our sails being very tender, many of them were much torn in the gale.

On the 17th, in the morning, we were near land again, which seemed to be the farthest north, the land tending away from this point, which we called the North Cape to the South West. This land was pretty high, with a table top. We saw no canoes, nor any inhabitants; but, in the evening, we saw some smoke on the high land.

On the 20th, the wind still continuing westerly, we got no farther than the last bluff point. We had some violent squalls of wind, with heavy rains, thunder, and lightening.

On the 21st, in the morning, the wind came about to the south; but, as we were a considerable distance from shore, we could only stand to the westward, without being able to get near the land.

On the 24th, after having beat about for three days, we discovered land, which we supposed was the island of the Three Kings, though we could not bring it to appear any thing like the described figure of that island in Dalrymple's Book, having nothing of that broken appearance which that figure exhibits, forming one large clump of land, rather flat at the top, with eleven small rocks lying in a row from it. It being calm, Mr. Banks went out in the small boat; and we saw some birds so much like our island geese, that we could not have distinguished the difference. We caught several of them, made them into a pye, and they tasted excellently.

On the 27th, in the morning, it blew very hard from the east, all day, accompanied with heavy showers of rain, and we brought the ship to under a reef main-sail.

On

On the 28th, the wind veered about to the S. W. and blew from that quarter fiercer than it had done the day before from the east; the sea also ran very high, and we brought to under a balanced mizen, and a mizen stay-sail.

On the 30th, we discovered land to leeward of us, which we took for Cape Maria Van Diemen; but as the wind continued still very boisterous, and the sea ran very high, we did not venture to approach near it; we therefore tacked about, and stood to the N. W. intending to stand backwards and forwards till the weather should be more moderate. In the evening, we discovered the island of the Three Kings, on our lee-bow, and tacked about, without attempting to weather it.

On the 31st, the wind blowing from the S. W. we did not approach the shore, but, in the afternoon, we saw the land very plain, and discovered a mountain which we had seen on the other side of the land; we called it Mount Camel, from its likeness to that animal: to the north of which it appears very sandy and barren, having only here and there a green plat. The same neck of land we saw on the other side, which reaches to Cape Maria Van Diemen, and this tends to the S. E.

On the 3d of January, 1770, in the forenoon, we saw the land again; this was high flat table land, and tended away to the S. E. where we lost sight of it; the wind still continued between the south and west.

On the 4th, we stood along shore: the coast appeared very low, sandy, and barren. About noon, the wind began to frisk and blow from the S. W. and fearing, if it should blow fresher, that we might get foul on a lee-shore, we tacked about, and proceeded to the N. W. Before we tacked, we observed a bending of the land which we thought might be a bay, but it proved otherwise, and we therefore named it False Bay.

On the 7th, we had light breezes and calms for several days, with fair weather, and were out of sight of land. On that day we saw a sun-fish, very short and thick, having scarce any tail, but two large fins; it was as big as a shark, and of the same colour.

On







*P. Mazell Sculp.*

*S. Parkinson del.*

*View of the great Peak, & the adjacent Country, on the West Coast of New Zealand.*



On the 9th, we had a pleasant breeze from the N. E. the weather gloomy; the land in view low and level, tending away to the S. E. In the evening it appeared higher, and tended suddenly to the west; but we were not near enough to distinguish any thing upon it.

On the 10th, we had a fine breeze from the north, and passed a high sloping land, covered with wood, where we had seen some smoke. A few leagues farther from this point, which we called Woody Point, we saw a small flat island, or rock, which was almost covered with gannets, or soland geese; and therefore called it Gannet Island. Soon after we passed a point of land, at which time, seeing a number of albatrosses on the sea, we named it Albatross Point: This point stretched out a great way, and formed a small harbour. As we proceeded on our course, the land, though level, appeared much higher, and pretty well cloathed with verdure. We saw a point of land which we called, from its appearance, Sugar-Loaf Point, near which are several small islands; and, from their vicinity to the point, we named them Sugar-Loaf Isles. The weather being still gloomy, and the wind veering about to the S. W. we were obliged to stand off and on the land.

On the 11th, in the evening, we discovered a very peaked hill, which appeared to be as high as the peak of Teneriffe; [see pl. XXII.] and all the bottom part of it was covered with clouds in the same manner; we named it Mount Egmont.

The next morning, on the 12th, we approached nearer to it, but could not see the top of it, which was lost in the clouds. From this peak the land declined gradually to a point on each side, one ending in the sea, and the other stretching to the coast north of it, which was, in general, low and level, but covered with trees, as were also both sides of the peak. When we were abreast of it we had very heavy showers of rain, with thunder and lightening; and, at length, the peak itself was totally enveloped in darkness. In the night we saw a large fire. The point off this peak we called Cape Egmont.

On the 13th, early in the morning, we descried the top of the peak, which was streaked with snow, and, finding the land tended away to the east, we concluded that we were in a large bay.

On the 14th, we saw land ahead of us, and still apprehended we were in a large bay. We also discovered several islands and very deep breaks in the land: The coast hereabout is very high, and the tops of the hills are covered with clouds; but, the weather being hazy, we saw nothing on the land excepting a fire lit up at night.

On the 15th, in the forenoon, having reached to the farther end of the supposed bay, we entered into a smaller, or rather a harbour, it being land-locked on every side. At the entrance of this harbour there are two islands, on the smallest of which we discovered a Hippa: we passed very near it, and the natives flocked in crowds to gaze at us. We stood in for a little cove, and anchored within two cables length of the shore, opposite to a small rivulet which ran into the sea. Some of our people went on shore, and shot some birds: we also hauled the sein, and caught a large draught of fishes, some of which weighed twenty-one pounds; and, on the shore, we found muscles, and other sorts of shell-fish, in great plenty.

All the coves of this bay teem with fish of various kinds, such as cuttle-fish, large breams, (some of which weighed twelve pounds, and were very delicious food, having the taste of fine salmon,) small grey breams, small and large baracootas, flying gurnards, horse-mackarel, dog-fish, soles, dabs, mullets, drums, scorpeneas or rock-fish, cole-fish, the beautiful fish called chimera, and shaggs.

The manner in which the natives of this bay catch their fish is as follows:— They have a cylindrical net, extended by several hoops at the bottom, and contracted at the top; within the net they stick some pieces of fish, then let it down from the side of a canoe, and the fish, going in to feed, are caught with great ease.

The



The country, about the cove where we lay, is entirely covered with wood, and so full of a sort of supple-jack, that it is difficult to pass through it: there is also a little sand-fly which is very troublesome; and the bite of it is venomous, raising a bump upon the skin which itches very much. The tops of some of the hills, which at first appeared to be bare, we found covered with the fern plant, which grows up to about a man's height. The hills decline gently to the water's-edge, and leave no flat land excepting one place.

The woods abound with divers kinds of birds, such as parrots, wood-pigeons, water-hens; three sorts of birds having wattles; hawks; with a variety of birds that sing all night. We also found a great quantity of a species of *Philadelphus*, which makes a good substitute for tea. At one particular place we met with a substance that appeared like a kid's skin, but it had so weak a texture, that we concluded it was not leather; and were afterward informed, by the natives, that it was gathered from some plant called *Teegoomme*: one of them had a garment made of it, which looked like their rug cloaks.

The air of the country, one would imagine, is very moist, and endued with some peculiar putrescent qualities, as we found maggots in birds a few hours after they had been shot.

The natives came to us sometimes, and behaved peaceably; but, to our surprise, we had adequate proofs that they are CANNIBALS. Some of our people, in the pinnace, went into a little cove, where one family resided, and saw several human bones which appeared to have been lately dressed and picked; and were told, that a little while before, six of their enemies had fallen into their hands; four they killed and ate; the other two jumped into the water and escaped from them, but they were unfortunately drowned, and our people saw one of their bodies floating upon the water. The natives also brought us several human bones on board, and offered them to sale, sucking them in their mouths, and, by the signs which they made to us, evinced that they thought human flesh delicious food. One day, in particular, they brought four skulls to sell; but they rated











S. Parkinson del.

View of an Arched Rock, on the Coast of New Zealand; with an Hippa, or Place of Retreat, on the Top of it.

J. Newton sculp.



the bay, met with a canoe, and were told, that a young girl had been taken from them.

There are many small islands around that appear to be entirely barren; and we saw no inhabitants upon this excepting those that belong to the Hippa; and they neither sow nor plant any thing, but live chiefly on fish, and on their neighbours when they can catch them.

We saw one of their Hippas which was situated on a very high rock, hollow underneath, forming a most grand natural arch, one side of which was connected with the land; the other rose out of the sea. Underneath this arch a small vessel might have sailed. [See pl. XXIV.] It was near a pleasant bay, and almost inaccessible: one of the natives came out and waved a large garment, or piece of cloth, to us as we passed along.

Their canoes were very stately ones: very few of the natives are tataowed: we asked them if their ancestors had not told them of such a ship as ours that they had seen in their time, but they appeared to be entirely ignorant of it. These cannibals told us, that the people, who belonged to those they had slain and eaten, were coming to them, over the hills, to kill them the next day, but it proved a false alarm.

On the 1st of February, we had a strong wind from the N. E. The hawser with which we moored the ship was broke by the strain of the sea, it being fastened on shore to a tree, and we were obliged to let go another bower. It rained all this day and part of the next, continuing, without intermission, for thirty-two hours.

On the 6th, we left the bay, which we called Cannibal Bay, having been in it about three weeks. The captain called it Charlotte's Sound. The two points, which form the entrance, were named Cape Koomarroo, and Point Jackson. The natives call the land about it Totarranooc. We bent our course to an opening at the entrance of this bay, on the east, which we saw on our coming into it, concluding it a passage between the north and south part of this island. In the evening we were in the mouth of the straits, where we were becalmed. On

a sudden we were carried toward a parcel of broken islands, or rather rocks, which lie at the entrance of the straits; the two largest we named the Two Brothers. Being alarmed, we ran to the poop of the ship, where we heard a great noise, and saw the appearance of breakers, upon which we drove bodily astern; neared the islands quickly; let go our anchor; and, before we had veered away 150 fathoms of cable, we found ourselves amongst these supposed breakers, which proved to be a strong tide that set through the straits; it made a very great rippling, especially near the islands, where the water, running in heaps, bears, and whirlpools, made a very great noise in its passage. These straits run nearly in a north and south direction.

On the 7th, we weighed anchor, and proceeded along the straits with the tide and a fine breeze, which set us through with great rapidity. At the entrance into the straits, from the north, there is a small island on the north side, near a point of land on the main; this island we called Entry Island. The land on the south side is very high, and but thinly clothed, though we saw here and there a fine level. At one part, in particular, the land was very low, and seemed to form an entrance. We saw a very long row of high trees, like those at Hawke's bay, and at Ooahowragee, or the river Thames; and it is probably the mouth of some river. We called this bay Cloudy Bay; opposite to which, on the other side of the straits, is a cape or point of land which the natives of Cannibal Bay call Teerawitte. Here is also a great number of hills, and one much higher than the rest, having its summit covered with snow, which we saw at a great distance. The north coast tended away eastward; and the south to the S. S. W. which we followed till the night closed in upon us; then the wind chopped about; and, being willing to satisfy ourselves whether the north part of this land was an island, we resolved to sail as far north as Cape Turnagain. These straits, which we named Cook's Straits, are about thirteen miles long, and fourteen broad. The two easternmost points of which we called Cape Campbell and Cape Palliser. The flood tide comes strong in from the southward, and, on the days of new and full moon, it is high water about eleven o'clock.

On the 8th, we sailed along the southern coast of this island: the weather was hazy, but we discovered many extensive lawns, with some high hills, the tops of which



which were mostly flat. In the afternoon, three canoes came off to us; two of them were large and handsome. The natives in them, who seemed to have been cut and mangled in several parts of their bodies, behaved peaceably; and, by asking for nails, we concluded they had heard of us from the people of some other islands where we had been. They were much like the natives of Mataroowkaow, a village in Tolaga Bay; being very neatly dressed, having their hair knotted on the crown of their heads in two bunches, one of which was Tamooou, or plaited, and the wreath bound round them the same. In one of the canoes there was an old man who came on board, attended by one of the natives; he was tataowed all over the face, with a streak of red paint over his nose, and across his cheek. His brow, as well as the brows of many others who were with him, was much furrowed; and the hair of his head and beard quite silvered with age. He had on a flaxen garment, ornamented with a beautiful wrought border; and under it a petticoat, made of a sort of cloth which they call Aooree Waow: on his ears hung a bunch of teeth, and an ear-ring of Poonamoo, or green stone. For an Indian, his speech was soft, and his voice so low that we could hardly hear it. By his dress, carriage, and the respect paid to him, we supposed him to be a person of distinction amongst them.

We observed a great difference betwixt the inhabitants on this side of the land, north of Cook's Straits, and those of the south. The former are tall, well-limbed, clever fellows; have a deal of tataow, and plenty of good cloaths; but the latter are a set of poor wretches, who, though strong, are stunted in their growth, and seem to want the spirit or sprightliness of the northern Indians. Few of them are tataowed, or have their hair oiled and tied up; and their canoes are but mean.

On the 9th, at noon, latitude south, we had a good view of Cape Turnagain. We hauled in our wind to S. W. to make the land on the other side of Cook's Straits. The coast we sailed along was lower, and had many white clayey and chalky cliffs upon it. We passed two points of land to which we gave the names of Castle Point and Flat Point.

On

On the 14th, we passed Cook's Straits, without seeing them, on the east side of \* Toaipoonamoo. The land consists of high ridges of mountains, whose tops, streaked with snow, had but little verdure upon them; and, at the bottom of them, we saw but little low land.

In the afternoon, four double canoes, in which were fifty-seven people, came off to us; they had some leaves about their heads, but few cloaths on their bodies, and seemed to be poor wretches. They kept aloof from us, nor could we persuade them to traffic with us.

On the 16th, we sailed along shore, and had frequent calms. About noon we passed a broad opening which seemed to divide the land; on the N. W. side of which is a small bay, which we named Gore's Bay. In the evening the land tended away to the S. W. and formed in various bluff points, and was, within, of a middling height, very broken, and somewhat bare. We saw some smoke, but were not near enough to make any accurate observations. We passed also the appearance of several good harbours.

On the 17th, we saw more land which still tended away to the S. W. and, it is probable, the straits we saw is a passage between the main or land we sailed along the day before and the island or land we saw this day; or this may, perhaps, be a continuation of the larger. About the middle of this island, which we called Banks's Island, there seems to be a fine large bay. We hauled in our wind, and stood to the east, one of the lieutenants being persuaded that he saw land in that quarter; but, in the evening, we bore away to the south, and, on the 18th, Latitude  $45^{\circ} 16'$ , we hauled in our wind, and stood to the west, being certain that we could not miss of land if there was any so far to the south. In the evening we saw vast shoals of grampusses and bottle-nosed porpoises.

On the 19th, standing still to the westward, with a brisk breeze, in the forenoon, we discovered high land southward of us, being then, by our reckoning,

\* Or the Land of Poonamoo, which is the name by which the natives distinguish the southern division of this island, and where the Poonamoo, or Green Stone, is found. The northern division of New Zealand is called by them Eaheino-Mauwe.



thirty-three leagues to the westward, and eight southward of the land we had parted from when we sailed to the east. We hauled in our wind and stood for it.

On the 20th, in the morning, we were near the land, which formed an agreeable view to the naked eye. The hills were of a moderate height, having flats that extended from them a long way, bordered by a perpendicular rocky cliff next to the sea; but, when viewed through our glasses, the land appeared very barren, having only a few trees in the valleys, or furrows of the hills, and had no signs of inhabitants. The air was very sharp and cold.

Having beat to windward for several days without gaining any way, with the weather gloomy and very cold, on Saturday, the 24th, we had a fresh breeze from the north, which carried us round the outermost point, which we called Cape Saunders: beyond which the land tended away to the S. W.

The next day, the 25th, we had variable winds and calms till the afternoon; and then we had the wind from the S. W. which was directly against us: it blew very violently, and we were obliged to go under fore and main sails; and tore our fore-sail in pieces. The land thereabout was pretty high, indifferently well covered with trees, but had no signs of inhabitants.

On the 27th, it continued blowing hard from the S. W. we lay to all day: at length the wind abated, but continued still in our teeth. Thermometer 46.

On the 4th of March, after having beat about near a week, by the favour of a breeze from the north, we got sight of land again, which tended away to the S. W. and by W. and appeared to be of great extent. We had a continual rolling swell from the S. W. and saw the appearance of a harbour, which we named Moulieux's Harbour, after the name of the master of our ship. We had light breezes and calms till the ninth; and, at the dawn of that day, we narrowly escaped running the ship upon a ledge, or parcel of craggy rocks; some of which were but just seen above water. They were luckily discovered by the midshipman's going to the mast head. The breeze being moderate, we put the helm a-lee, and were delivered from this imminent danger by the good providence of God. The land,

R

which

which we then saw at a considerable distance, seemed to be an island, having a great opening between it and the land which we had passed before; but, the captain designing to go round, we steered for the south point, hoping it was the last. This large opening we named South-East Bay; on the N. W. side of which there is a small long island, that we called Bench Island. We stood out to sea, but, meeting with contrary winds, we beat to windward for a considerable time: at length, the wind coming fair, we steered westerly, and, unexpectedly, found ourselves between two large shoals, which had some rocks upon them; but we fortunately escaped them. We called these shoals The Traps. Toward night, we got so far round as to make the point bear N. N. E. and then we saw some kind of stuff upon it that glittered very much, but could not discover what it was composed of. This day the weather was more moderate than it had been for many days; and being one of the inferior officers birth day, it was celebrated by a peculiar kind of festival; a dog was killed that had been bred on board; the hind quarters were roasted; and a pye was made of the fore quarters, into the crust of which they put the fat; and of the viscera they made a haggis.

On the 10th, we stood out a considerable way to sea; and, on the 11th, in the morning, fetched the land, and approached near it. It had the appearance of a cluster of islands, or a bay with a large break, being divided by a number of valleys and peaked hills, many of which were pretty well covered with wood, and had some snow on the tops of them; but we saw no signs of inhabitants. We called this bay South-West Bay, near which lies a small island, that we named Solander's Isle. Having contrary winds we were driven back as far as  $47^{\circ} 45'$  south latitude; but, the wind coming round again, we steered north-westerly, and made a point of land, which we named the West Cape. We went round this cape; on the N. E. side of which there is a small bay; we called it Dusky Bay; and the N. W. point of it we called Five Fingers Point, about which we saw several rocks.

On the 13th, we sailed along the western coast with a very brisk breeze from the south. The land appeared very romantic, having mountains piled on mountains to an amazing height; but they seemed to be uninhabited. We saw the appearance of some good harbours, one of which, larger than the rest, we called



called Doubtful Harbour; but night coming on we did not venture into any of them.

On the 14th, we sailed along shore with a pleasant breeze; the land rose immediately from the water's edge to a very great height. Some of the highest hills were covered with snow, and the others with wood; but we saw no signs of inhabitants. We passed several breaks in the land, which might be good harbours, but we did not enter into any of them. We saw, this day, a great number of albatrosses.

On the 16th, having a breeze, we sailed along the shore of the land we had passed the day before, which appeared as wild and romantic as can be conceived. Rocks and mountains, whose tops were covered with snow, rose in view one above another from the water's edge: and those near the shore were clothed with wood, as well as some of the valleys between the hills, whose summits reached the clouds. We saw a break in the land which we thought might be a good harbour, but it proved only a small open bay, we therefore called it Mistaken Bay. As we sailed along we passed a broken point, that had a flat top, from which the water poured down into the sea, and formed three grand natural cascades. This point we named Cascades Point. On the N. E. side of it there was a bay which we called Open Bay.

On the 20th, we met with contrary winds, which carried us away to the westward; but, the wind coming favourable again, we resumed our former course, and came up with a head of land which we named Cape Foul Wind.

On the 24th, we saw a point of land which we called Rock's Point, and soon after met with a Cape; and, when we got round it, found ourselves in a large bay, but did not anchor in it. The land tended away to the S. E. and, at the bottom of the bay, there is probably a river. We continued our course to the S. E. and came up with a large tract of land stretching a good way from the main to a point, near which there is a small island. We named this point Cape Stephens; and the island Stephens Isle. Having weathered the point we found ourselves in a

large bay, which we called Admiralty Bay. In the mouth of this bay there are several small islands, which we named Admiralty Isles.

On the 26th, in the evening, we anchored in the Bay, which we found was about ten leagues N.W. of Charlotte's Sound, or Cannibal Bay, after having endured the dangers of foul winds, and the tedious suspense of many calms\*. The inhabitants of Cannibal Bay, where we were on the 6th of February, told us, that we might sail round the south land in four days, but we had been near seven weeks in making the tour. There is no low land hereabout, the hills rising from the water's edge. Since we came from Charlotte's Sound, we saw no signs of inhabitants, except one smoke, which, perhaps, arose from some other than the hand of man; for it would seem that this land was almost entirely uninhabited, except Charlotte's Sound; and it has all the appearance of a cluster of islands, through which there are various straits, though we had no time to discover them. This second part of the land is about the size of the other, and the whole together is as large as Great-Britain.

In this bay we saw some deserted houses, but no inhabitants; and the land about it is more wild and not so flat as Charlotte's Sound; but the bay abounded as plentifully with fish, and we caught a great quantity with hooks and lines, which were distributed amongst the ship's company. We had now passed near six months, on the coast of New Zealand; had surveyed it on every side, and discovered it to be an island near three hundred leagues in length; inhabited by Cannibals, accustomed to the carnage of war from their infancy, and peculiarly undaunted, as well as insensible of danger.

The captain having fulfilled his orders, it was at his option to stay as much longer in these seas as the safety of the ship and provisions would admit; and to return home either by the East-Indies or Cape Horn. Considering that Cape Horn was at a great distance from this bay; that the season of the year was at hand which is the most unfavourable for going into so high a latitude; and that at the present time,

\* The Map annexed, in which the ship's track is accurately marked, will give the reader an idea of the fatigue and danger which attended our traverse. [See pl. XXV.]

and









and for five months past, the monsoons prevailed in the Chinese seas; it was thought best to proceed west to the coast of New Holland, and so to the northward along it, in order to find a convenient refreshing place; then to search for the supposed Straits between New Holland and New Guinea, (which, it is thought, admiral Torrey went through;) and along the north coast of New Holland, to the island of Java; but, if these could not be found, it was proposed to proceed along the coast to Dampier's Straits, which lie between New Guinea and New Britain; then to cross the line, and sail down among the spice islands to Java, as we were in want of many kinds of provisions, particularly sugar, salt, oil, tea, and tobacco: our spirits also very low: and, as to bread, we had not had any for upwards of six months, and our sails were nearly worn out.

Something has already been mentioned respecting the language of the New-Zealanders, and of its affinity to that of the people of Otaheite; the following Vocabulary will more fully shew this agreement, which is a very extraordinary circumstance, and leads us to conclude that one place was originally peopled from the other, though they are at near two thousand miles distance, and nothing but the ocean intervenes, at least to our knowledge; and such a long navigation, we should hardly believe, could be practicable in their small canoes, the only vessels that they appear to have ever possessed; yet what should lead too distinct people, having no communication with each other, to affix the same sounds to the same things, would be hard to account for in any other manner. This opinion is farther corroborated, by comparing their customs and manners, as also their instruments of war and household utensils, which will be found to agree in many particulars. The migration was probably from New-Zealand to Otaheite; as the inhabitants of the former place were totally unacquainted with the use of bows and arrows till we first taught them; whereas the people of the latter island use them with great dexterity, having doubtless discovered the use of them by some accident after their separation; and it cannot be supposed that the New-Zealanders would have lost so beneficial an acquisition, if they had ever been acquainted with it.



## A VOCABULARY of the LANGUAGE of NEW ZEALAND.

Papa,	<i>Father.</i>
Hetamàéh,	<i>A boy, or son.</i>
He aowpohó,	<i>The head.</i>
He ai,	<i>The brow.</i>
He matta,	<i>The eyes.</i>
He toogge matta,	<i>The eye-brows.</i>
He gammo,	<i>The eye-lids.</i>
He eih,	<i>The nose.</i>
He peeapeea,	<i>The nostrils.</i>
He papaeh,	<i>The cheeks.</i>
He gaōwai,	<i>The mouth.</i>
He neeho,	<i>The teeth.</i>
He gooteh,	<i>The lips.</i>
Haiàeèd,	<i>The tongue.</i>
Egoorree,	<i>A dog.</i>
Teyka,	<i>Fish.</i>
Hewhài,	<i>A skate.</i>
Eraperape,	<i>The fish called Chimæra.</i>
Hepaooa,	<i>Ear-shells.</i>
Hekohooà,	<i>Small ear-shells.</i>
Heràiyanno,	<i>The small biting fly.</i>
Heaow,	<i>A leaf.</i>
Hèànoohe,	<i>Fern root.</i>
Tracaow,	<i>Wood.</i>
Po whattoo,	<i>A stone.</i>
Whakabecte,	<i>The large peaked hill.</i>
Hewai,	<i>Water.</i>

Hèàwhài,



Hèàwhài,	<i>A house.</i>
Patéeà,	<i>A hedge or fence.</i>
Ewhàò,	<i>A nail.</i>
Tochee,	<i>A hatchet, or adze.</i>
Eëi,	<i>Viçtuals.</i>
Eàowtè,	<i>Indian cloth.</i>
Hecacahoo,	<i>A garment.</i>
Opoonamoo,	<i>A green ear-ring.</i>
Potai,	<i>The feather ornament on their head.</i>
Heebeekèe,	<i>A bunch of scarlet feathers which they stick in their hair.</i>
Emaho,	<i>Tataow.</i>
Kaowaowaow,	<i>A small flute.</i>
Hewaca,	<i>A canoe.</i>
Hewhaiwhai,	<i>A bile.</i>
Hoggee,	<i>To paddle.</i>
Patoopatoò,	<i>To throw stones, to threaten.</i>
Oweerree,	<i>To roll up.</i>
Orero,	<i>To speak, or a speech.</i>
Apoorotoo,	<i>Good.</i>
Ekeenò,	<i>Bad.</i>
Matto,	<i>Steep.</i>
Mai whattoo,	<i>Stronger, or very strong.</i>
Keeànooe,	<i>Too small.</i>
Keeàmaow,	<i>Larger.</i>
A, a,	<i>Yes.</i>
Kaowra,	<i>No.</i>
Na, na,	<i>What say you?</i>
Eeha, teneega?	<i>What's that? or what call you that?</i>
Eta eta,	<i>Look you; here, here.</i>
Ma dooge dooge,	<i>Let me see it, or let me look.</i>

## NUMERATION.

## NUMERATION.

Katahè,	<i>One.</i>
Karooa,	<i>Two.</i>
Katarroo,	<i>Three.</i>
Kawha,	<i>Four.</i>
Kareema,	<i>Five.</i>
Kàònoo,	<i>Six.</i>
Kawheetoo,	<i>Seven.</i>
Kawarroo,	<i>Eight.</i>
Kàeeva,	<i>Nine.</i>
Kacahaowroo,	<i>Ten.</i>



Having given a plate, containing principally the figures of the New-Zealand household and warlike INSTRUMENTS, it may be proper here to give a description of them. [See pl. XXVI.]

Fig. 1. An Ornament for the Neck, made of three round pieces of *Auris Marina*, or ear-shell, the inside of which is a beautiful coloured pearl. These pieces are notched on the edges, and strung on a piece of plaited tape, made of white flax, and coloured red. It hangs loosely about the neck, and is two feet, eight inches and a half long.

2. One of their common Paddles; when used it is held by one hand at the top of the handle; in which there is a hole, and by the other at the bottom, where it is carved very neatly, being five feet, nine inches and a half long.

3. A Fish-hook, made of wood, and pointed with bone, which is tied on with twine; three inches and three quarters long.

4. A





*S. H. Grimm del. Various kinds of Instruments &c, of the Inhabitants of New Zealand, with some Ornaments &c, of the People of Terra del Fuego & New-Holland. J. Chambers Sc.*





4. A Fish-hook, made of two pieces of bone tied together ; the line is fastened both at top and bottom : and, to the latter part, they tie some small feathers. The length of this hook is  $4 \frac{2}{3}$  inches.
5. A Fish-hook, made of wood, pointed with bone ; about two inches and a half long.
6. A large Fish-hook, made of wood, and pointed with bone, having the end, to which the line is fastened, curiously carved ; eight inches and a half long.
7. A Fish-hook, made of human bone ; one inch and a quarter long.
8. A Fish-hook, made of wood, pointed with shell ; five inches  $\frac{2}{3}$  in length.
9. A Fish-hook, made of wood, and pointed with a substance that looked like one part of the beak of a small bird ; two inches and a half long.
10. A Fish-hook, made of wood, and pointed with bone ; three inches and a half long.
11. A Fish-hook, made of bone ; one inch and a quarter long.
12. An Ornament made of bone, probably of some deceased relation, and worn in the ear ; one inch and three quarters long.
13. and 14. are treated of in the accounts of Terra del Fuego and New-Holland.
15. A piece of Wood, part of the head of a canoe, singularly carved ; nine inches and a quarter in length.
16. A favourite Ornament, which resembles a human face, made of wood, coloured red, and is much like some of the Roman masks. The eyes are made  
s of

of the fine coloured ear-shell mentioned No. 1, laid into the wood. This was six inches long; but they have different sizes. Some of the smaller ones have handles carved very ingeniously; these they frequently held up when they approached the ship: perhaps it may be the figure of some idol which they worship.

17, 18, and 19, are Figures of Patta-pattoos, or War-bludgeons. They have holes in the handles of them, through which a string is passed and tied round the wrist when they make use of them. Numbers 17 and 19, are made of wood; the former is about fourteen inches long, and the latter twelve. Number 18 is about fourteen inches in length, made of a hard black stone, a kind of basalt, and similar to the stone of which the Otaheiteans paste-beaters and hatchets are made.

20. Is a kind of Battle-axe, used either as a lance or as a patta-pattoo. The length of these is from five to six feet. The middle part of them is very ingeniously carved.

21. An Ivory Needle, made of the tooth of some large marine animal, with which they fasten on their cloaks. This is about six inches  $\frac{3}{4}$  in length; but they have of various sizes; and some of them are made of the circular edge of the ear-shell mentioned in No. 1.

22. An Instrument made of the bone of some large animal, probably of a grampus, which is used sometimes as a paddle, and at others as a patta-pattoo, and is about five feet long.

23. A Wedge or Chisel, made of the green stone, or Poonammoo, as they call it, and sometimes of the Basalt. These wedges they sometimes tie to a wooden handle, and then use them as hatchets and hoes. They are of various sizes, from one to eight inches in length.

24. A Whistle, made of wood, having the outside curiously carved. Besides the mouth-hole they have several for the fingers to play upon. These, which are worn



worn about the neck, are three inches and a half in length, and yield a shrill sound.

25. A Trumpet, nineteen inches and a half in length, made of a hard brown wood, which they split, and carefully hollow out each side so as to fit neatly again, leaving an edge on each side; and joining them together, they are bound tight with withes made of cane: it is broadest in the middle, which is rather flat, and gradually tapers to the ends that are open. In the middle of it there is a large hole which represents the mouth of a figure somewhat like a human one, having hands and feet, the parts of which are carved round the instrument: the head is not unlike the mask, No. 16. Another such like mask is also carved near one end of the trumpet. They produce a harsh shrill sound.
26. Is spoken of in the account of the people of Terra del Fuego.
27. A singular kind of hand-scoop, or water-bailer, made of one piece of wood: the handle of it proceeds from the edge and hangs over the middle, and both it and the edge are very ingeniously carved. It is about eleven inches long, eight inches wide, and near six inches deep under the handle.
28. The head of a spear, made of bone, about six inches in length.



A

J O U R N A L

O F A

V O Y A G E to the S O U T H S E A S,

In his Majesty's Ship The E N D E A V O U R.

P A R T III.



ON the 31st, in the morning, we weighed anchor, having a fine breeze from the S. E. left the coast of New Zealand, and steered our course toward New Holland, taking our departure from a point of land near Blind Bay, which point we named Cape Farewell. We had fine weather and a fair wind till the 9th; then we saw one of the tropic birds, although we were in latitude  $38^{\circ} 34'$ , thermometer 73. We were becalmed nine days, from the 9th to the 17th, and then the wind blew from the S. S. W. and S. W. and we had a broken sea that caused the ship to pitch and roll very much at the same time; we shipped a sea fore and aft, which deluged the decks, and had like to have washed several of us overboard: we were then in latitude  $38^{\circ} 46'$  and 22 degrees west of Cape Farewell, out of sight of land: so that the land of Van Diemen, if not

an



an island, must have tended away abruptly to the east, or we should have seen it before this time. We continued our course, but nothing worthy of note occurred till the 19th, in the morning, and then we discovered the land of New Holland, extending a great way to the south, and to the eastward. It is moderately high: part of it appeared to be flat, and covered with sand; but, the weather being foggy, we had not a good view of it. We were obliged to steer E. N. E. to clear it; and saw three water spouts, one of which continued very near a quarter of an hour. Latitude  $37^{\circ} 51'$ .

On the 20th, we sailed along shore with a fine brisk breeze, but we found no harbour. The land appeared rather level, with here and there a gentle ascent covered entirely with wood, some of which appeared large. About noon we saw some smoke ascending out of a wood near the sea side. Latitude  $36^{\circ} 51'$ .

On the 21st, we had fine clear weather, and a brisk gale: the coast appeared much the same as it did the day before, excepting that it was rather lower. In the evening the land appeared very low and strait, stretching away to the N. E. and was well covered with trees. We saw some clouds of smoke rising from them a good way up the country, but we found no harbour. Latitude  $35^{\circ} 51'$ .

On the 22d, the coast made a good view, being flat, level, and covered with verdure. The hills within land were remarkably flat: we discovered five men upon them, through our glasses, who were quite naked. It is probable they live upon the produce of the earth, as we did not see any canoes, and the coast seems to be unfavourable for fishing. Latitude  $35^{\circ} 27'$ .

On the 25th, we were in latitude  $34^{\circ} 22'$ . The weather was very fine, but we were often becalmed. The land appeared still flat, remarkably level, and strait on the top. We saw several fires along the coast lit up one after another, which might have been designed as signals to us.

On the 27th, in the morning, the wind being against us, we stood off and on shore. At noon, being about one mile from land, some of our men were sent on shore in a boat, which soon returned, not being able to land for the surf, which

which ran very high all along the coast. They espied three men, sitting on the beach, who were naked, and of a very dark colour; but, on the boat's approaching nearer toward them, they fled into the woods. Our people also discovered several canoes drawn upon the beach, and a kind of house or wig-wam adjacent. We also, from the ship, saw five men walking, two of whom carried a canoe on their shoulders. The country looked very pleasant and fertile; and the trees, quite free from underwood, appeared like plantations in a gentleman's park.

On the 28th, we got into a fine bay, and some of our people went on shore on one side of it, where we saw some houses. On our approaching the shore, two men, with different kinds of weapons, came out and made toward us. Their countenance bespoke displeasure; they threatened us, and discovered hostile intentions, often crying to us, Warra warra wai. We made signs to them to be peaceable, and threw them some trinkets; but they kept aloof, and dared us to come on shore. We attempted to frighten them by firing off a gun loaded with small shot; but attempted it in vain. One of them repaired to a house immediately, and brought out a shield, of an oval figure, painted white in the middle, with two holes in it to see through, and also a wooden sword, and then they advanced boldly, [see pl. XXVII.] gathering up stones as they came along, which they threw at us. After we had landed, they threw two of their lances at us; one of which fell between my feet. Our people fired again, and wounded one of them; at which they took the alarm and were very frantic and furious, shouting for assistance, calling Hala, hala, mae; that is, (as we afterwards learned,) Come hither; while their wives and children set up a most horrid howl. We endeavoured to pacify them, but to no purpose, for they seemed implacable, and, at length, ran howling away, leaving their wives and children, who hid themselves in one of the huts behind a piece of bark. After looking about us a little while, we left some nails upon the spot and embarked, taking with us their weapons; and then proceeded to the other side of the bay, where we had seen a number of people, as we came in, round a fire, some of whom were painted white, having a streak round their thighs, two below their knees, one like a sash over their shoulders, which ran diagonally downwards, and another across their foreheads. Both men and women were quite naked, very lean and raw-boned; their complexion was dark, their hair black and frizzled, their heads unadorned, and the beards of the men bushy.





S. Parkinson del.

T. Chambers sc.

*Two of the Natives of New-Holland, Advancing to Combat.*





busby. Their canoes were made of one piece of bark, gathered at the two ends, and extended in the middle by two sticks. Their paddles were very small, two of which they used at one time; and we found a large lump of yellow gum in their gigs which seemed to be for striking fish. Some of their weapons had a kind of chisel fixed at their ends, but of what substance they were formed we could not learn.

The natives often reconnoitred us, but we could not prevail on them to come near us or to be social; for, as soon as we advanced, they fled as nimbly as deer, excepting at one time, when they seemed determined to face us: then they came armed with spears, having their breasts painted white; but, as soon as they saw our boat go off from the ship, they retreated. Constrained by hunger, they often came into the bay to fish; but they kept in the shallows, and as near as possible to the shore. In one of their houses, at the top of the bay, we had laid some nails, pieces of cloth, and various trinkets; and though the natives had been there in our absence, yet they had not taken any of them.

This bay is in latitude  $34^{\circ}6'$ , and makes a good harbour, being only two or three points open to the eastward; but the water is in general shallow; and it has several arms extending from it, which are also shallow. On these shallows we found a great number of rays, some shell-fish, and a few sharks. The rays are of an enormous size: one of them which we caught weighed two hundred and thirty-nine pounds, and another three hundred and twenty-six. They tasted very much like the European rays, and the viscera had an agreeable flavour, not unlike stewed turtle. These rays, and shell-fish, are the natives chief food.

The country is very level and fertile; the soil, a kind of grey sand; and the climate mild: and though it was the beginning of winter when we arrived, every thing seemed in perfection. There is a variety of flowering shrubs; a tree that yields gum; and a species of palm, [*Borassus flabellifer*,] the berries of which are of two sorts; one small, eaten by the hogs, and the other, as large as a cherry, has a stone in it; it is of a pale crimson colour, and has the taste of a sweet acid. We also found a species of *Salvia Fortea*.

We

We met with but one quadruped on the island, which was about the size of a hare: we found also the skin of a snake, and saw a great number of birds of a beautiful plumage; among which were two sorts of parroquets, and a beautiful loriquet: we shot a few of them, which we made into a pie, and they ate very well. We also met with a black bird, very much like our crow, and shot some of them too, which also tasted agreeably. From the number of curious plants we met with on shore, we called the bay Botany-Bay.

Having got on board a good stock of hay for our sheep, on the 6th of May we weighed anchor, and left this bay. On this day, Forbes Sutherland, a native of the Orkneys, who had departed this life, was carried on shore, and decently interred.

Having only moderate breezes from the N. and N.E. we made but little way till the 9th. In the evening of that day we saw two of the most beautiful rainbows my eyes ever beheld: the colours were strong, clear, and lively; those of the inner one were so bright as to reflect its shadow on the water. They formed a complete semicircle; and the space between them was much darker than the rest of the sky.

In latitude  $32^{\circ} 51'$ , on the 10th, the land appeared considerably higher, and more broken, very sandy, and less fertile. We saw several clusters of islands; among which, it is probable, there may be some good harbours.

On the 11th, we passed high broken land, having several distinct peaks and hills, an extensive flat along the shore covered with pretty large trees, and a sandy beach. We saw also many snakes, and three remarkable hills, which we called The Three Brothers. Latitude  $32^{\circ} 2'$ .

On the 14th, latitude  $30^{\circ} 22'$ , the land appeared high, and well covered with wood; but, being three or four leagues from it, we could not distinguish many particulars upon it, though we saw clouds of smoke arise from different distant parts of the country. The wind was very variable after our leaving the last bay, and we had some calms. The wind hangs mostly between the N. and E. on this coast, blows very gently, and then dies away to a stark calm; but this day we had a fresh breeze from the S.W.

On



On the 15th, we were in the latitude of  $28^{\circ} 40'$ . The breeze continued brisk from the S. W. the land appeared very uneven ; and we saw a remarkable high peak, with three points at the top : behind it were three other hills, with round tops ; and the nearest land was well covered with wood. We saw six men, quite naked, walking upon a strait, white, sandy beach ; and, in the evening, having a low point of land a-head, we discovered several breakers, at a considerable distance from the shore. The wind freshening, we stood to the east ; and, soon after dark, brought to, continued sounding every half-hour, and found thirty fathoms water.

On the 16th, we were in latitude  $27^{\circ} 40'$ , and saw a vast tract of low land, with, here and there, a rising hill.

On the 17th, the land appeared higher, having many remarkable peaks ; one of which was like a glass-house : we also saw some smoke, and the appearance of a large river ; the water of which was of a pale green colour. Latitude  $26^{\circ} 28'$ .

On the 18th, in latitude  $25^{\circ} 36'$ , the land appeared to rise perpendicular, of an unequal height, and looked like a wall along the coast, without having any break ; which prevented us from seeing the back land ; and it was covered with great patches of white sand and stunted shrubs. The sea was full of a sort of orange-coloured powder, like that we saw on the coast of Brazil. On this day, we saw a water-snake.

On the 20th, in the forenoon, we were abreast of a point which seemed to be the last of the land to the north, and tended away abruptly to the south. From this point there runs a very large shoal, on several parts of which the water broke. We sailed along-side of it, and had from seventeen to nine fathoms water. Before night came on, we got round it, and kept our course westward, as we had seen the looming of land in that quarter. The barren sandy land continued to this point, and was uninhabited. We saw a large turtle, some large grampusses that leaped out of the water, a great number of porpoises, many sharks which would not take bait, and several men-of-war birds. Latitude  $24^{\circ} 24'$ .

T

On

On the 21st, in the forenoon, we discovered land again, extending a great way, and forming a curve. It was very flat, level, and covered with trees, with a few hills within-land. We sailed along it, to look for a harbour, to the N. W. There was no appearance of land to the S. W. so that it is very probable there is a river in that-part. We found no current, and our course was very shallow, as we had but from seven to twenty fathoms water at a great distance from land.

On the 22d, in the evening, we anchored in an open road or bay, round the north cape of the great bay. As we sailed along, this day, the country appeared very barren and sandy, having only a few low shrubs.\*

On the 23d, the captain and some others went on shore, and saw a few of the natives, but could not get near them. We saw, too, about twenty of them from the ship, who stood gazing at us upon the beach; also smoke arising out of the woods, which, perhaps, was only an artifice of theirs, to make us think they were numerous. We observed nothing worthy of note on land, excepting a great variety of plants; one of which bore a fruit like a small crab-apple, having a large stone in it, the Eawharra of Otaheite, and the dung of some quadruped that fed on grass. We hauled the seine, and tore it in pieces, but caught no fish: though we saw great shoals of them in this bay, they would not take the bait. We found a nautilus pompilius, and some of a curious kind of hammer oysters; as also a number of porpoises. We shot a duck of a beautiful plumage, with a white beak, black body, and white and green on the wings. We likewise shot another large bird, of the bustard kind, coloured black, white, and brown, which weighed seventeen pounds. The hills seen in this bay, which was called Bustard Bay, appeared very barren, having nothing upon them but a few diminutive shrubs; but we saw a large tract of low and flat land, that was covered with small wood, had several lagoons in it, and some of the same kind of plants which grow on the island of Otaheite and in the East-Indies.

On

\* This day the captain's clerk had his ears cut off, and his cloaths also cut off his back. The captain and officers offered, some time after, at Batavia, a reward of fifteen guineas, to any one who should discover the person or persons who cut off his ears, and fifteen gallons of arrack, to any one that should discover him or them who had cut off his cloaths.



On the 24th, in the morning, we weighed anchor, and left this bay. At noon, we were becalmed, and caught, with hook and line, several sorts of beautiful-coloured fishes. We saw some very large pelicans, which were near five feet high, and the tail of some quadruped, which we supposed might be a guanica. In latitude  $23^{\circ} 51'$  the land tended away from the sandy point in the great bay to the north-west.

On the 25th, in the forenoon, we crossed the tropic of Capricorn. The land appeared very desolate, being little else than sand and rocks, parcelled out into several islands and ragged points. We came to at night, in a sort of bay formed by the turning of the land, and found a considerable tide flowing into it. There was the appearance of an opening in the land, which may possibly be the mouth of a river.

On the 26th, we got in among a parcel of islands, to get clear of which we proposed going by a passage to the north-west, which was next to the main; but, finding our water shoal very much, we sent some men in a boat a-head of us, to sound, and came into three and two and a half fathom water. They returned with an account that there was hardly water enough; so we tacked about and stood out. The next morning, we had a fine breeze, and went through a passage to the north-east, between two islands: in this sound, the tide fell thirteen feet. Our people, who went off in the boat, saw many of the natives upon one of the islands, and they hallooed to them: they were of the same sort as those we had seen before. On the land round about, we saw both high and low ridges, with some peaks: part of it was well covered; though there appeared some large patches of white sand. Latitude  $22^{\circ} 52'$ .

On the 28th, resolving to keep the main close aboard, which continued tending away to the west, we got into another cluster of islands; where we were much alarmed, having but three fathoms water, on a sudden, in a rippling tide: we put about, and hoisted out the boats, to seek for deeper water; after which, as it was very gloomy and blew fresh, we kept an easy sail to the west, founding all the way; and, at night, came to the entrance of a bay. This cluster of islands is very much

variegated ; some of them are high, others low ; some exceedingly broken and mere barren rocks, others well cloathed. Part of the main land is very high, and has extensive flats, covered with trees. Latitude  $22^{\circ} 8'$ .

On the 29th, in the morning, we passed into the bay, which appears to be the entrance into some river, by the strong tide that runs into the channel, which fell twelve feet in six hours. The captain intended to ground the ship here, in order to clean her bottom ; but,

On the 31st, we left this bay, not being able to find any fresh water, or any kind of provisions, not even fish. The bay is open to the north ; is very large and deep, and capable of containing a navy at anchor. There were many creeks, that seemed to end in a lagoon ; but the captain could not determine whether the inlet, that led into the country, was a river. The country about the bay is but indifferently cloathed ; the trees are small ; and the soil on the hills is very stony, and bare of grass under the trees. That part of the shore, which I saw, seemed to be a rock, composed of broken stones, cemented together with mud. On our first view of this coast, we conceived the most pleasing hopes, but were unhappily disappointed. We saw only two of the Indians, but the marks of many more, and the footsteps of an animal that had a cloven hoof. We saw also many of the Yam-trees, the greater part of them having been stripped of the bark ; and several sorts of ants, some of which build their nests of earth against the side of a tree, while others make them of leaves, glued together and hung upon the branches.

From a hill, at the entrance into the bay, we had thirty islands in view. Through this labyrinth of islands we passed with some difficulty, on account of the number of shoals which we met with ; one of which we should have been upon, had not the men in the boat given us timely notice. We were encouraged to attempt a passage through them, from an expectation, we had formed, of finding one to the north side of the land.

On the 2d of June, we were in the latitude of  $20^{\circ} 56'$ , and still among islands, through which we were obliged to steer with great caution, keeping a boat out ahead, and coming to every night : we yet narrowly escaped a bank, the soundings were



were so unequal. The land appeared very high, and much broken; had but an indifferent aspect, and seemed to be thinly inhabited.

On the 3d, in the morning, we had land on every quarter, excepting at south-east, and stood to north-west; where there appeared to be an opening, which carried us into a strait, in which we found deep water. This strait lies almost north and south; is about seven leagues long, and one and a half broad. On the west of it lies the main, and, on the east, a row of islands which extend a considerable way to the south. The land on both sides looked much better than that which we had seen before; being high, abounding in trees, and not sandy. We discovered three persons through our glasses, and a canoe with out-riggers, like those of Otaheite. In the evening, we had almost got out of the straits, the islands failing, and the main tending more to the west. Latitude  $20^{\circ} 27'$ .

On the 4th, we cleared the straits and islands, and got into an open sea. The land upon the coast was full of very high hills, whose bowels are probably rich in ore; but their surface is poor indeed, being more barren, and fuller of stones, than any land we had seen. We had clear and pleasant weather, and the land still tended away to the west. Latitude  $19^{\circ} 48'$ .

On the 7th, we were between a parcel of islands and the main. The main-land looked very barren and dreary: the hills upon it looked like a heap of rubbish, on which nothing was to be seen, excepting a few low bushes: but the islands made a better appearance. We saw a few people in canoes, striking fish, some smoke on the main, and some palm-trees. Latitude  $18^{\circ} 48'$ .

On the 8th, the main land appeared still higher, and very barren. We discovered several islands that looked like so many heaps of rubbish, which had lain long enough to have a few weeds and bushes grow on them. On one of them, which is not more than two miles in circumference, we saw a company of the natives, entirely naked, and of a dark complexion, standing quite still, and beholding the ship with astonishment. At night we saw a fire, which yielded a very grateful odour, not unlike that produced by burning the wood of gum benjamin.

On

On the 10th, we continued our course to the north-west; and, about nine o'clock in the morning, we failed down a reef of coral-rocks. Our water shoaled very soon, from twenty-one to eight fathoms; which alarmed us very much: every countenance expressed surprize, and every heart felt some trepidation. About eleven, the ship struck upon the rocks, and remained immoveable. We were, at this period, many thousand leagues from our native land, (which we had left upwards of two years,) and on a barbarous coast, where, if the ship had been wrecked, and we had escaped the perils of the sea, we should have fallen into the rapacious hands of savages. Agitated and surprised as we were, we attempted every apparent eligible method to escape, if possible, from the brink of destruction. The sails were immediately handed, the boats launched, the yards and topmasts struck, and an anchor was carried to the southward: the ship striking hard, another anchor was dispatched to the south-west. Night came on, which providentially was moon-light; and we weathered it out as patiently as possible, considering the dreadful suspense we were in.

On the 11th, early in the morning, we lightened the ship, by throwing overboard our ballast, fire-wood, some of our stores, our water-casks, all our water, and six of our great guns; and set the pumps at work, at which every man on board assisted, the Captain, Mr. Banks, and all the officers, not excepted; relieving one another every quarter of an hour. About noon, the ship heaved much on one side; upon which five anchors were carried out, and dropt at different parts; while all the hands on board plied the pumps incessantly, hoping to have heaved her off the rock, but hoping in vain. At four o'clock in the afternoon it was low water, and the ship, in several places, grounded on the rock. Between nine and ten, the tide rose four feet, and the ship righted again; and, about ten, after some farther attempts to clear her, she providentially got off. This desirable event gave us spirits; which, however, proved but the transient gleam of sun-shine, in a tempestuous day; for they were soon depressed again, by observing that the water increased in the hold, faster than we could throw it out; and we expected, every minute, that the ship would sink, or that we should be obliged to run her again upon the rocks.

In



In the midst of these gloomy prospects and alarming apprehensions we found means to stop the leak, by a method suggested to us by an officer, who had, in a former voyage, made use of it with success: we sewed a great quantity of baling-oakum to a large piece of canvas, which we let down by two ropes, one on each side of the bow of the ship: in making way, she sucked this under, close to her bottom; and, when it reached the leak, it was forced in by the intruding water, and obstructed its passage so much, that we kept it under with a single pump. Providentially, too, at this instant, a breeze sprang up, and we steered towards the land, the boats going before, in quest of a harbour, which they also happily found, at about two or three leagues distance. On the 14th of June, we dropped anchor in the mouth of it; but the entrance into it was so narrow, that we were obliged to place buoys all the way, to steer by. While we lay on the rock, it was calm; and, from the time we left it, till this day, it blew gently; but now it began to blow hard, which prevented us from getting into the bay till the 18th; when we reached the desired haven, though not without some danger, the ship having several times touched the ground.

When we threw the guns overboard, we fixed buoys to them, intending, if we escaped, to have heaved them up again; but, on attempting it, we found it was impracticable.

Soon after we arrived in the bay, we laid the ship on a steep bank, on the side of a river; set up tents on shore, unloaded her, carried all the cargo and provisions into them, and there lodged and accommodated our sick.

On the 22d, we examined the ship's bottom, and found a large hole, through the planks into the hold, which had a piece of coral-rock, half a yard square, sticking in it: the same rock, therefore, that endangered us, yielded us the principal means of our redemption; for, had not this fragment intruded into the leak, in all probability the ship would have sunk.

We lost no time, but immediately set about repairing the ship's bottom, and in a few days made it sound again. In the mean time, the boats were sent out, in search

search of another passage, which they found, and returned to the ship on the 3d of July.

On the 4th of July, the ship was carried to the other side of the river, and examined thoroughly ; but, being found in good condition, she was soon placed in her former station ; where she was loaded, and properly fitted to proceed on the voyage.

During the time we staid here, we picked up a great many natural curiosities from the reef we struck upon, consisting of a variety of curious shells, most of which were entirely new to Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander. We met also with many new species of fish, Madreporas and other curious corals ; sea-weed and other beautiful marine productions.

On shore we were not less successful. Of vegetables, we found *Glycine rosea*, which yields a sort of bean purslain, that eats very well, boiled ; *Cicacircinalis*, the kernels of which, roasted, tasted like parched pease ; but it made some of our people sick, who ate of it : of this fruit, they make a kind of sago in the East-Indies : we cut down many of them for the cabbage, which is very good food. We found also a black purple fruit, with a kernel in it which had a flat sweet taste ; two sorts of fruit like pears, having stony sides, somewhat like the Guava, and of a very indifferent taste ; a small-leaved plant, that smelt like lemon and orange peel, and made an agreeable substitute for tea ; the E peea, Taro, E ow-haee, and E peepee, of Otaheite : also wild Plantain, like the *Meyia* of Otaheite, which is very full of seed, and has hardly any pulp ; a sort of fig-tree, that bears fruit on the main stem, which tastes very insipid ; the Etee and Eroa, of which the natives of Otaheite make the best lines ; many gum-trees, and a great number of other plants, among which was a beautiful *Nymphea*, with blue and white petals.

Of birds, we found grey pigeons, with red beaks and reddish brown crests, which ate very well ; two sorts of small doves ; two sorts of beautiful perroquets ; a very uncommon hawk, pied black and white ; several other sorts of hawks ; large black cocatoes, with scarlet and orange-coloured feathers on their tails, and some white spots between the beak and the ear, as well as one on each wing ;



wing; the goat-fucker, or churn-owl; merops, or bee-eaters; large bats; a small bird, with wattles of a deep orange red; a bird like a Tetrao, having wattles of a fine ultramarine colour, and whose beak and legs were black; an owl, having the iris of its eyes gold colour, the pupil of them dark blue; a large black and white gull, with a bright yellow beak, on the gibbous part of which was a spot of scarlet; the corners of its mouth, and irides of the eyes, were of a bright scarlet colour; the legs and feet a greenish yellow: a black-bird, of the oyster-cracker genus, with a bright red beak, except toward the point, where it was yellow; the iris of its eyes scarlet; the irides of them bright orange; the feet and legs of a pale-red colour: a large olive-coloured bird of the loxia genus, having the iris of its eyes of a gall-stone colour, and the pupils of them black: a black and white shag, the iris of whose eyes was of a fine dark-green colour, the pupils black; the skin which surrounded the eyes was of a verditer-green colour; the beak a pale grey; on each side of which was a bare yellow spot; the feet were black: a large pigeon, the iris of the eyes of which was of a blood colour, the pupils of them black; their irides of a carmine colour; its legs and feet pale red. The two last were taken in a bay called Tasmano Bay. The black and white hawk before-mentioned, had the iris of its eyes very broad, of a rich scarlet colour, inclining to orange; the beak was black, the cera dirty grey yellow; the feet were of a gold or deep buff colour, like king's-yellow. Besides these, we saw many other curious birds.

Of quadrupeds, there are goats, wolves, a small red animal about the size of a squirrel; a spotted one of the viverra kind; and an animal of a kind nearly approaching the mus genus, about the size of a grey-hound, that had a head like a fawn's; lips and ears, which it throws back, like a hare's; on the upper jaw six large teeth; on the under one two only; with a short and small neck, near to which are the fore-feet, which have five toes each, and five hooked claws; the hinder legs are long, especially from the last joint, which, from the callosity below it, seems as if it lies flat on the ground when the animal descends any declivity; and each foot had four long toes, two of them behind, placed a great way back, the inner one of which has two claws; the two other toes were in the middle, and resembled a hoof, but one of them was much larger than the other. The tail, which is carried like a grey-hound's, was almost as long as the body,

U

and

and tapered gradually to the end. The chief bulk of this animal is behind; the belly being largest, and the back rising toward the posteriors. The whole body is covered with short ash-coloured hair; and the flesh of it tasted like a hare's, but has a more agreeable flavour.

Mr. Banks found, in the woods, an Opossum\*, with two young ones sucking at her breasts.

There were many alligators on the coast, some of them very large, and we frequently saw them swimming round the ship.

We found also several sorts of snakes, ants, and a small culex, or fly, which is not bigger than a grain of sand; the bite or sting of which was venomous, and caused protuberances on the skin, which itched violently.

Of fish, we found many different sorts, and a variety of beautiful shell-fish; among them three sorts of oysters; some were found in lagoons; some adhering to the mangrove; and others along the shore: large cavalhe, or scomber; large mullets, some flat-fish, a great number of small scombri; and skate or ray-fish; one of which, that we caught, was curiously marked on the back with polygons finely coloured; and another of an orbicular figure, with a blue grey-coloured back, and white belly, which tasted like veal; some other parts like beef; and the entrails as agreeable as turtle. We caught also turtles of a bright green colour, some of which weighed near four hundred pounds†.

The natives, who were naked, though of a diminutive size, ran very swiftly, and were very merry and facetious. Their bones were so small, that I could more than span their ancles; and their arms too, above the elbow joint. The tallest we saw measured but five feet nine inches; though their slenderness made

\* This creature has a membranous bag near the stomach in which it conceals and carries its young when it is apprehensive of danger.

† On opening a turtle that we caught we found part of a wooden lance in it, which had gone in by the breast before the calapee.



them appear taller, most of them were about five feet five inches; and were painted with red and white in various figures. The colour of their skin was like that of wood-foot. They had flattish noses, moderate-sized mouths, regular well-set large teeth, tinged with yellow. Most of them had cut off the hair from their heads; but some of them wore their hair, which was curled and bushy, and their beards frizzled. On their breasts and hips were corresponding marks like ridges, or seams, raised above the rest of the flesh, which looked like the cicatrices of ill-healed wounds. Some of them were painted with red streaks across the body, and others streaked over the face with white, which they called Car-banda. Some of them had a small hair-rope about their loins, and one about an arm, made of human hair. They had also a bag that hung by their necks, which they carried shell-fish in. Their noses had holes bored in them, through which they drew a piece of white bone about three or five inches long, and two round. [See pl. XXVI. fig. 13. and pl. XXVII.] One of them had his ears bored in like manner, and pieces of bone hung in them. Some of them had necklaces made of oval pieces of bright shells, which lay imbricated over one another, and linked together by two strings. The women, who did not approach nearer to us than the opposite shore, had feathers stuck on the crown of their heads, fastened, as we were informed, to a piece of gum.

They had lances and levers, very neatly made of a reddish wood; and had two pieces of bone, joined together with pitch, that stood out at the end of them. To polish their lances they made use of the *ficus riduola*, which served the purpose of a rasp. Their canoes were made out of the trunks of trees; had an outrigger; and eight outriggers on which they laid their lances. Their paddles were long in the blade. To throw the water out of their canoes, they used a large shell called the Persian-crown.

Their language was not harsh, as may be seen by the following vocabulary, and they articulated their words very distinctly, though, in speaking, they made a great motion with their lips, and uttered their words vociferously, especially when they meant to shew their dissent or disapprobation. When they were pleased, and would manifest approbation, they said *Hee*, with a long flexion of the voice,

in a high and shrill tone. They often said Tut, tut, many times together, but we knew not what they meant by it, unless it was intended to express astonishment. At the end of this Tut, they sometimes added Urr, and often whistled when they were surprised.



### A VOCABULARY of the Language of the People of NEW HOLLAND.

Bamma,	<i>A man.</i>
Mootjel,	<i>A woman.</i>
Dunjo,	<i>A father.</i>
Tumurre, or jumaurre,	<i>A son.</i>
Baityebai,	<i>Bones.</i>
Tulkoore,	<i>Hair.</i>
Garmbe,	<i>Blood.</i>
Wageegeee,	<i>The head.</i>
Eiyamoac,	<i>The crown of the head.</i>
Morye, or moree,	<i>The hair of the head.</i>
Walloo,	<i>The temples.</i>
Peete,	<i>The forehead.</i>
Meül,	<i>The eyes.</i>
Garbar,	<i>The eye-brows.</i>
Poetya,	<i>The eye-lids.</i>
Melea,	<i>The ears.</i>
Bonjoo,	<i>The nose.</i>
Yembe,	<i>The lips.</i>
Mulère, or môle,	<i>The teeth.</i>
Unjar.	<i>The tongue.</i>
Jacal, or tacal,	<i>The chin.</i>
Waller, jeamball, or teamball,	<i>The beard.</i>
Doomboo,	<i>The neck.</i>

Morco!



Morcol,	<i>The throat.</i>
Coyor,	<i>The breast.</i>
Coyoor,	<i>The nipples.</i>
Melmal,	<i>The pit of the stomach.</i>
Gippa,	<i>The belly.</i>
Toolpoor,	<i>The navel.</i>
Mocoo,	<i>The back.</i>
Eëimbar,	<i>The sides or ribs.</i>
Aco, or acol,	<i>The arms.</i>
Camor, or gamorga,	<i>The arm-pits.</i>
Mangal,	<i>The hands.</i>
Eboorbalga,	<i>The thumb.</i>
Egalbaiga,	<i>The three fingers next the thumb.</i>
Nakil, or eboornakil,	<i>The little finger.</i>
Coenjoo,	<i>The hips.</i>
Booca,	<i>The anus.</i>
Coman,	<i>The thighs.</i>
Atta,	<i>The ham.</i>
Pongo,	<i>The knees.</i>
Peegoorga,	<i>The legs.</i>
Chongarn,	<i>The ankle.</i>
Edamal,	<i>The feet.</i>
Kniororor,	<i>The heel.</i>
Chumal,	<i>The sole of the foot.</i>
Jamboingar, or tamboingar,	<i>The toes.</i>
Kolke,	<i>The nails.</i>
Pandal,	<i>A sore.</i>
Mòro,	<i>The scars on their bodies.</i>
Tennapuke, or jennapuke.	<i>The hole in their nostrils made for the bone ornament.</i>
Cotta,	<i>A dog.</i>
Kangooroo,	<i>The leaping quadruped.</i>
Taquol, or jaquol,	<i>An animal of the viverra kind.</i>

Waowa,

Waowa,	<i>The crest of a bird.</i>
Poetyo,	<i>A feather.</i>
Goromoco,	<i>A falcon.</i>
Wanda,	<i>A cockatoo.</i>
Perpore,	<i>The blue-beaded loryquet.</i>
Baipai,	<i>The spotted starling.</i>
Poteea,	<i>Fish.</i>
Cooenda, or yolcumba,	<i>The spotted shark.</i>
Jckkerra,	<i>The serrated bone of the sting ray.</i>
Putai,	<i>A turtle.</i>
Poenja,	<i>A male turtle.</i>
Mameingo,	<i>A female turtle.</i>
Maboo,	<i>The tail of a turtle.</i>
Mailletja,	<i>Echinus pentaphylodes, or flat sea-egg.</i>
Bingabinga,	<i>Echinus ovarius viridis, the greenish prickly sea-egg.</i>
Kanawoongo,	<i>Haliotes, or ear-shell.</i>
Gomego,	<i>Cyprea tygris, the tyger cowry.</i>
Metieul,	<i>The telescope-shell.</i>
Ebapee,	<i>The other mud-shell, or lipped telescope.</i>
Chicoai,	<i>The Persian-crown shell.</i>
Kurrow, or kurooe.	<i>Spondylus, the hinge oyster.</i>
Moenje,	<i>Chama, or smooth cockle.</i>
Tabugga, jabugga, or chapaua,	<i>A fly.</i>
Walboolbool,	<i>A butterfly.</i>
Wolbit,	<i>Plantains.</i>
Depoor,	<i>Ficus ridula.</i>
Badjoor,	<i>Cicas circinalis.</i>
Balanguir,	<i>Convolvulus Brasiliensis.</i>
Bandeer,	<i>Abrus pricatorius.</i>
Maracotn,	<i>Taro, or yam.</i>
Nampar,	<i>Bamboo.</i>
Maiye,	<i>A branch or stalk.</i>
Dora,	<i>A leaf they chewed.</i>



Keremande,	<i>A cocoa-nut-shell.</i>
Darnda,	<i>The redgum.</i>
Zoocoo,	<i>Wood.</i>
Maianang,	<i>Fire.</i>
Poorai,	<i>Water.</i>
Poapoa,	<i>Earth.</i>
Galan,	<i>The sun.</i>
Wulgar,	<i>The clouds.</i>
Kere,	<i>The sky.</i>
Walba,	<i>A stone.</i>
Toowal, or joowal,	<i>Sand.</i>
Yendoo, or jangoo,	<i>A basket.</i>
Goorga,	<i>A rope, or line.</i>
Paijall,	<i>A string made of a sinew.</i>
Charngala,	<i>A bag.</i>
Gulka,	<i>A lance.</i>
Melpairo, or melpier,	<i>The hand-board of the lance.</i>
Tapool,	<i>The bone ornament they wear through the septum nasi, or division of the nostrils.</i>
Geannar,	<i>A mother-of-pearl necklace.</i>
Carbanda, or carball,	<i>The white paint on their bodies.</i>
Maragau, or emaragu,	<i>A canoe.</i>
Malepair,	<i>The lever of the canoe.</i>
Garboora, or garburra,	<i>The out-rigger.</i>
Mairbarra,	<i>Smooth.</i>
Boota, bootina, yette, and yatta,	<i>To eat.</i>
Chuchala,	<i>To drink.</i>
Meerya,	<i>To roast or dress victuals.</i>
Tucaï, or tucaiya,	<i>To sit down.</i>
Marra,	<i>To go.</i>
Mingoore,	<i>To dance.</i>
Mailelel,	<i>To swim.</i>
Pelenyo,	<i>To paddle.</i>
Aibudje,	<i>To yawn.</i>

Poona,

Poona,	<i>To sleep or rest on.</i>
Wonananio,	<i>Asleep.</i>
Tocaya,	<i>Sit down.</i>
Kidde,	<i>Get along, or go before.</i>
Cowai,	<i>Let us go ; Come along.</i>
Hala, hala, mée,	<i>Come hither.</i>
Walgal, or walangal,	<i>Uncover ; take off ; shew.</i>
Walga,	<i>Strip, or uncover yourself.</i>
Gorra, gorra,	<i>Again, again.</i>
Chambara,	<i>Throw it away.</i>
Yeiye,	<i>Is it this ?</i>
Yarba,	<i>That's all.</i>
Cutjalla,	<i>Tie it on.</i>
Kono, kono,	<i>I cannot do it.</i>
Eya & ba,	<i>That, or this.</i>
Te,	<i>An article the same as A, or The.</i>
Chaloece,	<i>An expression of surprize !</i>
Yarea, & charo,	<i>Words uttered in a tone of pleasing surprize, on seeing the whiteness of some of our peo- ple's skin who had taken off their cloaths, in order to bathe.</i>
Yecalca,	<i>Expressed on seeing their spears that we had taken.</i>
Yerchee,	<i>Expressed on feeling the effects of a burning- glass.</i>

## M E N S N A M E S.

Yappa Gadugoo,	Tapuolyer,	Dunggrea,
Yarconigo,	Balgomee,	Yaparico,
Garranattoo,	Goota,	Taijaputta.

Cabeeleelce, coyelaillo, halle-cutta, yerba, yerbe, yerga, are words they frequently made use of, but the meaning of them we could not find out.

As



As a mark of dissent, they said Aipa, several times, and this was the only word, that we could distinguish, to accord with the Otaheitean language.

On our arrival, the natives shewed themselves, on the land opposite to us, by degrees; and, after having thrown them some fish, they ventured to approach us in a canoe; landed by us; laid down their lances, and came forward to meet us, shewing signs of amity as they came along; but they were so much abashed at first, that they took but little notice of us, or of any thing about us, though they did not seem to be apprehensive of danger. We made them some presents, which they accepted, but did not shew much fondness for them. They became, at length, more free when only three of us were present, and made signs for us to take off some of our garments, which we did accordingly. They viewed them with surprize; but they seemed to have had no idea of cloaths; nor did they express a desire for any; and a shirt, which we gave them, was found afterwards torn into rags.

The natives shewed a great antipathy to our tame birds, and attempted to throw one of them over-board; and, a little before we left the land, they set fire to the grass round the spot where we had pitched our tent; but, luckily for us, most of our things were on-board, or they would, in all probability, have been consumed, as the fire burnt very fiercely, and had like to have destroyed a litter of pigs, and some other things. We shot at one of them, who ran up the hill with a fire-brand, and wounded him. Several of them came to us afterwards, and made peace with us.

They seem to live mostly on shell-fish, the remains of which we frequently saw about their fires, which they procure by twirling a piece of wood in a hole, made in another piece, till it is lit up into a flame.

Some of our people, in a pinnace, went in search of a passage to go out of the bay, and landed on a coral reef, where they met with a great number of shells; and, among the rest, the spondylus, and a large sort of trochus, or top-shell, with which they loaded the boat.

On the 4th of August, in the morning, we weighed anchor, left the harbour, and steered N. E. till we were near the Turtle Reefs; there we anchored again, and sent the boats on shore, which returned with a turtle, a large skate, and a great number of clams, a sort of cockle, some of them very large.

On the 5th, it blew so hard that we could not weigh anchor till afternoon, and then we stood to the N. E. but, meeting with several shoals, we were obliged to cast anchor again, as the wind blew fresh, and were detained till the 10th. On the morning of which we weighed anchor again, but the wind blowing hard from the S. S. E. we drove, and were obliged at length to let go two anchors, and rode by the first with near two hundred fathoms of cable.

We had chiefly strong gales of wind after the sun's approach toward us from the tropic of Capricorn; and, on account of the many shoals hereabout, we did not go directly out to sea, but kept near the shore, and passed by some low islands well covered with trees.

We also saw three high islands, and sailed betwixt them and the main: the latter appeared very low, barren, and sandy.

Toward evening we were on a sudden alarmed by the appearance of land all round us: the weather being hazy, and the wind blowing fresh, we hauled in our wind, and came to under a bluff point of the main.

On the 13th, in the morning, we weighed anchor, and stood to the eastward, close to one of the high islands which we had passed before, and so on through a break of the reef, which was about half a mile wide. This reef, which the captain discovered



covered from the top of the last-mentioned island, ran farther than the eye could reach, on the outermost side of all the rest, like a wall, and the sea broke very high upon it: We found no founding in the passage, latitude  $14^{\circ} 38'$ , and we stood to the N. E. in order to get out to sea, intending to keep to the northward on the morrow.

On the 15th, about noon, we saw land again in latitude  $13^{\circ}$  S. also a continuation of the reef which ran along-side of it. In the evening, standing right in for land, we were alarmed by suddenly discovering that reef extended to leeward of us, upon which we hauled in our wind, and crouded all the sail we could, that we might be able to weather the farthest point of it. The wind was easterly this day, more moderate, and the swell of the sea less.

On the 16th, at the dawn of day, we had a reef under our lee, at about a mile distance, which alarmed us much. When it was quite light, we saw breakers all round us excepting to windward, where we came in. The wind failing us about midnight, we tacked about, being afraid to stand any farther; and the wind's still failing was the cause that we drove on the reef, which we now neared apace. In this dilemma, we first hoisted out our small boats (the long boat being stowed, and the pinnacle repairing) to tow her off, and got a pair of sweeps rigged out of the gun-room ports, to turn her head about. A slight puff of wind gave us some hopes of effecting it; but that failing, we approached so near the breakers, that there was but one heave of the swell between them and the ship. However, with our pulling, the alteration of the tide, and another slight puff of wind, we cleared her a little more from the reef, and stood to where we saw a break in the reef to leeward, there we hoped, at least, to find ground to anchor upon; but, when we got to the entrance of it, we were driven off by a ripple of the tide that set out with great force; which, however, proved very providential, as we afterward found there were rocks in the passage, and that it was not a proper break. We then stood to windward, intending either to get out as we came in, or a little farther down to leeward, where the reef seemed detached; but, perceiving, soon after, the tops of some rocks in the passage, we declined attempting it. The wind again dying away, we were at a loss what to do for the best; but, at last, determined on sending some of our people in the boat to examine into the appear-

ance of another break still farther to leeward ; and, a light breeze springing up from the east, we resolved to push in there, though the passage was but narrow, which we happily accomplished, being assisted by the tide ; and we anchored between the reef and the shore, in fifteen fathoms water ; though, at the very edge of these reefs, we had no sounding at one hundred and fifty-five fathoms. At our first entrance into this place we had very unequal soundings ; sometimes finding no bottom ; and one fathom farther finding it with twenty fathoms of line. This, we apprehended, was occasioned by the coral rocks which rise up almost perpendicular. Latitude  $12^{\circ} 36'$ .

On the 17th, in the morning, we sent some men in the boat to the reef for turtles and clams, but they returned without any of the former, and with but few clams, though they were of a large size.

The reefs were covered with a numberless variety of beautiful corallines of all colours and figures, having here and there interstices of very white sand. These made a pleasing appearance under water, which was smooth on the inside of the reef, while it broke all along the outside, and may be aptly compared to a grove of shrubs growing under water. Numbers of beautiful coloured fishes make their residence amongst these rocks, and may be caught by hand on the high part of the reef at low water. There are also crabs, molusca of various sorts, and a great variety of curious shell-fish, which adhere to the old dead coral that forms the reef.

On the 18th, we weighed anchor, and stood along shore on the inside of the reef, thinking that would be the safest and best way of finding the passage between New-Guinea and this land : we met with a great many islands, shoals, and reefs, and came to at night. We kept along shore till the 21st, and, at noon, in latitude  $10^{\circ} 36'$ , we came to a great number of islands near the main land, which tended away to the S. W. We stood through between two of these islands, to the west, and found a very strong tide, which carried us along briskly, and gave us hopes that this was a passage between New Holland and New Guinea. At length we came to, and the pinnacle was sent on shore to a spot where we saw some of the natives stand gazing at us ; but when the boat's company landed, they immediately fled.



fled. The captain, and some others, went up to the top of a hill, and, seeing a clear passage, they hoisted a jack, and fired a volley, which was answered by the marines below, and the marines by three volleys from the ship, and three cheers from the main shrouds. The natives were armed with lances, and one of them had a bow in his hand. In other respects they were much like the people we saw last, being quite naked, and of a dark colour. This land was more rocky, and less sandy than we had lately seen, but still very barren; though the flats, indeed, were covered with many verdant trees. We also discovered very high land at a great distance to the N. E. which we took for the land of New Guinea.

We were obliged to keep a constant look-out while we passed between the reef and the land, as it was full of shoals, reefs, sandy keys, and small islands; and had we not come in again, we should not have found a passage.

On the 23d, we had light breezes from the N. and S.W. with some calms, and were certain of being in a strait, which seemed to be not very remote from the river Van Speult in Carpentaria; the land to the north being made up of a cluster of islands. We found shallow water all through this strait, which we named Endeavour Straits; and went over a bar that had only three fathoms and a half water. About noon, we saw a small island covered with birds-dung of a white colour; and some of our people went off in a boat, and shot a score of birds called Boobies.

On the 24th, in the morning, the cable broke in weighing up the anchor, which obliged us to drop another, and detained us all day sweeping for it with much trouble; but, the next morning, we got it up, and soon after were under way, and stood on to the N. W. with a fine breeze from the east. About two o'clock, in the afternoon, we were much alarmed by finding ourselves amongst a parcel of small shoals. These shoals were discovered by the water's appearing a little brownish. They consisted of rocks upon which there were only two and three fathoms water; and, though there was a pretty large swell, they did not break. There was one not half a cable's length from the ship. We had not more than from six to eleven fathoms water in this sea when we were out of sight of land. After examining around for the safest way to get clear of these shoals, we weighed anchor and stood out, first southerly, and then to the west, till we deepened our water to eleven fathoms;

fathoms; and then supposed that we passed near some part of that great shoal, stretching round part of the island of Hogeland, on the north of Carpentaria.

On the 26th, we steered west all day, with a fine breeze from the east, and deepened our water to twenty-five fathoms, in latitude  $10^{\circ} 10'$ .

On the 27th, steering northward for the coast of New Guinea, we were surprized again by the appearance of a shoal all round us; on examination, however, we found it was only a sort of spawn swimming upon the water, such as we had often seen before, that gave it that appearance. We had, on this day, twenty-nine fathoms water and under. Latitude  $9^{\circ} 56'$ .

On the 28th, about noon, we got into very broken ground, the soundings being, on a sudden, from three fathoms to ten, and continued very irregular all the afternoon, with hard ground. This, however, did not prevent us from making all the sail we could, and without a boat ahead. About four o'clock in the afternoon, we saw low land. Toward the evening it blew very hard from the S. E. and we stood E. N. E. and were in great danger of striking. As the water was so shoal, we stood backwards and forwards all night; and, through the good providence of God, met with no accident. Latitude  $8^{\circ} 54'$ .

On the 29th, we stood in for the land of New Guinea, which looked very flat, and was covered with trees, among which we saw a great many palms that overtopped the rest; but whether there were cocoa-nuts we could not get near enough, for the shoals, to determine. We saw an opening which had the appearance of a river's mouth; and many smokes on the land. In the afternoon we were abreast of a point of land, which we supposed was that distinguished in the maps by the name of Cape Valsch, or False Cape: From this cape the land continued low, but did not tend to the S. E. as we expected. We could not keep near the shore, the soundings being only from five to ten fathoms, at three or four leagues distance from land. The water was very white and muddy, like that of a river, and had a sandy bottom. Latitude  $8^{\circ} 19'$ .

On



On the 30th, we coasted along about three or four leagues from the land, which was very flat. Our soundings were much the same as the day before. This sand-bank extends about a league farther out to sea, as we judged from the dark-coloured water which we saw from the ship. In the evening, the land seemed to end in a point, and tend away to the north. The sea was very full of some stuff like chaff, and we saw some smoke upon land. Latitude  $8^{\circ} 39'$ .

On the 31st, in the night, a current carried us away so far to westward, that it was evening, the next day, before we made land again. We were now pretty certain that we had got round Cape Valsch by the smoothness of the water, and thought the sand-bank would have broken off here, but it rather increased, for we had only four fathoms water, and, at the same time, could not see the land.

After beating about for three days in quest of land, being prevented getting in with it by the wind setting east, on the 3d, in the morning, we made the coast again, and approached to within three or four leagues of the shore: A party of our people went, in the pinnace, to examine the country while we stood off and on. They soon returned with an account that a great number of the natives threatened them on the beach, who had pieces of bamboo, or canes, in their hands, out of which they puffed some smoke, and then threw some darts at them about a fathom long, made of reeds, and pointed of Etoa wood, which were barbed, but very blunt. Our people fired upon them, but they did not appear to be intimidated; our men, therefore, thought proper to embark. They observed that these people were not negroes, as has been reported, but are much like the natives of New Holland, having shock hair, and being entirely naked. They also saw a plenty of cocoa-nuts growing on the trees, as well as lying in heaps on the ground; and plantains, bread-fruit, and Peea. The country appeared very fertile, having a great number of different sorts of trees, which formed very thick woods. The soil is very rich, and produces much larger plants than grow on the islands. Latitude  $6^{\circ} 15'$ .

On the 5th, in the morning, which was moon-light, about one o'clock, we passed two low islands, which, we supposed, are the southermost of the Arow  
Isles

Isles that are set down about this parallel. There is a fine fresh trade-wind, which generally blows easterly in the day time, but comes about at night more southerly, and blows much stronger. We kept a W. S. W. course, being in latitude  $7^{\circ} 24'$  south, about twelve degrees from the island of Timor. Since the 3d instant we have had from twelve to twenty fathoms water till this day, and then our soundings were much deeper.

The Arow Isles belong to the Dutch East-India company, who go there from Banda, and trade for sago, birds of paradise, and New-Guinea slaves.

On the 6th, in the forenoon, in latitude of  $8^{\circ} 15'$ , we saw an island to the N.W. of us, of considerable extent, being about six or seven leagues of flat level land; and, by the latitude we were in, we supposed it was Timor land, which is laid down in the maps more to the westward. We had a very fresh trade-wind from the S. E. and no soundings.

On the 7th, we had a fresh trade-wind from the east, with clear weather, latitude  $9^{\circ} 31'$ , and saw abundance of very small flying-fish, and some porpoises.

On the 9th, we had light breezes, or calms, all day. Mr. Banks went out in the small boat, and shot between thirty and forty large boobies, which prey upon the flying-fish. In the evening we saw land to the N. W. of us, and supposed it to be about twenty leagues distant, which being very high, we thought, at first, it had been clouds. Latitude  $9^{\circ} 46'$ .

On the 10th, we had light breezes or calms all day, and were still at a great distance from land. We made an observation of the sun this day, and of the moon at night, to determine the longitude, and found ourselves in  $233^{\circ} 33'$  west from London; and our latitude, by observation, was  $10^{\circ} 1'$  south, by which we were certain that a current had driven us to the south, as we kept our course to the west. We saw several sharks, dolphins, and barracootas, about the ship, and caught a large shark.

On



On the 12th, in the morning, we had light breezes from the west, but, in the afternoon, it veered round to the south. We were on the east side of Timor, and about one mile and a half from the shore, which is very strait, and has a sandy beach; the inner side of which has a skirting of Etoa trees. We saw the opening of a river which might make a snug harbour. Both the high and low land is covered with wood, amongst which are many palms on the hills: we saw no house, or any human being, but a great many smokes.

On the 15th, after having been troubled several days with light breezes from the S. W. we had the wind N. E. and E. and stood southward to weather it. The land, this day, appeared very scabby to the naked eye, but, viewed through our glasses, we discovered these to be clear places, many of which were fenced about, and had houses upon them, the eaves of which reached to the ground. We saw also a great many palm-trees on the beach, as well as on the hills, some parts of which were cultivated. We had a bold shore, with hardly any beach. Toward evening the land near the shore appeared much flatter and more level; behind which, at a great distance, we discovered many high hills. Latitude  $10^{\circ} 1'$ .

On the 16th, in the morning, we had a brisk trade-wind from the east, and a view of the island of Rotté, which lies off the south end of Timor, and passed between it and Anamaboo, which lies to the S. W. of Timor. Both these islands were much lower than Timor; neither did they appear so fertile. We saw no houses, smoke, or cultivated land upon them, but many palms of a kind we were not acquainted with. We had a fine brisk trade-wind this day, but no soundings; latitude, by observation, was  $10^{\circ} 24'$ , about four or five leagues from the southernmost part of Timor. In the night, between ten and eleven o'clock, before the moon was up, we saw a remarkable phenomenon, which appeared in the south quarter, extending one point west, and two east, and was about twenty degrees high, like a glow of red rising from fire, striped with white, which shot up from the horizon in a perpendicular direction, alternately appearing and disappearing.

On the 17th in the morning, we saw a small island, which, by its appearance, promised nothing, being brown, and almost bare, excepting of palms, and a few other trees. On our approaching nearer to it, we saw several flocks of cattle, which induced us to steer to leeward and send the boat on shore; in the mean time, standing off and on, several of the natives came to them on horseback, who spoke a little Portuguese, and told them there was a bay on the other side of the next point where the ship might anchor, and we might meet with a supply of provisions. We pursued our course round the point, and anchored in a very large bay. In the evening we saw a village, situate on the side of a hill, that had Dutch colours hoisted in it. The next morning some of us went on shore, and waited on the Raja, or king, who received us very graciously, and promised to supply us with every thing, if the Dutchman pleased: The Dutchman vouchsafed to consent, and made us a visit on board, in company with the Raja and his attendants: they dined with us; were very ceremonious, and left us, after having made specious professions of friendship. The next day some of our people returned the visit, and dined with them. After much shuffling on their part, we made shift to obtain a large number of fowls, eight bullocks, several goats, hogs, a great quantity of syrup, and a few fruits.

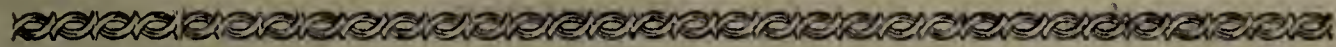
They informed us that they had been without rain in the country for seven months, and that the herbage was almost burnt up.

This island, which is divided into five districts, is about thirty miles long; is called Savoo, and lies south of India. It contains near nine thousand inhabitants, and for these nine years past has been possessed by the Dutch, who have a resident here, and trade to India, Macassar, and Timor; and, from this island, furnish Concordia with provisions. It was formerly in the possession of the Portuguese, who left it about an hundred years since.

As we were not permitted to examine the country, or its products, the Dutchman not suffering us to go any where without a strong guard, I amused myself in picking up, from the natives of the island, what particulars I could learn in respect to their language, from which I afterwards formed the following vocabulary.

A





A VOCABULARY of the LANGUAGE of the Natives of the  
Island of SAVOO.

Momonne,	<i>A man.</i>
Neekeeng-ïro,	<i>A grown man.</i>
Monama,	<i>An old man.</i>
Monecopai,	<i>A boy.</i>
Mobunne,	<i>A woman.</i>
Anawuneekee,	<i>A child.</i>
Càtoo,	<i>The head.</i>
Row catoo,	<i>The hair of the head.</i>
Bocòlo,	<i>The crown of the head.</i>
Otaile,	<i>The temples.</i>
Tangarei,	<i>The forehead.</i>
Màdda,	<i>The eyes.</i>
Ròw na màdda,	<i>The eye-brows.</i>
Dungèena madda,	<i>The eye-lids.</i>
Roòpa-gàpoong,	<i>The eye-lashes.</i>
Wodeèloo,	<i>The ears.</i>
Sivànga,	<i>The nose.</i>
Roä fivànga,	<i>The nostrils.</i>
Cavarànga,	<i>The cheeks.</i>
Larà-voòboo,	<i>The mouth.</i>
Koorìng-voòboo deeda,	<i>The upper lip.</i>
Koorìng-voòboo vava,	<i>The under lip.</i>
Sungeèdee,	<i>The gums.</i>
Ingootoo deeda,	<i>The upper teeth.</i>
Ingootoo vava,	<i>The under teeth.</i>
Vaio,	<i>The tongue.</i>

Pàgavee,	<i>The chin.</i>
Row, na voobo,	<i>The mustachios.</i>
Row, vee,	<i>The beard.</i>
Lacòco,	<i>The neck.</i>
Làdogòro,	<i>The throat.</i>
Soofoo,	<i>The breasts.</i>
Caboo soosoo,	<i>The nipples.</i>
Dùloo,	<i>The belly.</i>
Afloo,	<i>The navel.</i>
Kòlogoòno,	<i>The shoulders.</i>
Càmacoò,	<i>The arms.</i>
Làrabòrro,	<i>The arm-pits.</i>
Vosëoo,	<i>The elbows.</i>
Baibaö,	<i>The wrist.</i>
Wùlaba,	<i>The hand.</i>
Daraba,	<i>The palm of the hand.</i>
Dunëäba,	<i>The back of the hand.</i>
Kisooë aiaï,	<i>The thumb.</i>
Kisooë Aiyoooyoo,	<i>The forefinger.</i>
Kisooë Aitororro,	<i>The two next fingers.</i>
Kisooë Eikee,	<i>The little finger.</i>
Koo-oo,	<i>The nails.</i>
Voorai,	<i>The backside.</i>
Tooga,	<i>The thighs.</i>
Roòtoo,	<i>The knees.</i>
Làracrùkee,	<i>The hams.</i>
Baibo,	<i>The legs.</i>
Dooloomoònoo baibo,	<i>The calves of the legs.</i>
Pàcalaï,	<i>The ancles.</i>
Duneeäla,	<i>The feet.</i>
Woterdo,	<i>The heel.</i>
Dara yilla,	<i>The sole of the foot.</i>
Kisòodei yilla,	<i>The toes.</i>

Racäee,



Racäee,	<i>The skin.</i>
Killooë,	<i>The veins.</i>
Macoocooree,	<i>The flesh.</i>
Munje,	<i>Fat.</i>
Row,	<i>Hair.</i>
Cabao,	<i>A buffalo.</i>
Dejaro, or diaro,	<i>A horse.</i>
Vavee,	<i>A bog.</i>
Gnaca,	<i>A dog.</i>
Badoo gnaca,	<i>The barking of a dog.</i>
Kesävoo,	<i>A goat.</i>
Doomba,	<i>A sheep.</i>
Keë,	<i>A ewe.</i>
Maiö,	<i>A cat.</i>
Roolai,	<i>The tail of a quadruped.</i>
Doleela,	<i>A bird.</i>
Pangootoo,	<i>The beak of a bird.</i>
Carrow,	<i>The tail of a bird.</i>
Row-mannoo,	<i>Feathers.</i>
Dulloo,	<i>An egg.</i>
Manoo,	<i>A cock or hen.</i>
Raree-manoo,	<i>The comb of a cock.</i>
Tutuo-manoo,	<i>Cock-crowing.</i>
Kidicoo-manoo,	<i>Clucking of a hen.</i>
Nudoo,	<i>A fish.</i>
Unjoo,	<i>A turtle.</i>
Toodoolai,	<i>A libellula, or dragon-fly.</i>
Samala,	<i>A muscheater.</i>
Sotee,	<i>Nautilus pompilius. The large chambered nautilus, or sailor-shell.</i>
Kerogga,	<i>Coralline.</i>
Adjoo,	<i>A tree, and wood.</i>
La,	<i>The trunk of a tree.</i>
Coree, or koree,	<i>The bark of a tree.</i>

Calai,

Calai,	<i>A branch.</i>
Row,	<i>A leaf.</i>
Vooc,	<i>Fruit.</i>
Dooe, or Dooa,	<i>The syrup palm.</i>
Kililla,	<i>Areca.</i>
Ao,	<i>Chinam.</i>
Cananna,	<i>Piper betle.</i>
Nai,	<i>Tobacco.</i>
Vomoo,	<i>Plantains.</i>
Chevoos, ava,	<i>Oomarra, or sweet potatoes.</i>
Oobee,	<i>Ignames or yams.</i>
Cleeco,	<i>Bamboo.</i>
Dubboo,	<i>Sugar Cane.</i>
Leebee,	<i>Avirrhoa bilimbe.</i>
Boa seeree,	<i>Palm-fruit.</i>
Wafilaggee,	<i>Tamarinds.</i>
Wudyarroo,	<i>Limes.</i>
Yirroo,	<i>Oranges.</i>
Nicu,	<i>Cocoa-nuts.</i>
Arre,	<i>Rice.</i>
Kivoonoo,	<i>Cocoa-nut rind.</i>
Cadjco manoo,	<i>Cinnamon.</i>
Mangooroong-ootoo,	<i>Nutmegs.</i>
Wowdullo,	<i>Cloves.</i>
Vopaio,	<i>Black-pepper.</i>
Cootoo-codo,	<i>Ginger.</i>
Lodo,	<i>The sun.</i>
Wurroo,	<i>The moon.</i>
Leeroo,	<i>The sky.</i>
Miramoo,	<i>The clouds.</i>
Capoa-reere,	<i>The horizon.</i>
Demoo,	<i>The East.</i>
Va,	<i>The west.</i>
Wodai,	<i>The north.</i>
Wulloo,	<i>The south.</i>

Sabooai,



Sabooai,	<i>Smoke.</i>
Mireèngee,	<i>Cold.</i>
Kibàfoo,	<i>Heat.</i>
Aee,	<i>Fire.</i>
Ailei,	<i>Water.</i>
Aidàffee,	<i>The sea.</i>
Nova,	<i>The surf of the sea.</i>
Vorai, or rae,	<i>The earth.</i>
Càco,	<i>The land.</i>
Collolaide,	<i>The hills.</i>
Wawadoo,	<i>A stone.</i>
Lafilai,	<i>Sand.</i>
Buffee,	<i>Iron.</i>
Bulido,	<i>Lead.</i>
Millapoòdee,	<i>Silver,</i>
Millalàrra,	<i>Gold.</i>
Umoo,	<i>A house.</i>
Bagoo,	<i>A stool.</i>
Cabeeffa,	<i>A basket.</i>
Dupee,	<i>A mat.</i>
Lèöravoo,	<i>A looking-glass.</i>
Baraco,	<i>A box.</i>
Retaca,	<i>An axe.</i>
Ingootoo-tumoo,	<i>A comb.</i>
Toodee,	<i>A knife.</i>
Toodee-yampoo,	<i>A case-knife.</i>
Yobe,	<i>A sword.</i>
Kepocke,	<i>A long spear.</i>
Kepovarena,	<i>A cannon.</i>
Daire,	<i>A drum.</i>
Goola,	<i>Palm syrup.</i>
Booro,	<i>Bread.</i>
Dàgee,	<i>Mutton.</i>
Gàrra,	<i>Salt.</i>
Munje,	<i>Oil.</i>

Leepa,

Leepa,	<i>Cotton cheque.</i>
Seegee,	<i>The cotton cloth made on the island.</i>
Codo,	<i>A callico gown.</i>
Singoodoo,	<i>A palm bonnet.</i>
Oodoo,	<i>Beads.</i>
Gaddee,	<i>Large ivory rings.</i>
Tàtā,	<i>Tataow, or marks made in the skin.</i>
Màànadoo,	<i>A fish-hook.</i>
Cova,	<i>A boat.</i>
Joolee, or toolee.	<i>A large canoe.</i>
Capa,	<i>A ship.</i>
Dupoodeo,	<i>White.</i>
Cairara,	<i>Yellow.</i>
Dumuddee,	<i>Blue.</i>
Mingaroo,	<i>Green.</i>
Sooree,	<i>Red.</i>
Bulla,	<i>Black.</i>
Sao-lodo,	<i>The morning.</i>
Deeda-lodo,	<i>The forenoon.</i>
Nutoo-lodo,	<i>Noon.</i>
Maceo-lodo,	<i>Afternoon.</i>
Munda-lodo,	<i>The evening.</i>
Mudda,	<i>Midnight.</i>
Pooai,	<i>More.</i>
Taro,	<i>There.</i>
O,	<i>Yes.</i>
Tiràmacoòfee,	<i>Farewell.</i>
Bolè,	<i>Stay, wait a little.</i>
Buffoo,	<i>Enough, I am satisfied.</i>
Sillaèò,	<i>To see.</i>
Roädeèloo,	<i>To hear.</i>
Täiyiggce,	<i>To feel.</i>
Kiffoo,	<i>To smell.</i>
Gnää,	<i>To eat.</i>
Neenawei,	<i>To drink.</i>

Neeno-



Neeno-darao,	<i>To drink to one.</i>
Toonoo,	<i>To roast or bake.</i>
Varitai,	<i>To kindle or light.</i>
Jugge, or tugge,	<i>To kick.</i>
Tookoo,	<i>To Row.</i>
Voffee,	<i>To paddle.</i>
Ta laco,	<i>To bend.</i>
Ta puceo,	<i>To break.</i>
Ta seeo,	<i>To tear.</i>
Ta te,	<i>To cut.</i>
Ta soonne,	<i>To hide.</i>
Ta tucke,	<i>To lay by.</i>
Ta ingaree,	<i>To shew or take out.</i>
Ta teetoo,	<i>To rise.</i>
Ta tooe,	<i>To fall.</i>
Midyadee,	<i>To sit down.</i>
Ta eaco,	<i>To walk.</i>
Ta rai,	<i>To run.</i>
Ta mudje,	<i>To talk.</i>
Painyee marunga,	<i>To blow the nose.</i>
Painyee roo elloo,	<i>To spit.</i>
Ta bunge,	<i>To sneeze.</i>
Ta maia,	<i>To cough.</i>
Ta marree,	<i>To laugh.</i>
Picoongaca,	<i>To whine.</i>
Ta tanjee,	<i>To cry.</i>
Ta budje,	<i>To sleep.</i>
Maddee,	<i>To dye.</i>
Manu Diami,	<i>The Governor's name.</i>

## NUMERATION.

Iffe, or usse,	<i>One.</i>
Rooe,	<i>Two.</i>
Tulloo,	<i>Three.</i>
Uppa,	<i>Four.</i>
Lumee,	<i>Five.</i>
Unna,	<i>Six.</i>
Petoo,	<i>Seven.</i>
Aroo,	<i>Eight.</i>
Saio,	<i>Nine.</i>
Singooroo,	<i>Ten.</i>
Singooroo isse,	<i>Eleven.</i>
Singooroo rooe,	<i>Twelve, &amp;c.</i>
Rooingooroo,	<i>Twenty.</i>
Rooingooroo isse,	<i>Twenty-one, &amp;c.</i>
Tulloomooroo,	<i>Thirty.</i>
Tulloomooroo isse,	<i>Thirty-one, &amp;c.</i>
Uppangooroo,	<i>Forty.</i>
Lumingooroo,	<i>Fifty.</i>
Unnangooroo,	<i>Sixty.</i>
Peetoongooroo,	<i>Seventy.</i>
Aroongooroo,	<i>Eighty.</i>
Saiongooroo,	<i>Ninety.</i>
Singassoo,	<i>One hundred.</i>
Looang assoo,	<i>Two hundred.</i>
Setuppah,	<i>One thousand.</i>
Roo setuppah,	<i>Two thousand.</i>
Selacussa,	<i>Ten thousand.</i>
Serata,	<i>One hundred thousand.</i>
Sereboo,	<i>A million.</i>

After



After a stay of two or three days, we left Savoo, and, on the 1st of October, in the morning, discovered Java and Prince's Islands. We directed our course through the Straits of Sundy; and, in the afternoon, passed a small island, upon which we saw a very high hill, of a conical figure, and several small ones. This is called the Isle of Crocata: We saw also Pepper-Point. In the night, the weather was squally, and we had rain, with thunder and lightening. By our reckoning we found that Java Head is about  $14^{\circ} 22'$  to the west of Timor. We had a brisk trade-wind from the S. E. and very near over-shot the Straits; but not finding land, we hauled to the eastward, and luckily got into the Straits to the leeward of Prince's Island. Our latitude, at noon, was  $6^{\circ} 9'$ .

On the 2d, we sailed up as far as Angor Point, where we were becalmed, and waited for the current, which sets to the south till the monsoon shifts. We saw two Indiamen at anchor in Angor Bay. This was a pleasing sight; and, being impatient to hear news from England, the pinnace was hoisted out, and some of our people went on board of them, who learned that the Swallow had arrived safe in the English channel; that fresh disturbances had arisen at home, in respect to the ministers, and in America on account of taxes; that the flame of war was like to break out; that the Russians, Poles, and Turks, were already embroiled in a war; and that the Russians had made some vigorous attacks upon the Turks both by sea and land. We sent the boat on shore for some plantains and cocoa-nuts; and, in the evening, having a gentle breeze, we weighed anchor, and stood through between Angor Point and the opposite shore, and past Keita Island. The land of Sumatra seemed very near, and appeared to be exceeding high. We had also a more distinct view of Java, which was woody, and very high, particularly Bantam-hill, which is to be seen at a great distance.

On the 3d, we got up near to Bantam Point, or Point St. Nicholas, where we were becalmed, and dropped anchor. We saw a Chinese vessel pass along the Straits, with Chinese colours flying, which were white, and had a broad border, partly blue and partly black: in the middle of it several Chinese characters, and a star, which were painted of the latter colour. She had one mast; an oblong square sail, a bamboo yard, and an awning, or house, in the middle.

In the afternoon, some people came off to us, in a boat, from Angor-Point, to enquire who we were, and brought plantains, pumpkenoses, oranges, turtles, parrots, domestic poultry, some small birds, and monkeys, which they offered to sale. They told us that the Prince-George, captain Riddle, was lost last June off Batavia, and that the crew were carried by a Dutch ship to Bengal.

In the evening we weighed anchor, but, having only a light breeze, we made no way.

On the 4th, we had a northerly wind, which was directly against us, and the current ran very strong. Finding that we had lost ground, we anchored at night off Pulo Pisane; and, while we lay at anchor, some of our people went on shore in a boat, and bought some cocoas, and Paddy, or rice in the husk. On the evening of the next day, a light breeze sprang up from the West; but we were soon becalmed, and dropped anchor again. The weather was very sultry. Thermometer 86.

On the 7th, we weighed and dropped anchor several times, having light breezes and calms: however, the tide shifting in our favour, we reached, that day, as far as Pulo Babi, which lies in the bay of Bantam, and passed Pulo Panjang.

On the 8th, having light breezes, with calms, and the current running strong against us, we made but very little way. This day we sailed between the Milles Isles, Pulo Tidong, and Pulo Pare. These are mostly small and low islands, covered with trees; and, by the lights which we saw on shore, we concluded that some of them were inhabited; and were not deceived in our conjectures; for, at night, some of the natives came off to us, and brought some turtles, pumpkins, and dried fish.

On the 10th, we anchored in the road of Batavia, in which we found sixteen large ships, three of which were British; one of them an Indiaman that had lost its passage to China, and the other two private merchantmen. A lieutenant, in the pinnace, was dispatched to the deputy-governor with a message, who told him, he  
should



should be glad to see captain Cook, and that it would be proper to present his requests to the council in writing, who were to meet the next day. The pinnace returned to the ship, loaded with pine-apples, plantains, water-melons, and a bundle of London news-papers, which were very acceptable presents.

The Dutch commodore sent a messenger on-board of us, to enquire who we were; and by him we learned that the Falmouth man-of-war fell to pieces in this road about four months before we arrived.

Batavia, formerly called Jocatra, is situated in a very large open bay, in which is a great number of low islands; the principal of which, called the Milles Isles, lie off the bay. It is walled round, and has many canals cut through it, supplied by a river, which is divided into several streams, that run through the town. The main canal, which is large enough to admit small vessels, is carried a long way into the sea by means of a mole. The mountainous part of this country is at a great distance within land; and the plain flat land, which surrounds the city, is of considerable extent, very fertile, and watered with a great many rivulets; which renders the communication between different parts very easy. The roads which lead from the city are many, and as good as ours in England; they extend a long way into the country, and are so many avenues, planted with Tamarind, Cocoa, Pifang, Bread-fruit, Jacca, Duriam, and Allango, trees, which render them very pleasant. There is a great number of villas all along these roads, many of which have a magnificent appearance. In brief, the whole country looks like a garden, divided into different plantations by hedge-rows of trees and canals. But these canals, which are so convenient and enrich the views of the country, are supposed to be prejudicial to the health of the inhabitants: for, in the dry season, they stagnate, become putrid, and, being exhaled by the sun, the air is charged with noxious vapours: while the great number of trees prevents them from being dispersed by the winds, and occasions that kind of putrid fever, which is so common, rages so much, and is so fatal amongst them, inasmuch that it carries off a patient in a few days; and indeed the climate is so unhealthy, that even the slaves, brought here from other parts of India, feel the effects of it. Fluxes too are also very common and dangerous at Batavia; and their intermittents, which the inhabitants think trivial, are very prejudicial

judicial to foreigners ; but it must be allowed, however, that they mostly prove so for want of observing a proper regimen.

The houses in the city are mostly built of brick, and plaistered over ; many of them are very spacious, and furnished very sumptuously, especially on the ground-floor ; the bed-chambers, in general, having but little furniture in them. There are five gates to the city, with draw-bridges to each, which are shut at night. The suburbs, which surround the town, cover a large piece of ground, but are meanly built. The Campan China, which is largest, is on the south side.

The public buildings, in this city, are the castle, a town-hall, and several churches. The castle is square, surrounded by a ditch, and consists of several square courts, in one of which is deposited a great number of warlike instruments, especially of guns and balls.

The town-hall and the great church are handsome edifices. The church is of an octagon figure, having a dome and lanthorn of the same form, and has a very fine organ. Ruyter's kirk, belonging to the Lutherans, is small, but a very neat building. The Portuguese church is of an oblong square ; and the priests, belonging to it, preach in the Malay as well as the Portuguese language.

The streets of Batavia are paved on both sides, are very regular and straight, and a canal runs through the middle of most of them, both sides of which are planted with trees, which have a very agreeable effect ; and, as all kinds of goods are conveyed by water, the streets are in good repair. The bazar, or market-place, is large and square, intersected by rows of stalls, and abounds with different fruits and garden herbage, also with poultry, pork, dried fish, and a variety of other commodities. Near it is another square bazar, for fish, shell-fish, and meat ; but the chief market for vegetables is held at a place, called Tannabank, a little distance from the town, on every Saturday morning, where they may be had very cheap.

This city is the seat of the Dutch governor-general and council of the Indies, and is, with several neighbouring settlements of that nation, immediately under their direction ; and to them all the other governments, belonging to their East-India



India company, are subject. They meet, for the dispatch of business, several times in a week. There are also two fabanders, who, amongst other things, transact the business of foreigners with the council; a mayor of the city; and a land and water fischal for criminal affairs.

The Dutch, by their industry, have done more here than any other power in Europe has done in India; and, by means of their policy, have rendered it one of the most flourishing cities in this part of the world, where most European, as well as Indian, commodities may be purchased; but it is not a good market for Indian goods; for you meet with but few of them, and those few are very dear. This city is the chief rendezvous of the Dutch trade for the East-Indies, and from this port the ships for Europe take their departure. Here is a large house, appointed by the company, as a hotel for the accommodation of all European strangers, where they are obliged to reside, and pay two rix-dollars a day for a maintenance, while the Dutch may live for twenty-five rix-dollars a month. There is not, perhaps, any city in the world that contains a greater variety of people. One would imagine there were assembled, of different human beings, from every nation under heaven, who, for the most part, retain their several peculiar dresses, and are allowed to live after the manner of their respective countries. Of whites, there are Dutch, who are masters; but the greater part of the company's servants, and of the inhabitants, are Germans, Danes, Swedes, and Hungarians; with a few English, French, and Italians; of these the foreign merchants are chiefly composed; and most of them keep their chariots, and live in great luxury and elegance. A great number of slaves precede and follow their chariots; and, when the women go abroad, the female slaves sit on the steps of the chariot. The men are dressed excessively gay, having silk and velvet garments, richly laced and embroidered, with laced hats, and finely-dressed wigs. Their waistcoats have sleeves; and, when they sit in a house, they always take off their coats. Amongst the middle class of people, a pair of drawers, which have two gold buttons and reach above their breeches, is reckoned a great piece of finery. The women dress mostly in chintzes, made generally in the European, though sometimes in the Malay, fashion: they are seldom seen walking in the streets, usually riding in carriages. Both men and women have a sickly complexion, without any colour in their cheeks; but paleness, it seems, is reckoned one mark of beauty among the ladies. Besides chariots, which are open and richly  
ornamented,

ornamented, they have sedans, with wooden lattices, carved and gilt, and short spokes, which make an awkward appearance to a stranger: and, for their children, they have a sort of oblong square box, with a lattice at the sides, and a roof fashioned like the eaves of a house; this has a spoke at each end, and is carried by two men on their shoulders, and the child within sits all along on the bottom of it.

Their manner of living is pretty much the same in all seasons of the year. They rise as soon as it is light, and drink tea or coffee; then transact their business, either within or without doors, till nine o'clock in the morning, at which time it is too hot to be in the open air; and they negotiate business, or divert themselves otherwise, within doors, till about noon, and then dine. After dinner, they strip themselves of every thing, except a pair of drawers and a short cotton gown, and go to bed. At four or five o'clock in the afternoon they rise again, drink tea, and, if they have no business to transact, as there are no public places of diversion, they take an airing in their carriages; come home, sup, and go to bed again about eleven at night. Those born here of European parents, who are not many and are of a mixed breed, generally follow the Malay customs.

The inhabitants are mostly Chinese, and their number is very great both in town and country. The China town, which is on the south side of the city, is pretty large, but meanly built, as the better sort of Chinese live within the city. The greater number of shopkeepers are Chinese; they make all the arrack and sugar; nor can any person hold an arrack-house without having it under the name of some Chinese. They also cultivate all the variety of garden-stuff with which Batavia is furnished; and of them there are silver-smiths, pewterers, carpenters, joiners, masons, calkers, barbers, hawkers, dealers, and chapmen. There is not any trade, however mean and servile, which they do not follow: and, though the Dutch have laid them under many restrictions, yet they find means to acquire a comfortable subsistence, and often accumulate wealth. The Dutch have imposed a poll-tax on them of a ducatoon, or six shillings and eight pence, a month.

The Chinese in and about Batavia have a fallow complexion, black eyes, and tolerable good noses, but they pluck their beards up by the roots, and make, upon the whole, a very effeminate appearance.

They



They form two sects, and keep mostly to their own customs. One of them wears all their own hair ; and the other, which is by far the most numerous, shaves all the head except the crown. These different modes arise from a peculiar religious tenet held amongst them. When a rich man has a child, and thinks he can maintain it, independent of any servile employment, he suffers the hair on its head to grow, which is wound up, tied upon the crown, and ornamented with a gold bodkin or two, and it must never afterwards be shaven ; these are of high rank amongst them. The other children have their heads shaven nine months after their birth, and on every ninth day afterwards, till they attain a certain age ; and then they are at liberty either to wear it growing or have it shaved : the lock of hair, left on the crown of some of their heads, grows to a great length, reaching down to their posteriors. Their dress is excellently adapted to a hot climate, being generally white taffety, or callico ; and consists of a pair of trousers, over which they wear a frock with wide sleeves, which buttons before : a purse, wrought with silk, hangs beneath the upper garment ; and a pair of Chinese pampouches completes their dress. The old men sometimes wear a sort of white boots, that reach up to their knees ; and they always carry a fan in their hands, to shade their heads from the sun. Their usual salutation is, *Adda bai ké, how do you do, sir ?* and they are very courteous in their address and behaviour, especially to Britons, whose generosity, I suppose, they have often experienced. The hawkers, amongst them, who outdo the Jews in low artifice, will ask twenty dollars for a thing, and take one ; and have acquired, even among themselves, the character of great cheats.

Before the rebellion in 1740, the Chinese were intirely governed by two of their own nation, who were judges in all cases, and sat in council. At present, they have a captain and two lieutenants, one of whom sits every forenoon, with a jury of twelve, in a hall they have for that purpose, to hear and make up suits and quarrels, which happen amongst them, if possible, before they go before a Dutch court of judicature ; and this the Chinese must do, if they design to live in harmony with their community. To the said hall they all repair, the three first days of the month, to pay their head-money ; at which time there is a Dutch ensign hoisted on a staff before the gate.

The Chinese have four pagodas, or places of worship, in Batavia; but they do not seem to be a religious people, and are very careless and inattentive in the time of worship. I went into one of their pagodas, where I saw a company of them playing at cards in the principal part of it, that had an alcove, with several images in it, and lamps burning before them; some little boxes full of ashes, on which they burnt paper before their idols; and, on the wall, a number of Chinese characters; in other parts of the edifice there were lamps, images, and several small stoves. I saw a ceremony performed in one of the streets, on the decease of a person, which, for its singularity, may be worth relating. — Having made a large fire, with slips of paper, they brought out, one after another, a great number of paper pageants, gilt and coloured, with several human figures composed of the same materials, and kept feeding the fire with them, till they were all consumed; then they threw a parcel of cups and bottles into the fire, that had something in them, but I could not learn what, went into the house, and the ceremony ended. Their mourning for the deceased is a white turban.

There is, it seems, but one Chinese woman in Batavia, and she is but seldom seen: It is deemed a crime to bring them from China; such of the Chinese, who design to continue here, and incline to marry, take to wife one of the Malay women.

The Malays of both sexes, who are mostly slaves, are very numerous: Every white man keeps a number of them; and they are the only servants employed within-doors and without. Under this name are comprehended many sorts of people, who come from Sumatra, Amboyna, Banda, and Ceram. Those that come from the coast of Malabar, are distinguished by their slenderness and complexion, which is jet black. The Orang Bougees, or such as come from the island of Celebes, are remarkable for their fine black hair; and those from Timor are pretty black: These, with all others from the eastern isles, are, in general, called Malays; and all speak the low Malay, though their languages are different in their respective countries. Most of them have flattish noses, and are, in general, short; the women, especially, are very small.

The



The dress of the male Malays, who are slaves, is very simple; consisting of a pair of short drawers, and a long shirt, or frock, above, made of striped or plain cotton, which buttons about the wrist with six small buttons; and those who can afford it have two or three gold buttons at the neck. They are accustomed to hold one hand on their heads, placed in a particular manner. The free-men are better clad, and affect, in some respects, the European dress and customs, having black fatten breeches, and waistcoats with sleeves, and carry their hats under their arms; but they wear neither shoes nor stockings.

The women-slaves wear a long piece of cotton check wrapped about their loins, which serves instead of petticoats; and, over that, a very short white callico jacket, which buttons at the wrist, and is close before. They have remarkable good hair, which they tie upon the tops of their heads, and stick two or three silver or gold bodkins into it; this, with a silver peenang box which hangs to a girdle, and a handkerchief, with searee, put over their shoulders, makes them appear very gaudy. The free-women, who are called Noonga Cabaia, wear a long chintz banjan, called a Cabai, which reaches down to their heels; and they have square-toed slippers, turned up at the points very high, with which they make shift to hobble along.

The Malays, and many of the white people, bathe in the river at least once in the day, and sometimes twice. The men are much addicted to gaming; and all of them chew the Penang and Searee, which blackens their teeth; but they have an expeditious method of cleaning them with beetle: They also chew tobacco, cardamums, and gaimbre. They are reckoned to be an indolent revengeful people; and, when they think themselves injured, they repair to a gaming-house, and smoke opium till they are mad-drunk, and then sally out, with a creeds in their hand, to seek their enemy; attempting to kill every person that opposes them; and are often killed themselves, before they are apprehended: This is called an Amock, and is very common in Batavia. The criminal, if taken alive, is broke upon the wheel.

The Malays are Mahometans, and have several mosques about Batavia.

There is another set of people called Portuguese; whom the Malays call Orrang Cerami, or people of Ceram; but for what reason I could not learn: They are very dark-coloured, but you may distinguish European features amongst them.

Other people, of which there are many to be seen at Batavia, are Banjans, or Gentoos; the Malays call them Orrang Codjo: Their heads are shaven, and covered with a conical cap; the other parts of their dress are a short petticoat, or wrapper, about their loins; and, over that, a banjan. The Javanese, who reside here, are dressed much in the same manner, except the cap: they are all free, as the taking them for slaves is prohibited under a very severe penalty. Here are also Armenians, Persians, Moguls, people from many parts of India, as well as negroes from Madagascar, Mosambique, and all the eastern parts of Africa.

Batavia is plentifully furnished with all sorts of provisions; but, in this city, as well as in others that are very populous, most articles bear a high price. Here are some bullocks, but many more buffaloes, which are sold on reasonable terms, and their flesh eats pretty well; also Cambeong, or goat-sheep; but they are lean, dry, and indifferent food: Hogs of the Chinese and European breed; the former are very fat, eat very well, and are cheap; but the Europeans despise them, and prefer the latter, which are very dear. They have also tame fowls in abundance, which are cheap. I have likewise seen wild-fowls. Their ducks are not so good as ours, and are of another kind. Muscovy ducks and geese are bought reasonable; but turkeys and pigeons are dear. They have a plentiful market of fish, which is the favourite food of the Malays, but no great variety: Claw-fish, shell-fish, and particularly oysters, though small, are pretty good food; but their turtle, of which they have a plenty, is remarkably bad, and is only eaten by the common people. I believe there is not any place can equal Batavia for the variety of provisions, which may be bought at stalls, and are hawked about the streets, ready cooked, or cooking. They are furnished with flour from the Cape, and their bread is very good and cheap; but rice is more generally used, which grows in Java, and is very plentiful. Their common drink is arrack punch. The best arrack is sold for fifteen-pence the gallon. By what I could learn, the principal ingredient in it is sugar; with the best fort they mix Dooae, or palm-syrup; but whether they use rice I cannot tell.

Claret



Claret and Rhenish are the most common wines drank at Batavia : Claret you may buy at eighteen-pence the bottle ; but beer sells at twenty-pence. Sugar is another article which they have in great plenty ; the best sells for about twopence-farthing the pound ; and sugar-candy at threepence-halfpenny. They have a great quantity of coffee, which grows at Java : It is a company's trade, but may be bought, smuggled, for twopence-halfpenny the pound. They make as good butter as need be eaten ; and have a sufficient quantity of it to serve most of the inhabitants with their coffee and tea : they have also some good butter from the Cape. Of garden-stuff, they have pease, French-beans, asparagus, cos-lettuce, parsley, purslain, onions, white radishes, potatoes, cabbages, spinage, cucumbers, celery, endive, and these all the year long : besides these, which are exotics, they have several sorts of Cajang, or beans, Oobe, or yams, sweet potatoes, pumpkins, mushrooms, Vuevues, which taste like mushrooms when roasted, garlick, and a sort of small onions that taste like shallots, Chabe, or red-bird pepper ; with a variety of other pot-herbs, too tedious to enumerate.

The best fruits they have at Batavia are the Mangasteen, which is so wholesome, that it may be eaten in a fever : the Ramboutan, about the size of a large plumb, growing in bunches, and covered with a thick husk, of a bright red colour, full of soft prickles, which gives it a furzy appearance ; the inside, which is about the size of a pigeon's egg, is transparent, and yields a very rich juice, which has an agreeable poignancy. Pine-apples, which are also very good and plentiful, may be bought for an halfpenny or a farthing each. The Nanca and Durian are much admired by the natives ; but they are very disagreeable to foreigners, as they smell like onions and garlick, mixed with sugar : the Nanca is rather long, divided into four equal parts within, has a stone in each, and is as large as a half-peck loaf : they grow on the trunk of a tree ; the outside of the fruit is of a green colour, and the inside of a yellow : they are covered with a bag, before they are ripe, which preserves them from the vermin. The Durian is considerably less, quite round, and covered with spiny tubercles. They have bread-fruit, too ; but, being full of seed, it is never eaten. Also a plenty of mangoes, of several sorts, which, in my opinion, eat best when they are green, with pepper and salt. Oranges are very scarce and very indifferent ; but they have plenty of limes, and some Namnams too, which eat very well fried. They also have a fruit, produced by a sort of rattan, called Salae, which is  
covered

covered over with small brown scales, and tastes like cheese, apples, and onions. Guavas, though deemed good of their kind, smell so disagreeably, that I could not endure them. Of Jamboo, they have many sorts, some large, some small, some round, and others long; white, pink, crimson, and scarlet. They have also a plenty of cocoa-nuts, of which they generally make their oil. Their other fruits are Pisang, or plantains, Manco, or water-melons, anona squamosa, custard-apples, anona reticulata, grapes, pumplenoses, citrons, and acajou apples.

All the ships, which are careened and hove-down here, go to a small island in the bay, called Unrust, about seven miles from Batavia; where there is proper tackle to heave them down, and a bafs, or overseer, to manage all matters. The whole island is one dock-yard, inhabited entirely by carpenters, and others, who belong to the ships that are there.\* Near Unrust is another island, called the Kuypers, or Coopers, which is full of warehouses, where ships deposit their goods while they are heaving-down. About a mile from this, there is another island, called Palmirante, where there is an hospital for sick seamen: and upon this island the ships

\* At this place our ship was examined; and we found that many of her planks, and her keel, were much damaged; one part of her not being above one-eighth of an inch thick, which was luckily before one of the timbers, or, in all probability, she would have sunk long before we reached the bay of Batavia. While our ship was repairing at Unrust, most of the crew were at Cooper's-Island, where they were taken with a putrid dysentery; three of whom, the steward of the gun-room, one of the seamen, and a boy, died. The disorder also carried off Toobaiah, and the lad Taiyota, natives of Otaheite, whom we designed to have brought to England. They had been several times up to Batavia, and expressed great surprize at the many various objects to which they had been unaccustomed: they were particularly struck with the sight of carriages drawn by horses; and were very inquisitive in respect of what they saw, that was new to them; having, before our arrival at Batavia, made great progress in the English tongue, in which they were greatly assisted by Mr. Green, the astronomer, who took much pains therein, particularly with Taiyota. When Taiyota was seized with the fatal disorder, as if certain of his approaching dissolution, he frequently said to those of us who were his intimates, T'you mate oee, "my friends, I am dying." He took any medicines that were offered him; but Toobaiah, who was ill at the same time, and survived him but a few days, refused every thing of that kind, and gave himself up to grief; regretting, in the highest degree, that he had left his own country; and, when he heard of Taiyota's death, he was quite inconsolable, crying out frequently, Taiyota! Taiyota! They were both buried in the island of Eadam. During our stay at Batavia, most of us were sickly; Mr. Monkhouse, our surgeon, and the astronomer's servant, died; and some others hardly escaped with life.

companies



companies inter their dead. There are many other islands in the bay, named Amsterdam, Rotterdam, and Eadam, where the company have rope-manufactories, and send their felons.

The island of Java abounds with monkies, cockatoos, parrots, and wild poultry : there are also a great many horses, which are small, but very spirited.

The westerly monsoon sets in about October or November, and sometimes later ; and then the rainy season comes on : the easterly sets in about April or May.

The general language spoken at Batavia is low Malay ; and it is necessary that every person, who designs to stay long there, should learn it. This language is very different from the high and proper Malay, which is spoken on the continent of India ; and may be compared to the Lingua-Franca, being a compound of several other languages ; viz. of Malay, Portuguese, and those of the eastern isles. A short vocabulary of each is here annexed as a specimen ; as also vocabularies of the languages of other nations, in the neighbourhood of Batavia, which I collected from natives of the different places, during my stay in that city.

A VOCABULARY of the MALAYAN LANGUAGE, as spoke at  
BATAVIA, usually called there the Low MALAY.

Alla, or Alla t'alla,	<i>God.</i>
Tooäng Alla,	<i>The Lord God.</i>
Soorga,	<i>Heaven.</i>
Nooraka,	<i>Hell.</i>
Saitang, Mamadee, or Booleefs,	<i>The devil.</i>
Orrang Saitang,	<i>A demon, or ghost.</i>
Appee,	<i>Fire.</i>
Aier,	<i>Water.</i>
Detanna, or Negree,	<i>The earth.</i>
Laot,	<i>The sea.</i>
Langee,	<i>The sky.</i>
Matt'aree,	<i>The sun.</i>
Boolang,	<i>The moon.</i>
Beentang,	<i>The stars.</i>
Trang,	<i>Light.</i>
Glap,	<i>Darkness.</i>
Panafs,	<i>Heat.</i>
Deengin,	<i>Cold.</i>
Angin,	<i>The wind.</i>
Waitan,	<i>The East.</i>
Coolon,	<i>The west.</i>
Keedol,	<i>The north.</i>
Lorr,	<i>The south.</i>
Tarang,	<i>The clouds.</i>
Oojang,	<i>Rain.</i>
Greemifs,	<i>A mizling rain.</i>
Amboon,	<i>The dew.</i>
Awang awang,	<i>A fog, or mist.</i>

Assup,



Affup,	<i>Smoke.</i>
Keelap,	<i>Lightening.</i>
Goontoor,	<i>Thunder.</i>
Oontor,	<i>The rainbow.</i>
Leendo,	<i>An earthquake.</i>
Orang,	<i>Men, mankind, or people.</i>
Lakee lakee,	<i>A man.</i>
Orang tooa,	<i>An old man.</i>
Parampooan,	<i>A woman, or a young woman.</i>
Anna paraowan,	<i>A virgin.</i>
Booda, or Anna lakee lakee,	<i>A boy.</i>
Anna parampooan,	<i>A girl.</i>
Annae or anna,	<i>A child.</i>
Cumbar,	<i>Twins.</i>
Bappa, or pappa,	<i>A father.</i>
Ma,	<i>A mother.</i>
Cakè,	<i>A grandfather.</i>
Naimai,	<i>A grandmother.</i>
Bappa teerree,	<i>A step-father.</i>
Mateeree,	<i>A step-mother.</i>
Anna lakee,	<i>A son.</i>
Anna parampooan,	<i>A daughter.</i>
Soodara lakee,	<i>A brother.</i>
Soodara parampooan,	<i>A sister.</i>
Lakee,	<i>A husband.</i>
Beene,	<i>A wife.</i>
Cawin,	<i>A wedding.</i>
Orang cawin,	<i>The bridegroom.</i>
Boodjang,	<i>A widow.</i>
Peeatoo,	<i>An orphan.</i>
Anna soondal,	<i>A bastard.</i>
Taman,	<i>A friend.</i>
Manchoree,	<i>A thief.</i>
Orang boota,	<i>A blind man.</i>

Orang Balanda,	<i>A Dutchman.</i>
Orang Engrese,	<i>An Englishman.</i>
Orang Cerami,	<i>A Portuguese.</i>
Orang Codja, or Codjo.	<i>A Moor, Gentoo, Mogul, or Banyan.</i>
Orang China,	<i>A Chinese.</i>
Orang Maleiyo,	<i>A Malay.</i>
Orang Bugeefs,	<i>A native of the Celebes.</i>
Orang Papooa,	<i>A negroe, or caffre.</i>
Badang,	<i>The whole body.</i>
Capalla,	<i>The head.</i>
Atufcapalla,	<i>The crown of the head.</i>
Ramboo,	<i>The hair of the head.</i>
Mooca,	<i>The face.</i>
Taleenga,	<i>The temples.</i>
Matta,	<i>The eyes.</i>
Beedjee matta,	<i>The eye-balls.</i>
Ramboo matta,	<i>The eye-brows.</i>
Atus matta,	<i>The eye-lids.</i>
Booloo matta,	<i>The eye-lashes.</i>
Cooping,	<i>The ears.</i>
Edong,	<i>The nose.</i>
Enga,	<i>The nostrils.</i>
Peepee,	<i>The cheeks.</i>
Leeda,	<i>The mouth.</i>
Beebir, or moloo,	<i>The lips.</i>
Geegee,	<i>The teeth.</i>
Oojoo leeda,	<i>The tongue.</i>
Daga,	<i>The chin.</i>
Yenga, or coomifs,	<i>The beard.</i>
Lehair,	<i>The throat.</i>
Watta lehair,	<i>The neck.</i>
Dada,	<i>The breasts.</i>
Soofoo,	<i>The nipples.</i>
Purroo, or prott,	<i>The belly.</i>

Pooftar,



Pooffar,	<i>The navel.</i>
Balacang,	<i>The back.</i>
Peengang,	<i>The sides.</i>
Poonda,	<i>The shoulders.</i>
Catea,	<i>The arm-pits.</i>
Tangan,	<i>The whole arm and hand.</i>
Seecoo,	<i>The elbow.</i>
Balacang tangan,	<i>The back of the hand.</i>
Pala tangan,	<i>The palm of the hand.</i>
Manjaree,	<i>The thumb.</i>
Yereeggee,	<i>The fingers.</i>
Taree,	<i>The forefinger.</i>
Taree tanga,	<i>The middle finger.</i>
Jeregee, or jerejee,	<i>The fourth finger.</i>
Anna, or jintee,	<i>The little finger.</i>
Pantar,	<i>The hips.</i>
Fanta,	<i>The haunches.</i>
Panco,	<i>The thighs.</i>
Lootoo,	<i>The knees.</i>
Palpalla,	<i>The hams.</i>
Cakee,	<i>The leg and foot.</i>
Toocakee,	<i>The calves of the legs.</i>
Sapatoo,	<i>The foot.</i>
Balcakee,	<i>The sole of the foot.</i>
Yereeggee cakee,	<i>The toes.</i>
Boolo,	<i>The hair.</i>
Coolit,	<i>The skin.</i>
Gomoe,	<i>The fat.</i>
Daging,	<i>The flesh.</i>
Darra,	<i>Blood.</i>
Oorat,	<i>A vein.</i>
Toolang,	<i>The bones.</i>
Soom som,	<i>The marrow.</i>
Otae,	<i>The brains.</i>

Oofoofs,	<i>The stomach.</i>
Atee,	<i>The heart.</i>
Oofo,	<i>The guts.</i>
Toole toole,	<i>The kidneys.</i>
Tullum boongan,	<i>The bladder.</i>
Soofoo,	<i>The milk.</i>
Aier matta,	<i>Tears.</i>
Bcengata, or beenatang,	<i>A beast.</i>
Beenatang ootang,	<i>A wild beast.</i>
Tandoo,	<i>The horns.</i>
Coolit,	<i>The hide, skin, or leather.</i>
Booloo,	<i>The hair, or wool.</i>
Aicor,	<i>The tail.</i>
Moenje,	<i>An ape, or a monkey.</i>
Coocang,	<i>Lemur tardigradus. [Vide Linnæus.]</i>
Gaidja, or gadja,	<i>An elephant.</i>
Matcha,	<i>A tyger.</i>
Cootching,	<i>A cat.</i>
Tecoofs,	<i>A rat.</i>
Unjing, or anjing,	<i>A dog.</i>
Babee,	<i>A hog.</i>
Coodda,	<i>A horse.</i>
Onta,	<i>An afs.</i>
Sampee-lakee,	<i>A bull.</i>
Sampee-parampooan,	<i>A cow.</i>
Carbao,	<i>A buffalo.</i>
Cambeeng,	<i>A goat, or Guinea sheep.</i>
Cambeeng-Balanda,	<i>An European sheep.</i>
Keedang, or manjae.	<i>A deer, common in Java.</i>
Cantcheell,	<i>A hog-deer, no bigger than a rabbit.</i>
Choree choree,	<i>A bat.</i>
Boorong, or booloo,	<i>A bird.</i>
Mooloo booloo,	<i>The beak of a bird.</i>
Saiap,	<i>The wings.</i>

Aicor,



Aicor,	<i>The tail.</i>
Booloo boorong,	<i>A feather.</i>
Sarran boorong,	<i>A bird's nest.</i>
Tullor,	<i>An egg.</i>
Ulang,	<i>An eagle.</i>
Cocatooa, or kacatooa,	<i>A cockatoo.</i>
Papagai,	<i>A parrot.</i>
Noree, or looree,	<i>A lory.</i>
Baiyo,	<i>Gracula religiosa, the mino.</i>
Aiam,	<i>Poultry.</i>
Aiam lakee lakee,	<i>A cock.</i>
Jengir,	<i>A cock's comb.</i>
Aiam parampooan,	<i>A hen.</i>
Aiam balanda,	<i>A turkey.</i>
Gangsa,	<i>A goose.</i>
Baibai,	<i>A duck.</i>
Maraae,	<i>A peacock.</i>
Boorong darra,	<i>A pigeon.</i>
Eacang,	<i>A fish.</i>
Lomba lomb <sup>a</sup> ,	<i>A grampus.</i>
Punyoo,	<i>A turtle.</i>
Koora koora,	<i>A land-turtle, or tortoise.</i>
Chicao,	<i>A lizard.</i>
Kaico, or tocke.	<i>A lizard which haunts houses, and has a particular sort of cry.</i>
Codda,	<i>A toad.</i>
Oolar,	<i>A snake, or serpent.</i>
Cullaculla.	<i>A cockroach.</i>
Tangcreek,	<i>A cricket.</i>
Keenjang,	<i>A butterfly.</i>
Lallar,	<i>A fly.</i>
Smootallang,	<i>A small black ant.</i>
Pootoo,	<i>A louse.</i>
Oodang,	<i>Lobsters, cray-fish, &amp;c.</i>

Rooma,

Rooma,	<i>A house.</i>
Maja boondar,	<i>A round table.</i>
Maja panyang,	<i>A square table.</i>
Peefoo, or peefooe,	<i>A knife.</i>
Gor,	<i>A fork.</i>
Saindoo, or sandue.	<i>A spoon.</i>
Gandang,	<i>A drum.</i>
Panching,	<i>A fishhook.</i>
Jarlng, or taring,	<i>A net, or sein.</i>
Barang,	<i>Cloaths.</i>
Cameeja,	<i>A shirt.</i>
Sapalloo,	<i>Shoes or slippers.</i>
Bantar,	<i>A pillow.</i>
Macanan,	<i>Victuals.</i>
Macan pagee,	<i>Breakfast.</i>
Macan teng aree,	<i>Dinner.</i>
Macan mallam,	<i>Supper.</i>
Rotee,	<i>Bread.</i>
Naffee,	<i>Boiled rice.</i>
Curree,	<i>A high-seasoned soup.</i>
Caldoo,	<i>Chicken broth.</i>
Montega,	<i>Butter.</i>
Caidjoo,	<i>Cheese.</i>
Garrum,	<i>Salt.</i>
Meenja, or meenyae,	<i>Oil.</i>
Chooca,	<i>Vinegar.</i>
Lada,	<i>Pepper.</i>
Atchar,	<i>Cayan-pepper.</i>
Goola pafeer,	<i>Sugar.</i>
Goola batoo,	<i>Sugar-candy.</i>
Tambaco,	<i>Tobacco.</i>
Meeno, or meenum,	<i>Drink.</i>
Aier meeno,	<i>Water for drinking.</i>
Angor,	<i>Wine.</i>



Angor de maira.	<i>Red wine.</i>
Angor pootee,	<i>White wine.</i>
Angor affum,	<i>Rbenish wine.</i>
Angor dooae,	<i>Palm wine.</i>
Samshoo,	<i>A particular sort of cold liquor.</i>
Aier callappa,	<i>Cocoa-nut milk.</i>
Pagee,	<i>The morning.</i>
Matáree teenge,	<i>The forenoon.</i>
Taingaree,	<i>Noon.</i>
Matáree meeree.	<i>The afternoon.</i>
Matáree toroo,	<i>Sun-set.</i>
Soree,	<i>The evening.</i>
Tainga mallam,	<i>Midnight.</i>
Calim aree dowloo,	<i>The day before yesterday.</i>
Calim aree dowloo mallam,	<i>The night before last.</i>
Calim aree,	<i>Yesterday.</i>
Eniee aree,	<i>To-day.</i>
Baisoo, or baisue,	<i>To-morrow.</i>
Looffa,	<i>The day after to-morrow.</i>
Seang feang,	<i>In the day.</i>
Baisoo dattang,	<i>Another day, or another time.</i>
Poocol, or jam,	<i>An hour.</i>
Stainga poocol,	<i>Half an hour.</i>
Sa jamahat,	<i>A week.</i>

D A Y S of the W E E K.

Aree jamahat,	<i>Friday.</i>
Aree saptoo,	<i>Saturday.</i>
Aree gnahat,	<i>Sunday.</i>
Aree isneen,	<i>Monday.</i>
Aree salaffa,	<i>Tuesday.</i>
Aree rubo,	<i>Wednesday.</i>
Aree camees,	<i>Thursday.</i>

Sa boolan,	<i>A month.</i>
Sa taong,	<i>A year.</i>
Taong baroo,	<i>The new-year.</i>
Mooda,	<i>Young.</i>
Tooa,	<i>Old.</i>
Lapar,	<i>Hungry.</i>
Ramboo butal,	<i>Lank hair.</i>
Ramboo eekal,	<i>Curled hair.</i>
Ramboo beeneering,	<i>Frizzled hair.</i>
De dallam,	<i>Within.</i>
Delawar,	<i>Without.</i>
Kanna,	<i>The right.</i>
Keerce,	<i>The left.</i>
Penda, or pendue,	<i>Short.</i>
Panyang,	<i>Long.</i>
Tepifs,	<i>Thin.</i>
Tabal,	<i>Thick.</i>
Laibar,	<i>Narrow.</i>
Coran laibar,	<i>Broad.</i>
Boondar,	<i>Round.</i>
Panyang,	<i>Square.</i>
Canja,	<i>Full.</i>
Puffar,	<i>Big, or large.</i>
Ootang,	<i>In the country wild.</i>
Stainga,	<i>Half.</i>
Cucheel,	<i>A little.</i>
Tooga,	<i>A thing, or piece.</i>
Gooa,	<i>Me.</i>
Loo,	<i>You.</i>
Loo poonya,	<i>You, or yours.</i>
Gooa poonya,	<i>My, or mine.</i>
Deea,	<i>Him.</i>
Deea poonya,	<i>His or hers.</i>
Itooling,	<i>Them.</i>

Eenee,



Eenee,	<i>This.</i>
Eedoo or eetoo,	<i>That.</i>
De seennee,	<i>Here.</i>
De fanna,	<i>There.</i>
Seennee,	<i>This place, or here.</i>
Tarra de feetoor,	<i>That place, or there.</i>
Mana,	<i>Which.</i>
Appa,	<i>What.</i>
Adda,	<i>Yes.</i>
Ambeel,	<i>To fetch.</i>
Anoat,	<i>To take away.</i>
Panya,	<i>To roast.</i>
Tootoo,	<i>To cover.</i>
Tarabang,	<i>To fly.</i>
Badeeree,	<i>To rise.</i>
Nampas,	<i>To puff or blow.</i>
Meeno,	<i>To suck.</i>
Potong,	<i>To cut.</i>
Saindo,	<i>To sup.</i>
Gegit,	<i>To bite.</i>
Busseela,	<i>To sit cross-legged.</i>
Balek,	<i>To turn.</i>
Tootoo matta,	<i>To wink.</i>
Booang,	<i>To empty.</i>
Sallin,	<i>To fill.</i>
Floit,	<i>To whistle.</i>
Munyanye,	<i>To sing.</i>
Tatawa,	<i>To laugh.</i>
Manangas,	<i>To cry.</i>
Loopa,	<i>To forget.</i>
Looda gillap,	<i>It is dark.</i>
Oojang attang,	<i>It rains.</i>

Sooda,  
 Tallalo mahal,  
 Adda bai,  
 Trada bai,  
 Adda,  
 Troda,  
 Caffee gooa,  
 Marro de feinne,  
 Pafang leeling,  
 Goonte leeling,  
 Boingoos,  
 Sapo camre,  
 Barapee,  
 Barapee faloo rupea,  
 Barapee maon,  
 Adda cowfs footra,  
 Appa catta,  
 Dee manna,  
 Jallang dee sanne,  
 Salama tidor,

*It is done.*  
*It is too much.*  
*They are good.*  
*They are not good.*  
*I have.*  
*I have not.*  
*Give me.*  
*Come hither.*  
*Light the candle.*  
*Snuff the candle.*  
*Blow your nose.*  
*Sweep the chamber.*  
*How much ?*  
*How many for a rupee ?*  
*What is the price of this ?*  
*Have you got any silk stockings ?*  
*What says he ?*  
*Where is such a one ?*  
*Which is the way ?*  
*Good night.*





A VOCABULARY of the LANGUAGE spoken at ANJENGA, on the  
Coast of MALABAR, called at BATAVIA the high or proper  
M A L A Y .

Veiloo,	<i>The sun.</i>
Saoo,	<i>The moon.</i>
Nacaiſtrum,	<i>The ſtars.</i>
Vanum,	<i>The ſky.</i>
Vaigum,	<i>The clouds.</i>
Menal,	<i>Lightening.</i>
Eeree,	<i>Thunder.</i>
Tanee,	<i>Water.</i>
Maya,	<i>Rain.</i>
Tee,	<i>Fire.</i>
Cairo,	<i>Land.</i>
Manizen,	<i>A man.</i>
Oroopinnoo,	<i>A woman.</i>
Talla,	<i>The head.</i>
Otehe,	<i>The crown of the head.</i>
Talla moodee,	<i>The hair of the head.</i>
Mocom,	<i>The face.</i>
Naitee,	<i>The brow.</i>
Canna,	<i>The eyes.</i>
Cadoo,	<i>The ears.</i>
Moco,	<i>The noſe.</i>
Caowda,	<i>The cheeks.</i>
Waa,	<i>The mouth.</i>
Choondoo,	<i>The lips.</i>
Pailoo,	<i>The teeth.</i>
Nacoo,	<i>The tongue.</i>

Taree,	<i>The chin.</i>
Veeja,	<i>The beard.</i>
Carittoo,	<i>The neck.</i>
Ninyoo,	<i>The breast.</i>
Mola,	<i>The nipples.</i>
Bagroo,	<i>The belly.</i>
Corelloo,	<i>The navel.</i>
Oorooopoo,	<i>The shoulders.</i>
Cai,	<i>The whole arm.</i>
Mootooe,	<i>The elbow.</i>
Eai,	<i>The hand.</i>
Oolung-eai,	<i>The palm of the hand.</i>
Poorang-eai,	<i>The back of the hand.</i>
Veraloo,	<i>The fingers.</i>
Chande,	<i>The hips.</i>
Torra,	<i>The thighs.</i>
Mootoo,	<i>The knees.</i>
Caloo,	<i>The legs and feet.</i>
Raloo-veraloo,	<i>The toes.</i>
Oolung caloo,	<i>The sole of the foot.</i>
Nacong,	<i>The nails.</i>
Majaroo,	<i>The hair.</i>
Caluttoo,	<i>Morning.</i>
Ooteha,	<i>Noon.</i>
Eraoo,	<i>Evening.</i>
Erittoo,	<i>Night.</i>
Enalla,	<i>Day.</i>
Teenco,	<i>To eat.</i>
Koree,	<i>To drink.</i>
Nada,	<i>To walk.</i>
Odoo,	<i>To run.</i>
Nokoo,	<i>To see.</i>
Caloo,	<i>To hear.</i>

Mana,



Mana,  
Chulloo,

*To smell.*  
*To speak.*

NUMERATION.

Onoo,  
Randoo,  
Mono,  
Nalieu,  
Unjoo,  
Aroo,  
Yalloo,  
Yuttoo,  
Weinbuthoo,  
Patoos,  
Patoos nonoo,  
Eeroowadoo,  
Moopada,  
Nailpada,  
Unpada,  
Aroopada,  
Irrewothe,  
Unbuthoo,  
Tonorra,  
Norra,

*One.*  
*Two.*  
*Three.*  
*Four.*  
*Five.*  
*Six.*  
*Seven.*  
*Eight.*  
*Nine.*  
*Ten.*  
*Eleven, &c.*  
*Twenty.*  
*Thirty.*  
*Forty.*  
*Fifty.*  
*Sixty.*  
*Seventy.*  
*Eighty.*  
*Ninety.*  
*One hundred.*



A VOCABULARY of the Language of the Natives of the Island of  
SUMATRA, in the EAST-INDIES.

Jet,	<i>The sun.</i>
Gù or geux,	<i>The moon.</i>
Tchee,	<i>The stars.</i>
Thee,	<i>The sky.</i>
Hoïn,	<i>The clouds.</i>
Hò,	<i>Rain.</i>
Gowshù,	<i>The rainbow.</i>
Haï,	<i>The sea.</i>
Whang,	<i>Wind.</i>
Lang,	<i>People.</i>
Tapò,	<i>A man.</i>
Tfawà,	<i>A woman.</i>
Taow,	<i>The head.</i>
Tamung,	<i>The hair of the head.</i>
Beeïn,	<i>The face.</i>
Bwaclicu,	<i>The eyes.</i>
Vacvaï,	<i>The eye-brows.</i>
Vactoojin,	<i>The eye-lids.</i>
Pee,	<i>The nose.</i>
Tfooë,	<i>The mouth.</i>
Tfooë toon,	<i>The lips.</i>
Tfooë kee,	<i>The teeth.</i>
Tfooë eta,	<i>The chin.</i>
Tchee,	<i>The tongue.</i>
Amcooë,	<i>The neck.</i>
Semgua,	<i>The breast.</i>
Deeïn,	<i>The nipples.</i>
Pacto,	<i>The belly.</i>

Patfa,

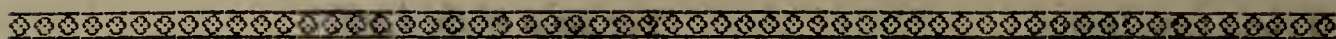


Patfa,	<i>The navel.</i>
Padja,	<i>The back.</i>
Pakow peeng,	<i>The sides.</i>
Quintaow,	<i>The shoulders.</i>
Tchoo,	<i>The arms.</i>
Cöai,	<i>The arm-pits.</i>
Tche aowtee,	<i>The elbow.</i>
Tchoo pooä,	<i>The hand.</i>
Tchoo tang seeäm,	<i>The palm of the hand.</i>
Tfung taow,	<i>The fingers.</i>
Cajang,	<i>The hips.</i>
Cada tooë,	<i>The thighs.</i>
Cadaow,	<i>The knees.</i>
Cäooto,	<i>The legs.</i>
Catfat,	<i>The ancles.</i>
Ca,	<i>The foot.</i>
Cojang taow,	<i>The toes.</i>
Catchù atù,	<i>The sole of the foot.</i>

## N U M E R A T I O N .

Chit.	<i>One.</i>
Nung,	<i>Two.</i>
Sa,	<i>Three.</i>
See,	<i>Four.</i>
Ingo,	<i>Five.</i>
La,	<i>Six.</i>
Chee,	<i>Seven.</i>
Poë,	<i>Eight.</i>
Ca,	<i>Nine.</i>
Tfap,	<i>Ten.</i>
Tfapet,	<i>Eleven.</i>
Tiapgee,	<i>Twelve.</i>
Tlee tfap,	<i>Twenty.</i>
Tlee et,	<i>Twenty-one.</i>

Tfa tfap,	<i>Thirty.</i>
Chippa,	<i>One hundred.</i>
Chet cheang,	<i>One thousand.</i>
Chet bang,	<i>Ten thousand.</i>
Chet sabang,	<i>One hundred thousand.</i>
Chet pawang,	<i>A million.</i>



NUMERATION of the Natives of CERAM, an Island in the  
EAST-INDIES.

O eenta,	<i>One.</i>
O looa,	<i>Two.</i>
O toloo,	<i>Three.</i>
O patoo,	<i>Four.</i>
O leema,	<i>Five.</i>
O loma,	<i>Six.</i>
O peeto,	<i>Seven.</i>
O aloo,	<i>Eight.</i>
O teeo,	<i>Nine.</i>
O pooloo,	<i>Ten.</i>





A VOCABULARY of the LANGUAGE spoken by the People of the  
Island of MADAGASCAR.

Delanna,	<i>The earth.</i>
Greemifs,	<i>A mizzling rain.</i>
Cumbar,	<i>Twins.</i>
Loha or dooha,	<i>The head.</i>
Voolaon dooha,	<i>The hair of the head.</i>
Hanging,	<i>The face.</i>
Maffoo,	<i>The eyes.</i>
Vooloo maffoo,	<i>The eye-brows.</i>
Soofi,	<i>The ears.</i>
Oroong,	<i>The nose.</i>
Bava,	<i>The cheeks.</i>
Mooloor,	<i>The mouth.</i>
Neefee,	<i>The teeth.</i>
Leula,	<i>The tongue.</i>
Vaow,	<i>The chin.</i>
Vooffoon,	<i>The neck.</i>
Dada,	<i>The breast.</i>
Nooroo,	<i>The nipples.</i>
Reeboo,	<i>The belly.</i>
Foit,	<i>The navel.</i>
Voohoo,	<i>The back.</i>
Vooha,	<i>The sides.</i>
Soorooka,	<i>The shoulders.</i>
Tangan,	<i>The whole arm and band.</i>
Hailik,	<i>The arm-pits.</i>
Keehow,	<i>The elbows.</i>

D d

Voohan

Voochan tangan,	<i>The back of the hand.</i>
Falla tangan,	<i>The palm of the hand.</i>
Ranjang tangan,	<i>The fingers.</i>
Foonee,	<i>The hips.</i>
Fai,	<i>The thighs.</i>
Lohalka,	<i>The knees.</i>
Randjao,	<i>The legs.</i>
Boobeechee,	<i>The calves of the leg.</i>
Ungoor,	<i>The foot.</i>
Ambanee ungoor,	<i>The sole of the foot.</i>
Ranjang ungoor,	<i>The toes.</i>
Matcha,	<i>A tiger.</i>
Onta,	<i>A camel.</i>
Onta,	<i>An ass.</i>
Oolar or boolar,	<i>A snake.</i>
Smootallang,	<i>An ant.</i>
Cumbang sapatoo,	<i>Scarlet hibiscus.</i>
Manga mattang,	<i>Green mangas.</i>
Manga bapang,	<i>Ripe mangas.</i>
Cobong,	<i>A garden.</i>
Basar,	<i>A market.</i>
Cointchee,	<i>A key.</i>
Cointchee sapatoo,	<i>Buckles.</i>
Leyang or loyang,	<i>Brass.</i>
Sootra,	<i>Silk.</i>
Tampalooda,	<i>A spitting-pot.</i>
Gaingong,	<i>A reed musical instrument.</i>
Cajin,	<i>A Malay garment.</i>
Baidjoo,	<i>An upper white short jacket.</i>
Tomeat,	<i>A cane.</i>
Corro corro,	<i>A java proe.</i>
Maddat appiam,	<i>Opium.</i>
Ratchang,	<i>Poison.</i>
Curjeedoo,	<i>A cure.</i>



Orrang buggeefs,	<i>A Macassar man.</i>
Orrang meenta,	<i>A beggar.</i>
Cabeezee,	<i>An eunuch.</i>
Orrang geela,	<i>A lunatic.</i>
Bodda,	<i>A fool.</i>
Orrang oodal or oosta,	<i>A liar.</i>
Boodjang,	<i>A batchelor.</i>
Doocoon,	<i>A doctor.</i>
Emai,	<i>A title of respect.</i>
Noonya,	<i>Mistress.</i>
Noona,	<i>Miss.</i>
Cawin,	<i>A wedding.</i>
Pacattan,	<i>A language.</i>
Soondal,	<i>A lie.</i>
Carmarran dooloo mallam,	<i>The night before last.</i>
Baifoo dattang,	<i>The day after to-morrow.</i>
Poocool or jam,	<i>An hour.</i>

## D A Y S of the W E E K .

Aree Jamahat,	<i>Friday.</i>
Aree Saptoo,	<i>Saturday.</i>
Aree Gnahat,	<i>Sunday.</i>
Aree Seenen,	<i>Monday.</i>
Aree Salaffa,	<i>Tuesday.</i>
Aree Rubo,	<i>Wednesday.</i>
Aree Camefs,	<i>Thursday.</i>

Tongbarroo,	<i>The new year.</i>
Mabooe,	<i>Drunk.</i>
Lammoo,	<i>Moon-eyed.</i>
Matapoota, or mataboota,	<i>Blind, or blindness.</i>
Toolee,	<i>Deaf.</i>
Gagoo,	<i>Dumb.</i>
Bainco,	<i>Lame.</i>

D d 2

Tangallang,

Tangallang,	<i>Drowned.</i>
Jahat,	<i>Cruel.</i>
Suffue,	<i>Narrow, or strait.</i>
Longar,	<i>Broad or wide.</i>
Crafs,	<i>Loud, swift, or strong.</i>
Maira mooda,	<i>Light-red.</i>
Maira looa,	<i>Dark-red.</i>
Passeer,	<i>Pleased or glad.</i>
Talalloo,	<i>A superfluity, as Talallobagoos, too fine.</i>
Morra,	<i>Cheap.</i>
Malengkit bagitta,	<i>Adhesive, or gluey.</i>
Paffang,	<i>A pair.</i>
Dooadooda,	<i>Both.</i>
Laian,	<i>Another.</i>
Seedecoot,	<i>Few, little.</i>
Sarre,	<i>Every.</i>
Nantee dowloo,	<i>Perhaps.</i>
Dowloo,	<i>Before.</i>
Baroo sang,	<i>Just now.</i>
Sampee,	<i>Until, or till.</i>
Begeenne, or begeetoo,	<i>So, like that or this; in this or that manner.</i>
Belair malay,	<i>To sail.</i>
Goffoe peefoo,	<i>To sharpen a knife.</i>
Pangeel,	<i>To call, or name.</i>
Teembool,	<i>To grow.</i>
Batcha,	<i>To read.</i>
Potong,	<i>To cut.</i>
Curja or beeking,	<i>To make.</i>
Tarro,	<i>To lay, to set, to put or place a thing.</i>
Boonte,	<i>To be with child.</i>
Sambayam,	<i>To pray.</i>
Bole,	<i>To be able.</i>

Gaigar,



Gaigar,	<i>To hurry or hasten.</i>
Peecool, or bawa,	<i>To carry.</i>
Paffang,	<i>To light.</i>
Yattoo,	<i>To tumble.</i>
Tadda tadda,	<i>To tack.</i>
Jangan,	<i>Don't, or get along.</i>
Laloo de seetoo,	<i>Get away from thence.</i>
Sappatow,	<i>Who knows?</i>
Sapeetoo,	<i>Who is there?</i>
Appa maon,	<i>What do you want?</i>
Soocoo fooca,	<i>Do you chuse?</i>
Maon,	<i>Will you?</i>
De manna boole dappa,	<i>Where can I get such a thing?</i>
Maon appa tradda ambeel,	<i>Why did they not fetch it?</i>
Curjappa,	<i>What do you make of it?</i>
Cappang belair,	<i>When do you go to sea?</i>

NUMERATION.

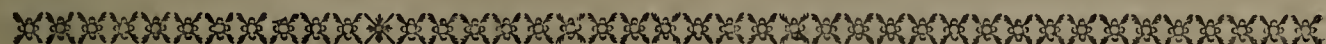
Iffee or effa,	<i>One.</i>
Roe,	<i>Two.</i>
Tulloo or tailoo,	<i>Three.</i>
Efax or efar,	<i>Four.</i>
Leman or lime,	<i>Five.</i>
One or aine,	<i>Six.</i>
Heitoo or petoo,	<i>Seven.</i>
Baloo,	<i>Eight.</i>
Seeva,	<i>Nine.</i>
Fooroo or fooloo,	<i>Ten.</i>

## NUMERATION of the Negroes on the River GAMBIA in AFRICA.

Killing,	<i>One.</i>
Foola,	<i>Two.</i>
Saba,	<i>Three.</i>
Nane,	<i>Four.</i>
Looloo,	<i>Five.</i>
Owrou,	<i>Six.</i>
Oronglo,	<i>Seven.</i>
Sae,	<i>Eight.</i>
Conunte,	<i>Nine.</i>
Tang,	<i>Ten.</i>
Tang killing,	<i>Eleven, &amp;c.</i>
Emva,	<i>Twenty.</i>
Emva killing,	<i>Twenty-one, &amp;c.</i>
Emva ning tang,	<i>Thirty.</i>

They





They keep their accounts at Batavia in stivers and dollars; forty-eight stivers make one rix-dollar. The current coin that passes here is made up of doits, doublekes, schillings, Surat and Bengal rupees; ducatoons, and half ducatoons, old and new; Spanish dollars, German crowns, and ducats. These all pass for their full value.

	s.	d.
10 doits, 1 doubleke ————	0	2 $\frac{1}{2}$
3 doublekes, 1 schilling ————	0	7 $\frac{1}{2}$
4 schillings, 1 Surat rupee ————	2	6
10 doublekes, 8 doits, 1 Bengal rupee —	2	3
2 rupees, 8 doublekes, 1 ducatoon —	6	8
4 rupees, 4 doublekes, 8 doits, 1 ducat —	11	0

As for the Malays and Chinese, they count with sawangs, fatalees, foccoos, rupees, and reals.

- 8 doits, 1 awang, or sawang.
- 2 awang, 4 doits, or 2 sawang, 1 arroo, 1 alee, or fatalee.
- 5 awang, or 2 fatalee, 4 sawang, 1 arroo, 1 focoo, or safacoo.
- 3 focoo, 1 rupee; 4 focoo, 4 awangs, 1 real.

#### W E I G H T S .

- 100 catee, or 125 lb. 1 peecol.
- 27 peecol ——— 1 coyang.

One of our midshipmen ran away from us here, and it was suspected that he was the person who cut off Orton's ears.

On the 26th of December, we weighed anchor, and sailed from the bay of Batavia; and, on the 5th of January, 1771, we arrived and anchored at Prince's Island,

Island, on the east side, (the water of which was very deep close to the shore) and staid there till the 16th. Here we were plentifully supplied with turtle, and fine fish of different sorts; cocoa-nuts, plantains, mangoes, limes and lemons: also with deer about the size of a calf; and a sort of smaller deer about as large as a rabbit, which ate much like them: a great quantity of poultry, with which the island abounds; young Indian corn, Tagaree, sugar, and some ducks. Their turtles were very lean, and far inferior to those we caught on the coast of New Holland, which I supposed might be owing to their having been kept long in crawles. We had also very fine water-melons, and bread-fruit, which would have been better had it not been so young.

This side of the island is pretty high, and covered with wood, excepting plantations of rice, upon which we saw several houses. The other side is plain flat ground, and abounds with plantations of pisang, calappa, and other fruits. The people who are upon it have been there between three and four years, and came from the main land of Java; and it is most likely dispossessed the former inhabitants. They are all Mahometans. It was the month of Ramezan when we were there, and in this month they never eat in the day-time. They have a Radja, or king, who, indeed, is but a poor one. They wear a piece of cotton check about their waists, which reaches to their knees, and another piece over their shoulders. Their hair is very mean, and unlike that of the Malays, which is very fine\*.

\* Here ends S. Parkinson's journal.

CONTINUATION





## C O N T I N U A T I O N

O F A

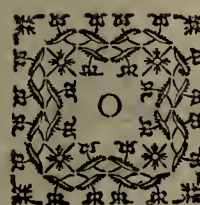
## J O U R N A L

O F A

## V O Y A G E to the S O U T H S E A S,

In his Majesty's Ship The E N D E A V O U R.

## P A R T IV.


 N the 16th of January, we took our departure from this island; and, a few days after, the disorder with which several of our company had been attacked, and died at Batavia and Cooper's Island, began to rage among us with great violence, and, in a few days, carried off Mr. Charles Green, the astronomer; Mr. Sydney Parkinson, Mr. David Spoving, clerk to Mr. Banks, and many of the common men. Mr. Green, being early seized with a delirium, unfortunately left some of his minutes so loose and incorrect, that it is feared it will be difficult to render them intelligible.

E e

On

On our arrival at the Cape, we were in great distress, not having more than six men capable of duty; but, providentially for us, the Pocock East-Indiaman was there, homeward bound, and captain Riddle generously sent his boat to us with a supply of fruits, and other vegetables, as the wind blew hard, and we could not send our boat on shore.

The next day, the Captain, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and several others of our principal people, went on shore; were kindly received by the governor; and met with a different treatment from that at Rio de Janeiro. He gave them a grant to hire a house for the sick, who were all landed the next day; and, from the wholesomeness of the climate, and a proper diet, most of them soon recovered. We staid there about a month; a great part of which time Dr. Solander was very ill. Mr. Banks spared neither time nor expence in collecting of plants, insects, skins of wild beasts, and other curious animals; and employed a number of people to assist him, some of whom he sent up a long way into the country for plants. Lieutenant Gore, with only one attendant, a slave belonging to Mr. Brand, a burgher at the Cape town, made an excursion, out of curiosity, to the top of the table-hill, where they saw several tigers and wolves, and brought some curious plants, in flower, which he presented to Mr. Banks, to whom they were very acceptable.

After the sick had recovered, and we had taken in all necessary supplies, and had engaged some Portuguese to supply the loss of our sailors, we left the Cape, and proceeded on our voyage homeward. Three days after we left the Cape, Mr. Robert Molineux, the master of our ship, died.

After a passage of eighteen days, during which time nothing remarkable happened, we arrived at St. Helena, where we found his majesty's ship, the Portland, commanded by captain Elliot, with twelve East-Indiamen under her convoy. In going into the road we ran foul of one of the Indiamen; but, with the assistance of some boats, we happily got clear of her, without much damage, except to our upper-works. The Portland being under sailing orders, and we under captain Elliot's command, as senior officer, we were assisted, by his people, in procuring wood



wood and water ; and he furnished us with some European provisions. We stayed there but four days, and then the whole fleet, consisting of fourteen sail, weighed anchor, and steered homeward.

Twelve days after we left St. Helena, our first lieutenant, Mr. Zachariah Hicks, died. About a month after we fell in with a schooner from Rhode-Island, who was whaling off the western islands. We sent a boat on board for news ; and were informed, to our great joy, that all was peaceable in England when she left it. Through our heavy sailing in the night, we lost sight of the fleet ; and, in a few days, saw another whaling schooner, who confirmed the account which we had received from the former, and told us, that two days before they had chased a large whale into a harbour of St. Michael's Island, and that, while they were pursuing it, they were fired upon by the Portuguese, and obliged to retreat, leaving the whale a prize to them, who, doubtless, made sure of it. We bought, of the master of the schooner, some fine salt cod, with some fresh fish ; also some New-England rum. This vessel, it seemed, had been out twenty-one days, and was in want of beef, and seemed distressed.

About sixteen days after we left the schooner, we got into soundings ; and, in a few more days, beat into the Chops of the Channel ; and the wind, which had been before at N. E. coming about to the S.W. we proceeded directly to the Downs, where we arrived on the 12th of July, 1771, after having been absent from England within a few days of three years. We immediately sent our sick on shore ; and, after staying three days, received orders to proceed round to Woolwich, where we anchored on the 20th of the same month.

It may not be amiss to inform the curious in natural subjects, that Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander have discovered, in the course of this adventure, many thousand species of plants heretofore unknown : among the rest, one that produceth a kind of white silk flax, which, as it grows under the same parallel of latitude with England, it is presumed, will also thrive here, if properly cultivated. They have also brought over with them a quantity of seed, which, if it succeeds on this island, may, in all probability, be of much national advantage to Great-Britain.

They have also described a great variety of birds and beasts, heretofore unknown, or but indifferently treated of; and above three hundred new species of fish, and have brought home with them many of the several kinds; with about one hundred species of new shells; and a great number of curious insects, some of them of a new genus; and corals; also of other marine animals, particularly of the Molusca tribe.

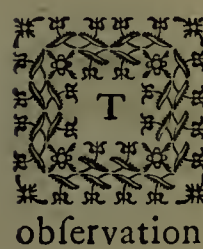
Copious descriptions of all these curiosities, with elegant engravings annexed, are now preparing to be published to the world by the above-mentioned gentlemen.

T H E E N D.





## PREFACE TO THE ADDITIONAL PART.

HE Journal of Sydney Parkinson has obtained the approbation of the sensible and intelligent, by its originality, by the accurate diary it contains, by the exact description given therein of the countries explored and their inhabitants, by the pertinence of his observations, and by the variety, execution, and elegance of his drawings.

But as repeated voyages have afforded opportunities of gaining a more extensive knowledge of the distant regions he visited, it has been thought necessary to add to it an abridgment of the two subsequent voyages of Captain Cook: and that the reader might be enabled to form a comprehensive idea of the whole of an undertaking, which has excited the attention of all nations, so much of the prior expeditions of Commodore Byron, Captain Wallis, Captain Carteret, and Monsieur Bougainville, as will answer that purpose, are prefixed in this Preface.

In pursuance of a design formed by his present Majesty for exploring the Southern Hemisphere (the discoveries already made being partial and unsatisfactory) Commodore Byron, having under his command the *Dolphin* and *Tamer*, sailed from the Downs on the 21st of June 1764; and passing through the Straits of Magellan into the Pacific Ocean, there discovered the Islands of Disappointment, George's Island, Prince of Wales's Island, the Isles of Danger, York Island, and Byron Island.

Introduc.  
p. 17.

In May 1766 he returned to England; and in the month of August following the *Dolphin* was again sent out, under the command of Captain Wallis, with the *Swallow*, commanded by Captain Carteret. These ships proceeded together till they came to the west end of the Straits of Magellan, and had the great South Sea in sight, where they separated.

\* F f

Captain

Captain Wallis directed his course more westerly than any navigator had done before him in so high a latitude, but did not meet with any land till he got within the tropics, where he discovered the Islands of Whitsunday, Queen Charlotte, Egmont, Duke of Gloucester, Duke of Cumberland, Maitea, Otaheite, Eimeo, Tapamanou, Howe, Scilly, Boscawen, Keppel, and Wallis; and returned to England in May 1768.

His companion, Captain Carteret, kept a different route, in which he discovered the Islands Osnaburg, Gloucester, Queen Charlotte's Isles, Carteret's, Gower's; with the Strait between New Britain and New Ireland; and returned to England in March 1769.

In November 1766, Commodore Bougainville sailed from France in the frigate *La Boudeuse*, with the store ship *L'Etoile*. After spending some time on the Coast of Brazil and at Falkland Islands, he got into the Pacific Ocean, by the Straits of Magellan, in January 1768.

In this ocean he discovered the Four Facardines, the Isle of Lanciers, Harpe Island, and Bow Island; and about twenty leagues farther to the west four other islands: he afterwards fell in with Maitea, Otaheite, Isles of Navigators, and Forlorn Hope, which to him were new discoveries: he then passed between the Hebrides; discovered the shoal of Diana, and some others, the land of Cape Deliverance, several islands more to the north; passed the north of New Ireland; touched at Batavia, and arrived in France in March 1769.

p. 19.

The transit of the planet Venus over the Sun's disk, a phænomenon of great importance to astronomy, and which every where engaged the attention of the learned in that science, being to take place in the year 1769; the beginning of the preceding year, the Royal Society presented a memorial to his Majesty, setting forth the advantages to be derived from accurate observations of this transit in different parts of the world; particularly from a set of such observations made in a southern latitude, between the 140th and 180th degree of longitude west from the Royal Observatory at Greenwich; and that vessels properly equipped would be necessary to convey the observers to their destined stations; but that the society were in no condition to defray the expence of such an undertaking.

In



In consequence of this memorial, the Admiralty were directed by his Majesty to provide proper vessels for this purpose. The Endeavour Bark was accordingly purchased and fitted out, and the command of her given to Captain James Cook; who was also appointed by the Royal Society, in conjunction with Mr. Charles Green the Astronomer, to make the requisite observations on the transit.

Otaheite, which had been discovered by Captain Wallis in his late expedition, p. 20. was fixed on as a proper spot for observing this interesting event; to which place Captain Cook was ordered directly to proceed; and after the astronomical observations should be completed, to prosecute his discoveries in the Pacific Ocean, proceeding as far south as latitude  $40^{\circ}$ ; when, if he did not find any land, he was to sail westward between  $40^{\circ}$  and  $35^{\circ}$ , till he fell in with New Zealand, which he was to explore, and from thence to return to England by such route as he should think proper.

In prosecution of these instructions, Captain Cook sailed from Plymouth p. 21. the 26th of August 1768, and having touched at Madeira, Rio de Janeiro, and Straits le Maire, entered the Pacific Ocean by Cape Horn in January the following year, and reached Otaheite the 13th of April, as related in the Journal of Mr. Parkinson. After remaining there three months, during which time the intended observations on the transit were made, he pursued his voyage, and having discovered the Society Isles, proceeded to the south, till, on the 6th of October, he fell in with the east side of New Zealand.

He explored that coast till the 31st of March 1770; when he quitted it, and proceeded to New Holland, and having surveyed the eastern coast of that vast country, a part which had not before been visited, he passed between its northern extremity and New Guinea, on the latter of which he landed; and having touched at the Island of Savu, at Batavia, the Cape of Good Hope, and Saint Helena, arrived in England on the 12th of July 1771.

In this voyage, as related in the following Journal, he was accompanied by p. 22. Mr. Banks and Doctor Solander, who, animated by the love of science, and by

Park.  
Jour.  
Preface,  
p. vi.

a desire to obtain a knowledge of the natural history of those remote regions, requested permission to make the voyage. Mr. Parkinson having given undoubted proofs of his abilities and industry, by the numerous collection of drawings in natural history he had already executed for Mr. Banks, that gentleman made him proposals of going with him as botanical draughtsman, which was accepted by him; not altogether from a view of emolument, but to satisfy an insatiable curiosity he had for such researches.

p. 23.

Soon after Captain Cook's return home in the Endeavour, it was resolved to equip two ships to complete the discovery of the southern hemisphere: two were accordingly purchased by government, at Hull, (ships built in that country being judged best suited for such expeditions) the command of one of which, named the Resolution, about 460 tons burthen, was given to Captain Cook; and that of the other, named the Adventure, of 336 tons burthen, to Captain Tobias Furneaux, who had before made the same voyage as second lieutenant with Captain Wallis. The complement of men in the former amounted to 112 officers included, in the latter to 81.

p. 26.

p. 28.

p. 29.

p. 30.

p. 31.

These ships were well provided with every species of stores requisite for so long a voyage; and likewise with many extra articles, such as malt, four krout, salted cabbage, portable broth, saloup, mustard, marmalade of carrots, and inspissated juice of wort and beer; many of which had been found to act as anti-scorbutics.

p. 33.

The Lords of the Admiralty also caused a number of medals to be struck, on one side representing his Majesty, and on the other the two ships; which were to be given to the natives of the new discovered countries, and left there as testimonies of the English being the first discoverers.

p. 34.

Their Lordships shewed no less attention to science in general, by engaging Mr. William Hodges, a landscape painter, to embark in this voyage, in order to make paintings of such places in the countries they should touch at, as might be proper to give a more perfect idea thereof than could be formed from written descriptions only. And it being thought of publick utility, that some persons



persons skilled in natural history should be engaged to undertake the voyage, parliament granted an ample sum for that purpose; and Mr. John Reinhold Forster, with his son, were pitched upon for this employment.

The board of longitude, willing to take this opportunity of making astrono- p. 35.  
mical and nautical observations and experiments, sent out Mr. William Wales p. 34.  
and Mr. William Bayley, furnished with every needful instrument, and like- p. 35.  
wise with four time pieces or watch machines; three made by Mr. Arnold, and  
one by Mr. Kendall, on Mr. Harrison's principles. An account of these ob-  
servations were laid before the publick, on the return of the astronomers, by  
order of the board.

Having given this summary, we shall proceed to particulars; just premising,  
that as the limits of this addition will not permit us to make a minute  
recapitulation of every occurrence which happened during the several voyages,  
it has been chiefly confined to the new discoveries; and as the second and third  
voyages of Captain Cook are more immediately connected with Parkinson's  
Journal, the account of them is more copious than those which precede it.

### Commodore B Y R O N's Voyage in his Majesty's Ship the D O L P H I N.

On the 3d of July 1764, Commodore Byron sailed from Plymouth in the p. 3.  
Dolphin, a man of war of the sixth rate, mounting twenty-four guns, her Introd.  
complement of men 150, with three lieutenants, and thirty-seven petty p. 11.  
officers. He was accompanied by the Tamer, a sloop of sixteen guns, the  
complement of which was 90 men, three lieutenants, and twenty-two petty  
officers, commanded by Captain Mouat.

After having touched at the Island of Madeira, and at Port Praya, in the Island p. 3.  
of St. Jago, one of the Cape de Verd Islands, on the 13th of September they p. 4.  
anchored in the great road of Rio de Janeiro, on the coast of Brazil. They had p. 5.  
observed, to their great mortification, that no fish, during the whole of this  
passage,

passage, would come near enough to the ship for them to strike, though the sea appeared to be quickened with them at a little distance, which was imputed to the copper bottom.

p. 7. Having left Rio de Janeiro on the 16th of October, they were overtaken on the 13th of November in latitude  $43^{\circ} 46'$  south, longitude  $60^{\circ} 5'$  by so sudden and violent a squall, that the Dolphin was laid on her beam ends. When it was coming on they saw several hundreds of birds flying before it, which expressed their terror by loud shrieks: it lasted about twenty minutes, and then gradually subsided. Commodore Byron remarks, that if this squall, which came on with less warning and more violence than any he had ever seen, had taken them in the night, the ship must inevitably have been lost.

p. 14. On the 21st of November they arrived at Port Desire, on the east coast of Patagonia. The country about the bay abounds with guanicoes, a creature resembling a deer, but much larger, the height of some of them being not less than thirteen hands; they are very shy and very swift. They saw several hares as large as fawns: one that they shot weighed upwards of twenty-six pounds; and these were so plenty, that with a good greyhound, the ship's company might have lived upon hares two days in the week. Here are also tygers of a large size; and tyger cats. Upon landing on an island in the bay, they found it covered with seals, many of which were larger than a bullock. Among the birds was one very remarkable: the head resembled that of an eagle, except that it had a large comb upon it; round the neck there was a white ruff, exactly similar to a lady's tippet; the feathers on the back were as black as jet, and as bright as that mineral could be rendered by the finest polish; the legs were remarkably strong and large; the talons like those of an eagle, but not so sharp; and the wings, when they were extended, measured, from point to point, no less than twelve feet.

p. 22. There is a great variety of wild fowl, such as ducks, geese, widgeon, &c.  
 p. 17. and they found a nest of ostrich's eggs; there is also such a plenty of muscles,  
 p. 22. that a boat may be loaded with them every time it is low water. Wood is very scarce; there are however on some parts of this coast bushes, which, in case



in case of necessity, might produce a tolerable supply of fuel. Good water was very hard to be found, but at length they met with some that was tolerable. No traces of inhabitants were to be seen; and the country appeared barren and desolate, in every direction, as far as the eye could reach. p. 21. p. 17.

December the 5th they left this bay, and having searched in vain for Pepys' Island, laid down in Halley's Chart, in latitude 47° south, arrived on the 20th at the entrance of the Straits of Magellan. Here on going ashore Commodore Byron found about five hundred of the natives, some on foot, but the greater part on horseback, assembled to meet him. They behaved very civilly, and received some presents of beads and ribband, with strong expressions of pleasure. The Chief, who approached the Commodore, the rest seating themselves at his request on the ground, was of a gigantic stature, and seemed to realize the tales of monsters in a human shape: his height could not be less than seven feet, and his bulk proportionable. He had the skin of some wild beast thrown over his shoulders; and was painted so as to make a most hideous appearance; round one eye was a circle of white, a circle of black surrounded the other; and the rest of his face was streaked with paint of different colours. The others were all painted nearly in the same manner. The women seemed to be proportionably large; and few of the men were less than the Chief. Their teeth were as white as ivory, remarkably even, and well set; but except the skins, which they wore with the hair inwards, most of them were naked; a few only having upon their legs a kind of boot, with a short pointed stick fastened to each heel, which served as a spur. Their horses were not large, nor in good case, yet they appeared to be nimble and well broken. The bridle was a leathern thong, with a small piece of wood that served for a bit; and the saddle resembled the pads that are in use among the country people in England. The men rode astride, and both men and women without stirrups, yet they galloped fearlessly over the stones upon the shore, which were large, loose, and slippery. p. 23. p. 26. p. 27. p. 29. p. 28. p. 32.

Proceeding on in the Straits on the 24th, Commodore Byron landed at Sandy Point, where he found plenty of wood, and very good water. Over the Point there is a fine level country, the soil of which, to all appearance, is very rich, being covered with flowers of various kinds, and berries almost innumerable; p. 35.

numerable; together with grafs that was very good, intermixed with a great number of peas in bloſſom. Among this luxuriance of herbage they ſaw many hundreds of birds feeding, which from their form, and the uncommon beauty of their plumage, they called painted geefe. In many places they obſerved plenty of wild celery, and other plants. The keen air of this place making the people voraciouſly hungry, they drew the Seine here, and caught a great number of very large mullets; whilſt the ſhooting parties on ſhore killed many geefe, teal, ſnipes, and other birds, that were excellent food, with which this ſpot abounded.

p. 37. On the 27th they anchored at Port Famine, a ſafe and convenient harbour. They found drift wood here ſufficient to have furniſhed a thouſand ſail; and trees that would ſupply the whole Britiſh Navy with the beſt maſts in the world.

p. 38. Among theſe woods, notwithſtanding the coldneſs of the climate, there are innumerable parrots and other birds of a moſt beautiful plumage. Beſides theſe, there are great numbers of geefe and ducks; ſo that during their ſtay here they were plentifully ſupplied with freſh proviſions, and caught as much  
p. 39. fiſh every day as ſerved the companies of both ſhips. Three of the ſeamen ſleeping on ſhore, in a ſmall tent, were awakened by the roaring of wild beaſts, the tone of which was deep and hollow, ſo that of whatever kind they muſt be large. The poor fellows, finding they drew nearer and nearer, as the ſound every minute became louder, immediately kindled a fire; round which the beaſts continued to prowl, with inceſſant howlings, till the day broke, when, to the great comfort of the affrighted ſailors, they diſappeared.

p. 38. Though they found many huts or wigwams, they did not meet with one Indian. The country round about ſeemed to be very fine, and the ſoil good; and were it not for the ſeverity of the cold in winter, might be made by cultivation one of the fineſt in the world.

p. 40. Having continued here till January the 4th 1765, and completed their wood and water, for which purpoſe Commodore Byron had entered theſe Straits, he  
p. 47. ſteered back for Falkland Iſlands. On the 15th he made theſe iſlands, and anchored in a fine harbour, of a very conſiderable extent, to which he gave the  
name



name of Port Egmont, in honour of the Earl of Egmont, who was then first Lord of the Admiralty. The whole navy of England might ride here in perfect security from all winds. They found here fresh water in great plenty; and geese, ducks, snipes, and other birds were so numerous, that the crews grew tired of them. Among other refreshments, they met with wild celery and wood forrel in the greatest abundance; nor is there any want of muscles, clams, cockles, and limpets. The coast abounds with seals, penguins, and sea lions; the latter are of an enormous size, and very formidable. There is also a creature resembling a wolf, or rather a large fox, of amazing ferocity.

Of this harbour and all the neighbouring islands, Commodore Byron took possession for his Majesty, by the name of Falkland's Islands; and thinks there is little reason to doubt that they are the same land to which Cowley gave the name of Pepys's Island. They extend from about  $51^{\circ}$  to  $52^{\circ}$  south latitude, and from about  $64^{\circ}$  to  $66^{\circ}$  west longitude.

On the 27th they left Port Egmont, and on the 6th of February again entered Port Desire. During this run, the number of whales about the ship was so great, as to render the navigation dangerous: these were of a larger size than any they had ever seen.

Leaving Port Desire on the 14th, on the 17th they entered once more the Straits of Magellan, with a design to pass through them into the Pacific Ocean; and it was not till the 9th of April that they were able to clear the western limits of them. The innumerable difficulties and dangers they encountered in this passage, the weather being dreadful beyond all description, Commodore Byron wholly imputes to their passing the Straits just as the sun approached the equinox, when, in this high latitude, the worst weather was to be expected; yet he thinks that at a proper season, that is, in the month of December, not only a single vessel, but a large squadron might pass through them in three weeks.

The following, exclusive of the perils they experienced from the tempestuous weather, are the only material circumstances that happened during their pas-

p. 61. sage through the Straits. They perceived that a strange ship, which they had first seen two days before, shaped the same course they did. They found a few days after that she was a French ship, full of men, with a great number of  
p. 63. officers on board. On the 25th they left her in a cove near Cape Forward, cutting wood; and on their return to England learnt that this vessel was the Eagle, commanded by Monsieur Bougainville, which had been sent to procure a supply of that necessary article, for their new settlement at Falkland's Islands.

p. 66. On the 1st of March, at the entrance of St. Jerom's Sound, two or three canoes came off to them: they were of bark, very ill made, and contained four men, two women, and a boy; the poorest wretches they had ever seen.  
p. 72. And on the 14th a boat going on shore near Cape Upright, they fell in with a few of the natives, who gave them a dog, and one of the women offered them a child which was sucking at the breast.

p. 72. The winter of this dreary and inhospitable region, about the middle of March, set in at once. The poor seamen, not only suffered extremely from the cold, but had scarcely ever a dry thread about them, there having been for some time one continued storm, with impenetrable fogs and incessant rain. The Commodore therefore distributed among the crews, officers and all, a sufficient quantity of thick woollen stuff, called Fearnought, which proved both comfortable and salutary.

p. 77. After having been twice within a few leagues of the western entrance of the Straits before the end of March, and as often driven back ten or twelve leagues  
p. 83. by the most violent hurricanes, on the 9th of April they passed Cape Pillar, which, with Cape Victory on the north side, forms this entrance; and a fine  
p. 84. steady gale springing up, they crowded every sail to get away as fast as they could from so frightful and desolate a coast.

p. 86. Having now gained the Pacific Ocean, on the 26th of April they fell in with the Island of Masafuero, and on the 28th came to an anchor within two cables  
p. 87. length of the north side of it. The shore being rocky and there being a very great surf, the men that went in the boats for wood and water were furnished with  
cork



cork jackets, which not only assisted them in swimming, but prevented them from being bruised against the rocks: by this assistance they got off a considerable quantity of both articles. But there was another species of danger against which cork jackets afforded no defence; for the sea abounded with sharks of an enormous size, which, when they saw a man in the water, would dart into the very surf to seize him. The people, however, happily escaped them, though they were frequently very near.

This island, which lies in latitude  $33^{\circ}45'$  south, and in longitude  $80^{\circ}46'$  west, not far from the Island of Juan Fernandez, is very high, and mostly covered p. 86. with wood; but some parts towards the north end seem to have been cleared, upon which great numbers of goats were feeding, and which had a green and pleasant appearance. The people that went on shore killed several of the goats, p. 88. and they were thought equal in flavour to the best venison in England. They found here also great plenty of fish of various sorts, all excellent in their kind, and many of them weighed from twenty to thirty pounds each.

On the 30th they sailed from hence, and steered to the northward; which p. 90. course they continued till the 2d of May, when Commodore Byron gave orders to steer to the west; intending, if possible, to make the land which is called Davis's Land in the Charts, and is laid down in latitude  $27^{\circ}30'$  south, and about 500 leagues west of Copiapo, on the coast of Chili. But on the 9th, finding little prospect of getting to the westward, in the latitude he had first proposed, being then in latitude  $26^{\circ}46'$  south, longitude  $94^{\circ}45'$  west, and having a great run to make, he determined to steer a north west course till they got the true trade wind, and then to stand to the westward till they should fall in with Solomon's Islands, if any such there were, or make some new discovery.

They accordingly pursued this course; and had several symptoms of land being near; particularly on the 26th of May, when they saw two large birds p. 91. about the ship, the colour of which was black, except the neck and the beak, which were white; they had long wings, and long feathers in their tails; and, flying heavily, appeared to be of a species that did not go far from shore: agreeable to this expectation, on the 7th of June, being in latitude  $14^{\circ}5'$  south,

\* G g 2

and

p. 92. and longitude  $144^{\circ} 58'$  west, they discovered a low small island bearing W. S. W. and soon after saw another to windward bearing E. S. E. which appeared to be larger than the former.

p. 92. They stood for the small island, which had a very beautiful appearance; being surrounded by a beach of the finest white sand, and within covered with tall trees, without underwood, which formed the most delightful groves that can be imagined. It appeared to be about five miles in circumference; and they soon perceived that it was inhabited, as many of the natives appeared upon the beach, with spears in their hands. But to their great regret and disappointment, they could not find either harbour or anchorage on the coast of

p. 93. it. The scurvy at this time raged with dreadful havoc among the crews; and the few poor wretches who were able to crawl upon the deck, stood gazing at this little paradise, which nature had forbidden them to enter, with sensations that cannot be easily conceived. They plainly saw cocoa nut trees, and had reason to suppose there were other fruits on it that would afford them relief; and their being in sight of them without a possibility of obtaining them, was no inconsiderable increase of the distress which they suffered through the want of them.

p. 94. As the ships circumnavigated the island, the natives ran along shore abreast of them, brandishing their spears, and making many signs of hostile intentions. And on one of the boats approaching the shore in order to sound, they waded into the water, and seemed to watch for an opportunity of laying hold of it;

p. 95. the people, however, prevented their design. These Islanders are of a deep copper colour, exceedingly stout and well limbed, and remarkably nimble and active.

p. 95. Finding no anchoring ground on this island, which lies in latitude  $14^{\circ} 5'$  south, longitude  $145^{\circ} 4'$  west, they worked up to the other, and the next day brought to on the west side of it, about three quarters of a mile from the shore. As the boats approached to sound, the Indians here also ran down to the beach in great numbers, armed with long spears and clubs, and using many threatening gestures. Commodore Byron seeing this, ordered a nine-pound shot to be fired

over



over their heads; upon which they ran into the woods with great precipitation. And perceiving that it was impossible to procure at these islands any refreshment p. 96. for the sick, whose situation was becoming more deplorable every hour, he named them the Islands of Disappointment. The middle of this cluster of p. 95. islands, for as they sailed along they had observed several other low ones, or rather peninsulas, lies in latitude  $14^{\circ} 10'$  south, longitude  $144^{\circ} 52'$  west.

In the afternoon of the 9th they saw land again; and the next morning discovered it to be a long low land, with a white beach, of a pleasant appearance, full of cocoa nut and other trees, and surrounded with a rock of red coral. The natives, when they saw the ships, made great fires, as was done at the other islands, by way of alarm; and in the same manner ran along the beach armed. Upon the boats making to the shore, two large double canoes with p. 99. about thirty men in each, all armed, gave them chase; but upon their turning towards them the Indians were seized with a sudden panic, and hauling down their sails, paddled back again at a surprising rate; and notwithstanding the dreadful surf that broke upon the shore, pushed through it, and immediately hauled their canoes upon the beach. The boats followed, and the natives, dreading an invasion of their coast, defended it with clubs and stones; upon which the men, having before made every sign of friendship they could invent without effect, fired and killed two or three of them; one of them received three balls which went quite through his body; yet, he afterwards took up a large stone and died in the action of throwing it against his enemy. This man fell close to the boat, so that his companions did not dare to carry off his body, which gave the crews an opportunity of examining of it; but taking up the others that were killed, they retired to the main body. The boats then returned, and brought off with them the two canoes, which were both of a very curious construction.

After searching in vain for anchorage, the boats found means to land on the p. 101. 11th, and to procure some fruit. They saw many houses or wigwams which were totally deserted, a shot having been fired over the heads of a great number of the natives that were assembled the day before. Their dogs, however, remained, who kept an incessant howling during the whole time of their being ashore.

ashore. The houses of these people were low mean hovels, thatched with cocoa nut branches, but they were most delightfully situated in a fine grove of stately trees. They saw but little of the natives, except at a distance; they could, however, perceive that the women had a piece of cloth of some kind hanging from the waist as low as the knee; the men were naked.

- p. 103. They saw no venomous creature here; but the flies were an intolerable torment, as they covered them from head to foot, and filled not only the boats, but the ships. Here were a great number of parrots and paroquets, and several other birds, with a beautiful kind of dove that was exceedingly tame. The  
p. 104. fresh water here is very good, but scarce. That part of the island where they landed lies in latitude  $14^{\circ} 29'$  south, longitude  $148^{\circ} 50'$  west.

Having procured what refreshments they could here, particularly several boat loads of cocoa nuts, and a great quantity of scurvy grafs, on the 12th they sailed for another island they had seen on the westward of this. Here the natives, on the approach of the ships, filled the beach as before, and ran along shore as they proceeded. The heat of this climate being very great, they seemed to suffer much by running so far in the sun; for they sometimes plunged into the sea, and sometimes fell flat upon the sand, that the surf might break over them; after which they renewed the race with great vigour.

- p. 105. Coming abreast of a cluster of houses like those of the other island, to which place the natives still followed, and were joined by others; the boats hauled close into the surf, and the ships brought to at a little distance from the shore. Upon this, a stout old man, with a long white beard, which gave him a very venerable appearance, came down from the houses to the beach: he was attended by a young man, and appeared to have the authority of a Chief or a King. The rest of the Indians, at a signal which he made, retired to a little distance. He then advanced to the water's edge, bearing in one hand a green branch of a tree, and grasping with the other his beard, which he pressed to his bosom: having in this attitude pronounced a long oration, or rather song, he walked into the water, and throwing into the boat the green branch, took up some trifling presents that had been thrown on the strand for him. After this the  
natives



natives shewed a friendly disposition; and some of them swam off to the boats p. 106. with a few cocoa nuts, and a little fresh water; but as no anchorage could be found for the ships, an intercourse could not be opened with them. The principal object of the boats being sent into such a surf, was to obtain some pearls, which, from the quantity of the pearl-oysters shells found on the coasts of these islands, must be plenty here; but they could not make their inquiries understood by the natives.

To these two islands Commodore Byron gave the name of King George's Islands, p. 106. in honour of his Majesty. That which they last visited lies in latitude  $14^{\circ} 41'$  south, longitude  $149^{\circ} 15'$  west.

The next day, June 13, pursuing their course to the westward, they fell in p. 107. with a low and very narrow island, lying east and west. It had a green and pleasant appearance, but a dreadful surf breaks upon every part of it, with foul ground at some distance. They found it about twenty leagues in length; and it appeared to abound with inhabitants, though they could only get a transient glance of them as they passed along. To this the Commodore gave the name of the Prince of Wales's Island. It lies in latitude  $15^{\circ}$  south, and the westernmost end of it in longitude  $151^{\circ} 53'$  west.

On the 21st land was seen again, bearing W. S. W. which had the appear- p. 109. ance of three islands, with rocks and broken ground between them. These islands, on approaching them, appeared more fertile and beautiful than any they had seen before; and, like the rest, swarmed with people. They saw also a large vessel under sail at a little distance from the shore; but to their unspeakable regret, they were obliged to leave the place without farther examination: for it was surrounded in every direction by rocks and breakers, which rendered the hazard more than equivalent to every advantage they might procure.

These islands, which lie nearly in latitude  $10^{\circ} 15'$  south, and longitude  $169^{\circ}$  p. 109.  $28'$  west, Commodore Byron called, from their dangerous coasts, the Islands of Danger. At this time, he took them for part of the islands named Solomon's Islands;

Islands; and was in hopes he should fall in with others of them, in some of which he might find an harbour.

p. 110. On the 24th they discovered another island, which they found to be low, but covered with wood, particularly with cocoa nut trees in great abundance. It had a pleasant appearance, and was near thirty miles in circumference; but, like the others, a dreadful sea breaks upon almost every part of the coast. The boats, however, with great difficulty landed, and brought off about two hundred cocoa nuts, which, to persons in their circumstances, were an inestimable treasure.

p. 110. The people who went on shore reported that there were no signs of its ever having been inhabited; but they found thousands of sea fowl sitting upon their nests, which were built in high trees: these birds were so tame, that they suffered themselves to be knocked down without leaving their nests. The ground was covered with land crabs, but no other animal was seen.

p. 111. This island Commodore Byron named the Duke of York's Island, in honour of his late Royal Highness. At first he was inclined to believe it to be the same that in the *Neptune Francois* is called *Maluita*, the principal of Solomon's Isles, but he was now convinced of the contrary; and is of opinion, that his people were the first human beings who ever saw it.

p. 111. They continued their course till the 29th in the track of these islands, and being then ten degrees to the westward of their situation in the chart, without having seen any thing of them, he gave orders to haul to the northward, in order to cross the equinoctial, and afterwards shape his course for the Ladrone Islands. This, though a long run, he hoped to accomplish before they should  
p. 108. be distressed for water, notwithstanding it now began to fall short. After he had left the Prince of Wales's Island, many circumstances had tended to convince him there was land to the southward, but the sickness of the crews in both ships was an insuperable impediment to his attempting any farther discoveries in that quarter.



On the 3d of July they fell in with another low flat island of a most delightful appearance, and full of wood, among which the cocoa nut tree was very conspicuous. They, however, saw, to their great regret, much foul ground about it, upon which the sea broke with a dreadful surf. As they sailed along the south west side of it, they soon perceived that it was very populous, for they saw at least a thousand of the natives assembled upon the beach; and in a short time more than sixty canoes, or rather proas, put off from the shore, and making towards the ships, ranged themselves in a circle round them.

These vessels were very neatly made, and so clean, that they appeared to be quite new. None of them had fewer than three persons on board, nor any of them more than six. After the Indians had gazed at the people on board for some time, several of them swam to the ship, ran up the side of the gun room ports, and having crept in, snatched up whatever lay in their reach, and immediately leaping into the sea, swam away at a great rate, notwithstanding some of them, having both hands full, held up their arms quite out of the water to prevent their plunder from being spoiled.

These people are tall, well proportioned, and clean limbed; their skin is a bright copper colour; their features are extremely good; and there is a mixture of intrepidity and cheerfulness in their countenances that is very striking; they have long black hair, which some of them wore tied up behind in a great bunch, others in three knots: some of them had long beards, some only whiskers, and some nothing more than a small tuft at the point of the chin; they were all of them stark naked, except their ornaments, which consist of shells, very prettily disposed and strung together, and worn round their necks, wrists, and waists; their ears were bored, but they had no ornaments then in them; their ornaments, when they wear any, are probably very heavy, as their ears hang down almost to their shoulders, and some of them were quite split through. One of these men, who appeared to be a person of some consequence, had a string of human teeth about his waist, which was probably a trophy of his military prowess, for he would not part with it in exchange for any thing that was offered him. Some of them were unarmed, but others had one of the most dangerous weapons ever seen; it was a kind of spear, very

\* H h

broad

broad at the end, and stuck full of shark's teeth (which are as sharp as a lancet) at the sides for about three feet of its length.

p. 113. The people on board shewed the natives some cocoa nuts, and made signs that they wanted more; but instead of giving any information that they could supply them, they endeavoured to take away those they had. This being the case, and no anchorage to be found, they were obliged again to make sail, without procuring any refreshments for the sick.

p. 114. This island, to which the officers gave the name of Byron's Island, in honour of their Commander, lies in latitude  $1^{\circ} 18'$  south, and longitude  $173^{\circ} 46'$  east.

p. 114. In their course from this island they saw, for several days, abundance of fish, but could take only sharks, which were now become a good dish, even at the Captain's table. Many of the people began, at this time, to be ill with fluxes, which the surgeon imputed to the excessive heat and almost perpetual rains. And all their cocoa nuts being expended by the 21st, they began to fall down again with the scurvy. The expeditious and powerful efficacy of these nuts in checking this disease, Commodore Byron remarks to be astonishing.

p. 115. After the hottest, the longest, and most dangerous run that was perhaps ever made, the thermometer for many days being from  $81^{\circ}$  to  $84^{\circ}$ , on the 30th they saw land, which proved to be the Islands Saypan, Tinian, and Aiguigan, three of the Ladrone Islands: these three islands are between two and three leagues distance from each other; Saypan is the largest, and Aiguigan, which is high and round, the smallest.

p. 115. On the 31st they anchored at the south west end of Tinian, on the very spot  
p. 116. where Lord Anson lay in the Centurion. As soon as the ship was secured, Commodore Byron, with some of the officers, went ashore, to fix upon a place where tents might be erected for the sick, which were now very numerous; not a single man being wholly free from the scurvy, and many in the last stage of it. Instead of finding the beautiful lawns and meadows, of which there is so luxuriant a description in the account of Lord Anson's Voyage, to  
their



their great surprize and disappointment, they found the face of the country totally reversed, being over-grown with a stubborn kind of reed or brush, in most places, nearly as high as a man's head. And during their excursion they were covered with flies from head to foot, so that whenever they offered to speak, they were sure of having a mouth-full.

They likewise found the water brackish and full of worms. And though p. 117. with much difficulty they killed some of the cattle which the island produces, p. 119. this was done at so great a distance from the tents, that the carcases were generally full of fly blows, and stunk so as to be unfit for use, before they could be brought thither. Poultry they could procure upon easier terms, there being great plenty of birds; but the flesh of them were very ill tasted, and such was the heat of the climate, that within an hour after they were killed they were as green as grass. Their principal resource for fresh meat was the wild hog, with which the island abounds: of these they not only got a sufficient number, by snaring them, for their present subsistence, but to furnish them with a sea stock. Indeed, after some time, they found means to procure beef likewise, with less labour and risk, so that on the whole they were now tolerably well supplied with provisions; especially as they baked fresh bread every day for the sick. They caught a fine looking fish here, but, as the Centurion's p. 120. people had been before, several of the crews were so much disordered by eating them, that their recovery was a long time doubtful.

Commodore Byron is of opinion, that this is one of the most unhealthy spots p. 118. in the world, at least during the season in which they were here. The rains were violent, and almost incessant; and the heat so great as to threaten suffocation. Besides the inconvenience they suffered from the weather, they were tormented by the flies in the day, and by the musquitos in the night. The island also p. 119. swarms with centipeeds and scorpions, and with a large black ant, scarcely inferior to either in the malignity of its bite; besides other venomous insects without number; by which many of the people suffered so severely, that they were all afraid to lie down in their beds, either on shore or on board.

p. 117. As an addition to these inconveniences, the road where the ships lay was a dangerous situation at this season of the year. At the full and change of the moon such a prodigious swell tumbled in here, the ships rolled so much, and the tide drove in so violently from the westward, that once during their stay they were obliged to put to sea for a week.

p. 118. The island produces limes, four oranges, cocoa nuts, bread fruit, guavas, and  
p. 121. paupaus in great abundance; likewise cotton and indigo in as great plenty; but they found neither water melons, scurvy grafs, or sorrel.

p. 121. The Tamar, being sent to examine the adjacent Island of Sapan, which is much larger, rises higher, and has a much pleasanter appearance than Tinian, found in the woods many trees very fit for topmasts. They did not see any fowls, or any tracks of cattle, but of hogs and guanicoes there were plenty. They found no fresh water near the place where they landed, but observed a large pond inland. They saw large heaps of pearl oyster shells thrown up together, and other signs of people having been there not long before. They also saw many of those square pyramidal pillars which are to be found at Tinian, and which are particularly described in the account of Lord Anson's Voyage.

p. 122. The sick being at length pretty well recovered, and two thousand cocoa nuts being laid in as an antiscorbutic, in addition to their sea store, they left Tinian on the 1st of October, and proceeded without any material incident happen-  
p. 125. ing till the 5th of November, when they anchored in a bay on the east side of the Island of Pulo Timoan.

p. 125. On landing they found the natives, who are Malays, a surly insolent set of people. But notwithstanding they first put on a show of hostility, a treaty soon commenced. Nothing, however, was to be procured from them but about a dozen of fowls, and a goat and kid; for the purchase of which they refused knives, hatchets, &c. and demanded rupees; and as these were not to be had, they vouchsafed to take in payment the best of their pocket handkerchiefs.

These



These people are of a small stature, but extremely well made, and of a dark copper colour. Among them was an old man who was dressed somewhat in the manner of the Persians; but the rest were all naked, except a handkerchief which they wore as a kind of turban upon their heads, and some pieces of cloth which were fastened with a silver plate or clasp round their middles. Their habitations are very neatly built of slit bamboo, and are raised upon posts about eight feet from the ground. Their boats are well made, and some were of a large size.

The island is mountainous and woody, yet pleasant. It produces the cabbage and cocoa nut tree in great plenty; but the natives did not choose to part with any of the fruits. They saw also some rice grounds; but could gain no information of the other vegetable productions of the island. There was excellent fish in the bay, but the catching them gave umbrage. They purchased an animal here which had the body of a hare, with the legs of a deer; and not being able to preserve it alive, found the flesh excellent food. All the time they lay here, they had the most violent thunder, lightning, and rain, they had ever known. Commodore Byron here remarks, that they certainly made this passage at an improper season of the year; for after they came into the latitude of Pulo Condore, they had nothing but light airs, calms, and tornadoes, with violent rain, thunder, and lightning.

Finding that nothing more was to be procured at this place, they sailed again on the 7th, and on the 13th came to an anchor at an island called Pulo Toupoa: here they saw a sloop at anchor, which hoisted Dutch-colours; an officer was sent to speak with her, who was received on board with great civility; but he was extremely surprised to find that he could not make himself understood; for the people on board were Malays, without a single white man among them. They made tea for the boat's crew immediately, and behaved with great cheerfulness and hospitality. The vessel was of a singular construction; her deck was of slit bamboo; and she was steered, not by a rudder, but by two large pieces of timber, one upon each quarter.

On

p. 130. On the 27th they entered the Road of Batavia, and the next day, which, by their account, was the 28th, but, by the account of the Dutch at this place, was the 29th, they anchored near the town. By failing to the west for a whole year they had lost a day.

p. 133. Having now left those parts of the globe that were the immediate objects of his researches, and which alone are particularly connected with this work, it will be only necessary to add, that Commodore Byron continued at Batavia from the 28th of November to the 10th of December, when, having procured what refreshments he could for his people, and taken on board a sufficient quantity of rice and arrack, he weighed, and made sail.

p. 136. On the 13th of February 1766 they arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, and departing from thence, after a stay of three weeks, without touching at  
p. 139. St. Helena, arrived in the Downs on the 9th of May, having been absent from England one year and about ten months.

### Captain WALLIS's Voyage in his Majesty's Ship the DOLPHIN.

p. 144. On the 22d of August 1766 Captain Wallis sailed in the Dolphin from Plymouth Sound, having under his command the Swallow Sloop, Captain Carteret, and Prince Frederick store ship. Besides filling every part of the ship with stores and necessaries of various kinds, he took on board three thousand weight of portable soup, and a bale of cork jackets, together with an extraordinary quantity of medicines.

p. 152. Having touched at Madeira and Port Praya on the 17th of December, they arrived on the Coast of Patagonia, at the entrance of the Straits of Magellan. When they went on shore, Captain Wallis was received by the natives nearly in the same manner as Commodore Byron had been, and he gives much the  
same



same description of them; but, on measuring some of them, found the tallest p. 154.  
 of those that were here assembled, not to exceed six feet seven inches; several  
 more were six feet five, and six feet six inches, but the stature of the greater  
 part of them was from five feet ten to six feet. They now talked much, and  
 some of them called out Ca-pi-ta-ne; but when they were spoken to in Spanish,  
 Portuguese, French, and Dutch, they made no reply. Of their own language,  
 the people that went on shore could distinguish only one word, which was  
*chevow*: this they supposed to be a salutation, as the natives always pronounced  
 it when they shook hands with them, or asked for something to be given them.  
 When they were spoken to in English, they repeated the words as plainly as  
 those who spoke them, and soon got by heart the sentence, "English men  
 come on shore."

Several of them being permitted to go on board, more than a hundred eagerly p. 156.  
 offered to visit the ship, but Captain Wallis did not choose to indulge more  
 than eight of the number: these jumped into the boats with the joy and  
 alacrity of children going to a fair; and whilst they were in them, sung several  
 of their country songs. But they did not express either curiosity or wonder at  
 the ships, or the different objects they saw on board them. A looking glass was  
 the chief thing that excited their attention: it afforded them infinite diversion;  
 they advanced, retreated, and played a thousand tricks before it, laughing  
 violently, and talking with great emphasis to each other. They viewed all  
 the parts of the ship with indifference; but examined the hogs, sheep, and the  
 rest of the live stock with some curiosity, and were extremely delighted with  
 the guinea hens and turkies. Nor did they seem to desire any thing they saw,  
 except the apparel of the people. The marines being exercised for their p. 157.  
 amusement, when the first volley was fired, they were struck with terror and  
 astonishment; but, seeing the crew merry, and finding themselves unhurt, they  
 soon resumed their cheerfulness, and heard the second and third volley fired  
 without much emotion. When they were going ashore, one of the old men  
 lifted up his eyes toward heaven, and chaunted out a kind of prayer.

The next day, as they proceeded up the Straits, a boat being sent towards p. 160.  
 the shore, great numbers of the natives came down, whom they knew to be  
 the

p. 161. the same persons they had seen the day before, with many others, particularly women and children. Perceiving that the people in the boat did not shew any inclination to land, they made signs to them to advance, pronouncing aloud the words they had been taught: "English men come on shore;" and when they saw the men still lay on their oars, without approaching, they were with difficulty kept from entering the boat. Some presents of bread, tobacco, and toys were made them, and signs given them that guanicoes and ostriches were wanted in return; but the natives could not be made to understand their meaning. Finding there was no refreshment to be obtained, the boat rowed along the shore in search of fresh water; seeing, however, no appearance of a rivulet, they returned on board.

p. 189. Having been particular in the account given of Commodore Byron's passing these Straits, it will be only necessary to add here, that it was not till the 11th of April that the Dolphin and Swallow (the Frederick store ship having, through her disability of continuing the voyage, been sent back to Falkland's Islands) quitted this dreary and inhospitable region: a region where, in the midst of summer the weather was cold, gloomy, and tempestuous; where the prospects had more the appearance of a chaos than of nature; and where, for the most part, the valleys were without herbage, and the hills without wood. Nor was it till after a passage of near four months, during which they were in almost perpetual danger of shipwreck, that they got clear of these dangerous and inclement Straits.

p. 199. As they continued their course to the westward, after having cleared the Straits, at which time the Dolphin lost sight of the Swallow, and saw her no more during the whole voyage, they had for the most part strong gales, hazy weather, and heavy seas; so that there was not a dry place in the ship for some weeks together; in consequence of which the men began to fall down very fast in colds and fevers. They however continued steering to the westward till the p. 200. 30th of April, when the surgeon being of opinion that the sick would so much increase, if they did not get into better weather, that there would not be hands enough well to navigate the ship, Captain Wallis gave orders to keep to the northward.

By



By the 22d of May they reached the latitude of  $20^{\circ} 18'$  south, which, from p. 201. being more temperate, proved salutary to those who had been afflicted with colds and fevers; but the crews were now attacked by the scurvy, notwithstanding Captain Wallis's care and attention to prevent it. The men had vinegar and mustard without limitation; wine instead of spirits, sweet wort and falop; and portable soup was constantly boiled in their pease and oatmeal. Their births and clothes were kept perfectly clean; some of the beds and hammocks washed every day; the water was rendered wholesome by ventilation, and every part between decks frequently washed with vinegar.

On the 6th of June they discovered land: the joy, Captain Wallis remarks, p. 203. which every one on board felt at this discovery, can be conceived by those only who have experienced the danger, sickness, and fatigue of such a voyage as they had performed.

The boats being sent on shore, the next day they returned with several cocoa p. 203. nuts, and a considerable quantity of scurvy grafs. They had seen none of the inhabitants, but had observed three huts or rather sheds, consisting only of a roof, neatly thatched with cocoa nut and palm leaves, supported upon posts, and open all round. They saw also several canoes building; but met with no fresh water, nor any fruit but cocoa nuts. Upon founding they found no anchorage, and it was with great difficulty that they got on shore, as the surf ran very high.

On the 8th the boats were again sent out to find, if possible, a place for the p. 204. ship to anchor; they, however, returned without meeting with any better success, or even being able to land; the surf running higher than it did the day before. Upon this they hoisted in the boats, and stood away for another island, which bore S. E. distant about four leagues. That which they now quitted, having been discovered on Whitsun Eve, was named by Captain Wallis Whitsun Island: it is about four miles long and three wide, and lies in latitude  $19^{\circ} 26'$  south, longitude  $137^{\circ} 56'$  west.

- p. 204. As the boats approached the shore at the other island, about fifty of the natives, armed with long pikes, and several of them with fire brands in their hands, thronged down towards the beach, and endeavoured to oppose their landing.
- p. 205. But at length a few trinkets pacified them, and procured from them a small quantity of cocoa nuts and water. During this traffick, one of the Indians found means to steal a silk handkerchief, in which some small merchandize was wrapped up; and he carried it off so dexterously, that nobody observed him.
- p. 205. The next day, when the boats came near the shore, the officer was surpris'd to find seven large canoes, with two stout masts in each, lying just in the surf, with all the inhabitants on the beach, ready to embark. The Indians made signs to the boats to go higher up; which, being complied with, they all entered the canoes, and sailing away, steered about W. S. W. as long as they could be seen from the mast head. The canoes appeared to be about thirty feet long, four feet broad, and three and half deep.
- p. 206. This island, which Captain Wallis took possession of in the name of the King, and to which he gave the name of Queen Charlotte's Island, in honour of her Majesty, is sandy and level, full of trees, but without underwood, and
- p. 208. abounding with scurvy grafs; it is about six miles long, and one mile wide; and lies in latitude  $19^{\circ} 18'$  south, longitude  $138^{\circ} 4'$  west.
- p. 206. The natives are of a middle stature, and dark complexion, with long black hair, which hung loose over their shoulders; the men were well made, and the women handsome; their clothing was a kind of coarse cloth or matting, which was fastened about their middle, and seemed capable of being brought up round their shoulders.
- p. 208. There being a great sea, with a dreadful surf rolling in upon the shore, and no anchorage, Captain Wallis thought prudent to leave this place on the 10th. During his stay, he refreshed the sick on shore, and procured a quantity of fresh water, cocoa nuts, palm nuts, and scurvy grafs.

They



They had not long left this island before they fell in with another, that, p. 208. from a lagoon in the middle, had the appearance of two islands, and seemed to be about six miles long, and four broad: the whole of it is low land, sandy, p. 209. and full of trees; under which there was no verdure; but they saw not a single cocoa nut, nor any huts. They, however, found at the westernmost end of it, all the canoes and people who had fled at their approach from Queen Charlotte's Island, and several others with them. They counted eight double canoes, and about fourscore people, men, women, and children: the canoes were drawn upon the beach; the women and children were placed near them; and the men advanced with their pikes and fire brands, making a great noise, and dancing in a strange manner.

As the shore of this island, also, was every where rocky; as there was no p. 209. anchorage; and as they had not any prospect of procuring refreshments here, they left it in the evening, after giving it the name of Egmont Island, in honour of the Earl of Egmont, then first Lord of the Admiralty. It lies in latitude  $19^{\circ} 20'$  south, longitude  $138^{\circ} 30'$  west.

The three following days, 11th, 12th, and 13th, they fell in with three other p. 209. islands, as inaccessible as those they had lately discovered: to the first, which lies in latitude  $19^{\circ} 11'$  south, longitude  $140^{\circ} 4'$  west, they gave the name of Gloucester Island, in honour of his Royal Highness the Duke of Gloucester; to the second, which lies in latitude  $19^{\circ} 18'$  south, longitude  $140^{\circ} 36'$  west, p. 210. the name of Cumberland Island, in honour of his Royal Highness the Duke of Cumberland; and to the third, which had the appearance of small flat quays, and lies in latitude  $19^{\circ}$  south, longitude  $141^{\circ} 6'$  west, the name of Prince William Henry's Island, in honour of his Majesty's third son.

On the 17th they fell in with another island, the land of which they observed p. 211. to be high, and covered with cocoa nut trees; and a light they saw on it, proved that it was inhabited. The next morning, Lieutenant Furneaux went on shore, and returned at noon with a pig and a cock, together with a few plantains and cocoa nuts. He had seen about a hundred of the natives, but could find no anchorage, nor scarcely a landing-place for a boat in the whole

p. 212. circuit of the island. As the inhabitants appeared to be more numerous than the island could support, and several large double canoes were on the beach, Captain Wallis concluded that there must be islands of a larger extent, not far distant, where refreshments in greater plenty might be procured, and hoped they would be less difficult of access. He, therefore, hoisted in the boats, and determined to run farther to the westward. To this island, which is nearly circular, and about two miles over, he gave the name of Osnaburgh Island, in honour of Prince Frederick. It lies in latitude  $17^{\circ} 51'$  south, and longitude  $147^{\circ} 30'$  west.

p. 213. In the afternoon of the same day they discovered very high land in the W. S. W. to which they steered; and approaching it the next morning, were obliged to lie to, on account of a thick fog; when the fog cleared away, they were much surprized to find themselves surrounded by some hundreds of canoes, of various sizes, which had on board different numbers, from one to ten; so that in all of them together, there could not be less than eight hundred people.

After the natives had recovered from their astonishment, one of them held up a branch of the plantain tree as a token of friendship, and many of them climbed up the sides of the ship; but they were no sooner on board, than they attempted to steal whatever happened to lie in their way.

p. 217. On the 21st they found anchorage on the east side of the island to their inexpressible satisfaction, and immediately moored in seventeen fathom water, with a clear sandy bottom. This was no sooner done, than a considerable number of canoes came off to the ship, and brought with them fowls, hogs, and fruit in great plenty, which were purchased with trinkets and nails.

p. 218. Notwithstanding this appearance of friendship, the boats, on going ashore, were attacked by several of the canoes; and it was not till after two of the Indians were shot, that they desisted. In some little time, however, they came off to traffick as before, seemingly convinced that they had brought the mischief on themselves, and that if they behaved peaceably they had nothing to fear.

Whilst



Whilst the boats were founding, the inhabitants swarmed on the beach, and were very importunate with them to come on shore, particularly the women, who, stripping themselves naked, endeavoured to allure them by many wanton gestures. The people however resisted the temptation. In the afternoon the boats went on shore for water, taking with them, for that purpose, several baracas or small casks with handles: two of which the natives filled for them; and as a compensation for their trouble, they thought fit to detain all the rest. At this time there were many thousands of them, of both sexes, together with a great number of children, on the beach, and both men and women were very pressing for the people to come on shore; which they thought it prudent to decline.

It being necessary for this circumstance, that the ship should anchor so near the watering-place, as to cover the people while they were procuring it, they weighed on the 23d with a design to approach nearer the shore: but, as they were standing off, they discovered a bay, about six or eight miles to leeward, to which they made; unfortunately, on their passage, the ship struck on a reef, notwithstanding two boats were ahead, and she was nearly lost; she, however, at last got off without much damage; and the next day they anchored at the upper end of this bay, within two cables length of a very fine river.

As they warped up the harbour, a great number of canoes came about them, loaded with stones; and drawing together round the ship, some of the natives in them sung in a hoarse voice, others blew conchs, and others played on flutes. After some time, a person, who sat upon a canopy in one of the large double canoes, came along side, and presented Captain Wallis with a bunch of red and yellow feathers: the Captain received it with expressions of amity, and immediately got some trinkets to present him in return; but, to his great surprise, the Chief had put off to a little distance; and upon his throwing up a branch of cocoa nut tree, there was an universal shout from all the canoes, which at once moved towards the ship, and a shower of stones was poured into her from every side: there being not less than three hundred canoes about the ship, with at least two thousand men in them, some thousands also being on the shore, and many more canoes coming from every quarter; a great part of the ship's

p. 225. ship's company being also in a sick and feeble condition, Captain Wallis found himself necessitated to make use of arms, which alone could render him superior to the multitude that assailed him: he accordingly ordered the great guns and musquetry to be fired, which soon drove away the canoes that were about the ship, and put a stop to the coming off of others. He no sooner saw this than he directed the firing to cease, hoping they were now convinced of the superiority of his weapons. But he found himself mistaken; for as soon as the guns were silent, a great number of the canoes that had been dispersed collected together, and renewed the attack, throwing, as before, round pebble stones of about two pounds weight, with great force and dexterity, by the help of slings, from a considerable distance: many of these wounded the people on board, and had it not been for an awning, which had been spread over the whole deck to keep out the sun, and the hammocks placed in the nettings, many more would have suffered from them. They now made their attack on the bow and stern of the ship, having, probably, taken notice that no shot had been fired from those parts; Captain Wallis therefore ordered some guns to be well pointed, and fired at those ahead, and also those astern. Among the canoes that were coming towards the bow there was one which appeared to have some Chief on board, as it was by signals from her that the others had been called together. It happened that a shot hit this canoe so full as to cut it asunder, which, being observed by the rest, they dispersed in so much haste, that in half an hour there was not a single canoe to be seen; the people also who had crowded the shore, immediately fled over the hills with the utmost precipitation.

p. 226. They had now no reason to fear any further interruption; and the Captain and first Lieutenant being ill, Mr. Furneaux was sent on shore, and took possession of this island in his Majesty's name, in honour of whom it was called  
p. 227. King George the Third's Island. Before he returned to the ship, an old man came from the opposite side of the river, which was about twelve yards wide, and fordable, and in a supplicating manner approached him, upon which Mr. Furneaux endeavoured to make him apprehend, that if the natives attempted no further mischief against them they should do no harm to them.

The



The natives, however, made another attempt on the 26th. As Captain Wallis p. 228. was so ill that he could scarcely crawl about, he sat upon deck, with his glasses, to see what was doing ashore. About eight o'clock he perceived a multitude p. 229. of them coming over a hill, at about the distance of a mile; a great number of canoes making round the western point; and a numerous body creeping along behind the bushes at the back of the watering-place. In consequence of this the watering party came off in their boats; and the Indians, having given a shout, took possession of the casks with great appearance of exultation and joy. As soon as Captain Wallis saw the canoes approaching, in order to shorten the p. 230. contest, and put an end to hostilities at once, he ordered a smart fire to be kept up, which soon dispersed the different bodies; and he met with no more molestation from them during his stay.

As the limits of these abridgments will not admit of an uninterrupted recital, though ever so concise, of all the occurrences that happened, the most interesting only can be selected, at the same time preserving the connexion of the whole.

From this time the natives never appeared in large bodies, and a trade was p. 233. established, which furnished the ship with hogs, fowls, and fruit, in great abundance. A connexion likewise took place between some of the young p. 238. women and the crew. Many of them were permitted to pass the river, who, though not averse to granting the men personal favours, knew the value of them too well not to stipulate for a consideration. The price, indeed, was not great, yet it was such as the men were not always able to pay; and, under this temptation, they stole nails and other iron from the ship; and, as they could not at all times get at those brought for traffick, they drew several out of different parts of the vessel, thus hazarding the safety of the whole crew.

On the 11th of July, a tall woman, who seemed to be about five and forty p. 241. years of age, of a pleasing countenance, and majestic deportment, was accompanied on board by the gunner. He informed the Captain that she was just come into that part of the country, and that seeing great respect paid to her by the natives, he had made her some presents, in return for which she had invited

invited him to her house, which was about two miles up the valley, and given him some large hogs, after which she returned with him to the watering-place, and expressing a desire to go on board the ship, he had thought it proper that she should be gratified. She seemed to be under no restraint, either from diffidence or fear, when she first came into the ship; and she behaved all the while she was on board with an easy freedom, such as always distinguishes conscious superiority and habitual command. The Captain gave her a large blue mantle, that reached from her shoulders to her feet, which he threw over her, and tied on with ribands. He gave her also a looking-glass, beads of several sorts, and many other things, which she accepted with a good grace, and much pleasure. When she intimated an inclination to return, Captain Wallis ordered an officer to attend her to her habitation.

- p. 242. The next day the Captain went ashore, for the first time, and soon after the Princess or Queen, for such by her authority she appeared to be, came to him, followed by many of her attendants. As she perceived his disorder had left him very weak, she ordered her people to carry him all the way to her house; as she likewise did the first Lieutenant and Purser, who also had been sick. In their way a vast multitude crowded about them; but upon her waving her hand, without speaking a word, they withdrew, and left them a free passage. When they approached her house, a great number of both sexes came out to meet her, whom she presented to Captain Wallis; and having intimated by signs that they were her relations, she took hold of his hand, and made them kiss it. They then entered the house, which covered a piece of ground 327 feet long, and 42 broad. It consisted of a roof thatched with palm leaves, and raised upon 39 pillars on each side, and 14 in the middle; the ridge of the thatch on the inside was 30 feet high; and the sides of the house to the edge of the roof were 12 feet high; all below the roof being open.
- p. 243. As soon as they entered the house, she caused the skin of the Captain, and the other two invalids, to be gently chafed by four young girls; from which operation they found great benefit. She then ordered some bales of Indian cloth to be brought out, with which she clothed the Captain, and all that were with him, according to the fashion of the country. And when they went away, she ordered a very large sow, big with young, to be taken down to the boat, whither she accompanied them herself.

The



The next morning Captain Wallis sent her, by one of his officers, some presents in return, with which she seemed to be much pleased. The officer found her giving an entertainment to a great number of people, which he supposed could not be less than a thousand. The messes were all brought to her by the servants that prepared them in shells of cocoa nuts; and she distributed them with her own hands to the guests, who were seated in rows round the great house; when this was done she sat down herself upon a place somewhat elevated above the rest, and two of her women fed her. The officer, to whom a mess of their food was presented, could not certainly tell what it consisted of, but believed it to be fowl picked small, with apples cut among it, and seasoned with salt water; whatever it was, he said it tasted very well. p. 244.

This correspondence being established with the Queen, provisions of every kind became much more plenty. During the remainder of their stay, she shewed them every civility in her power; and it was not without the greatest reluctance and concern that she suffered them to depart. But having laid in a stock of such necessaries as the island afforded, and the health of all the ship's company being restored beyond their most sanguine expectations, as there was not now an invalid on board, except the Captain and the two Lieutenants, (who were recovering, though still in a very feeble condition) on the 27th of July they left the harbour, to which Captain Wallis gave the name of Port Royal Harbour. p. 244. p. 269. p. 259.

Whilst the ship was unmooring, the Queen came on board in her canoe, followed by fifteen or sixteen more; but not being able to speak, she sat down, and gave vent to her feelings by weeping. In about an hour after, a breeze springing up, they made sail, when she embraced them all in the most affectionate manner, accompanied with many tears. Her attendants likewise expressed great sorrow at their departure; and it was not till the last moment that they returned to their canoes. p. 258.

This island, which is called by the natives Otaheite, but to which Captain Wallis gave the name of King George the Third's Island, lies in latitude 17° 30' south, longitude 150° west. From observations taken in Port Royal Harbour, p. 259.

p. 215. it has the most delightful appearance that can be imagined: towards the sea it is level, and covered with fruit trees of various kinds, among which the houses of the inhabitants are interspersed. The country within rises into lofty hills, that are crowned with wood, and terminate in peaks, from which large rivers  
 p. 268. are precipitated into the sea. The climate appears to be very fine; and the  
 p. 262. island to be one of the most healthy, as well as delightful, spots in the world. The produce of it consists of bread fruit, cocoa nuts, bananas, plantains, yams, apples, and a sour fruit, which, though not pleasant, gives an agreeable relish to roasted bread fruit.

p. 260. The natives are a stout, well made, active, and comely people: the stature of the men, in general, is from five feet seven to five feet ten inches; that of the women from five feet to five feet six. The complexion of the men is tawny; their hair, in general, is black, but in some it is brown, in others red,  
 p. 261. and in others flaxen. The women are all handsome, and some of them extremely beautiful; but chastity does not seem to be considered as a virtue among them. Both men and women are not only decently, but gracefully clothed in a kind of white cloth, made of the bark of a shrub, and very much resembles coarse China paper. This cloth is not woven, but is made like paper, of the macerated fibres of an inner bark, spread out and beaten together.  
 p. 262. Their ornaments are feathers, flowers, pieces of shells, and pearls. It is an universal custom among both sexes, after they arrive at the age of twelve years, to have the hinder part of their thighs and loins punctured very thick with black lines, in various forms.

p. 262. Their food consists of pork, poultry, dog's flesh, and fish; together with  
 p. 265. the fruits before mentioned. Their habitations are similar to that of the Queen,  
 p. 266. already described. Their boats or canoes are of three different sorts: some made out of a single tree, which carry from two to six men; some are constructed of planks, very dexterously sewed together; these are of different sizes, and will carry from ten to forty men; two of them are generally lashed to each other, and two masts set up between them; a third sort seem to be intended principally for pleasure and show: they are very large, but have no sail, and in shape resemble the Gondolas of Venice. Their principal weapons are stones,  
 which



which they throw either with the hand or sling, and bludgeons; they have bows and arrows, indeed, but the arrows being headed only with a round stone, do not appear to be used as a weapon of offence.

A more particular account of these people will be found in the following Journal, and in the annexed abridgments of the second and third Voyages of Captain Cook.

Having made sail from this island on the 27th of July, as before related, and p. 271. proceeded along the shore of the Duke of York's Island, the next morning they saw land, which proved to be another island. Near the shore of it, there were very considerable breakers, and some parts of it were rocky; but in many places there appeared to be good anchorage. They saw but few inhabitants, and these seemed to live in a very different manner from those of King George's Island, their habitations being only small huts. They observed many cocoa and other trees upon the shore, but all of them had their heads blown away, probably in a hurricane. To this island, which lies in latitude  $17^{\circ} 28'$  south, longitude  $151^{\circ} 4'$  west, Captain Wallis gave the name of Sir Charles Saunders's Island.

On the 30th they saw land again, and stood for it, but could find no anchor- p. 271. age, the whole island being surrounded by breakers. They saw smoke in two p. 272. places, but no inhabitants. A few cocoa nuts were growing on the lee part of it; and Captain Wallis called it Lord Howe's Island. It is about ten miles long, and four broad, and lies in latitude  $16^{\circ} 46'$  south, longitude  $154^{\circ} 13'$  west.

The next day they discovered low land, with breakers all about it, which he p. 272. named Scilly Islands. They are a group of islands or shoals extremely dangerous, lying in latitude  $16^{\circ} 28'$  south, longitude  $155^{\circ} 30'$  west.

They continued their course to the west till the 13th of August, when at p. 272. day break they saw land, which proved to be an island that had the appearance of a sugar loaf; and at eleven o'clock saw more land, which was also an island, and the middle part of it appeared in a peak. To the first, which is

nearly circular, and three miles over, Captain Wallis gave the name of Boscawen's Island; and the other, which is three miles and a half long, and two broad, he called Keppel's Island.

- p. 272. Having passed Boscawen's Island, in which they saw several of the inhabitants, they hauled up to Keppel's Isle, as it appeared more likely to afford anchorage; but in this they were disappointed. The boats, however, gained the shore, and brought off two fowls, with some cocoa nuts, plantains, and bananas. Whilst the boats were on shore, two canoes came up with them, in which were six men: they seemed to be peaceably inclined, and were much the same kind of people as those of King George's Island. They were clothed in a kind of matting; and the first joint of their little finger had been taken off. At the same time about fifty more came down from the country, to within about an hundred yards of the boats, but would advance no farther. Boscawen's Island lies in latitude  $15^{\circ} 50'$  south, longitude  $175^{\circ}$  west, and Keppel's Island in latitude  $15^{\circ} 55'$  south, longitude  $175^{\circ} 3'$  west. The latter is by far the largest, and best of the two; and is a high round isle, abounding with wood, and full of people.
- p. 274. Not being able to procure any water at this island, without too long a delay, and, as it was now the depth of winter, in the southern hemisphere; and the ship was very leaky, on which account she was very unfit to encounter the bad weather she would certainly meet with either in going round Cape Horn, or the Straits of Magellan; for these reasons Captain Wallis determined to make the best of his way to Tinian, from thence to Batavia, and so to Europe, by the Cape of Good Hope. In consequence of this resolution, on the 14th they bore away, and passed Boscawen's Island without visiting it.
- p. 274. On the 16th they again saw land, which, within shore, seemed to be high; but at the water-side it was low, and had a pleasant appearance. The shore was covered with cocoa nut trees, and they saw a few huts, and smoke in several parts up the country. On the boats going ashore, several canoes came up to them, each having six or eight men in them. They appeared to be a robust, active people, were quite naked, except a kind of mat that was wrapped round their



their middle, and were armed with large maces or clubs, in form like that Hercules is represented with. During a short conference with these people, a design was formed by them to seize the cutter; for suddenly laying hold of her, they hauled her upon the rocks; but a musquet being fired near the most active of them, they were so affrighted, that they made off with great precipitation.

Finding there was no safe anchorage at this island, which the officers named Wallis's Island, in honour of their Captain, and which lies in latitude  $13^{\circ} 18'$  south, longitude  $177^{\circ}$  west, they hoisted in their boats, and steered north west for the Island of Tinian; where they anchored on the 19th of September. p. 276. p. 278.

The state of this island they found nearly the same as represented by Commodore Byron, but the heat does not appear to have been quite so intense. They remained here till the 16th of October without any material occurrences happening; when the sick being recovered, their wood and water completed, the ship made ready for sea, and every refreshment the place afforded laid in, they set sail on that day. The latitude of this island, taken at the place where the ship lay at anchor, is  $14^{\circ} 55'$  north, longitude  $214^{\circ} 15'$  west. p. 280.

They now steered a westerly course, having much thunder, lightning, and rain, with strong gales, a heavy sea, and great darkness; so that every man on board was constantly wet to the skin for several days; but on the 28th it grew more moderate, and they altered their course to the south-west. About noon that day they were off the Bashee Islands; and after passing several others, of which nothing remarkable is related, on the 30th of November they anchored in Batavia Road. p. 281. p. 282. p. 286.

On the 18th, during this course, an abrupt conclusion had nearly been put to their voyage, and the fruits of their researches buried in the deep with them. Off the Islands of Pulo Toté and Pulo Weste, the weather was remarkably dark, with heavy squalls of wind, and much lightning and rain. While one of these blasts was blowing with all its violence, and the darkness was so thick that they could not see from one part of the ship to the other; they suddenly discovered,

discovered, by a flash of lightning, a large vessel close aboard of them. The steersman instantly put the helm a-lee, and the ship answering the rudder, they just cleared each other. This was the first ship they had seen since they parted from the Swallow; and it blew so hard, that not being able to understand any thing that was said, they could not learn to what nation it belonged.

p. 290. Having staid a week at Batavia, they set sail; and after suffering much from  
p. 291. fluxes and putrid fevers, on the 4th of February 1768, anchored in Table Bay,  
p. 294. at the Cape of Good Hope. Here Captain Wallis caused all his sick to be carried on shore; and, being extremely ill himself, he was conveyed about eight miles into the country, where he continued all the time the ship lay at this port, and when she was ready to sail, returned on board without having received the least benefit.

p. 296. Having sailed westward 360 degrees from the meridian of London by the 13th of March 1768, they had lost a day; Captain Wallis therefore called the latter part of that day March the 14th.

p. 296. On the 3d of March they left the Cape, and touching at the Island of St.  
p. 299. Helena on the 17th, anchored safely in the Downs on Friday the 20th of May, just 637 days since they weighed anchor in Plymouth Sound.

### Captain C A R T E R E T's Voyage in his Majesty's Ship the S W A L L O W.

p. 305. Captain Carteret, who had made the voyage round the world with the Honourable Commodore Byron, begins his Journal from the time the Dolphin and Swallow first sailed: but, as a detail of their joint transactions has been given in the foregoing Abridgment of Captain Wallis's Narrative, it will be only needful to take it up from the separation of the two ships off the west entrance of the Straits of Magellan. He prefaces his account of the voyage with complaints of the unfitness of the Swallow for so long an expedition,  
she



she having been thirty years in the service, had now only a slight thin sheathing upon her bottom, and was scantily supplied with common necessaries. His remonstrances, however, on this head, were ineffectual; and he was told that the vessel and her equipment were very fit for the service she was to perform. From this answer, he concluded that it was intended he should go no farther than Falkland Islands, where the *Jason*, a fine frigate, which was, like the *Dolphin*, sheathed with copper, and amply equipped, would supply his place; but on his arrival at the Straits of Magellan, he found he was to proceed through the whole voyage. While Captain Carteret was in the Straits, he likewise represented the condition of his ship by letters to Captain Wallis, and requested him to consider whether it was best for his Majesty's service that she should be dismissed, or continue the voyage. The answer he received from Captain Wallis was, that as the Lords of the Admiralty had ordered the *Swallow* on this service, he did not think himself at liberty to alter her destination. p. 309.

They continued therefore to navigate the Straits together till the 10th of April 1767, when the *Swallow* was become so foul, that with all the sails she could set, she could not make so much way as the *Dolphin* with only her topsails, and a reef in them. On that day, at the western entrance of the Straits, and the great South Sea in sight, the *Dolphin*, just as she was nearly abreast of the *Swallow*, set her foresail, which soon carried her ahead; and before nine o'clock in the evening, as she shewed no lights, they lost sight of her. They had a fine easterly breeze, of which they made the best use they could during the night, carrying all their small sails, even to the topgallant studding sails, notwithstanding the danger to which it exposed them; but at day break, the next morning, they could but just see the *Dolphin's* topsails above the horizon; they perceived, however, that she had studding sails set, and at nine o'clock they had entirely lost sight of her. p. 310.

From this time Captain Carteret gave up all hope of seeing the *Dolphin* again till they should arrive in England; no plan of operation having been settled, nor any place of rendezvous appointed, as had been done from England to the Straits of Magellan. Unfortunately, no part of the woollen cloth, linen, beads, p. 311.

beads, &c. which were intended for the use of both ships, and so necessary for obtaining refreshments from the Indians, had, during the nine months they had sailed together, been put on board the Swallow; neither were they provided with a forge or iron, which many circumstances might render absolutely necessary to the preservation of the ship. Captain Carteret had, however, the satisfaction to observe, amidst all these disadvantages, that no marks of dependency appeared among his people.

p. 313. Being come to an anchor, after much anxiety and fatigue, on the 12th, in a little bay in the Straits, which they had not yet cleared, about six o'clock in the evening Captain Carteret went down into his cabin to take some rest, but he had scarcely laid down before he was alarmed with a universal shout and tumult among the people, all that were below running hastily upon the deck, and joining the clamour of those above. The Captain immediately started up, imagining that a gulf had forced the ship from her anchor, and that she was driving out of the bay; but when he came upon deck, he heard the people cry out, The Dolphin! The Dolphin! in a transport of surprize and joy, that appeared to be little short of distraction. A few minutes, however, convinced them, that what had been taken for a sail was nothing more than the water which had been forced up, and whirled about in the air, by one of the violent gusts that are continually coming off the high land, and which, through the haze, had a most deceitful appearance. The crew were for some little time dejected by their disappointment, but their usual fortitude and chearfulness soon returned.

p. 315. After surmounting many dangers and difficulties, particularly off Cape Deseada, where they were in the utmost danger of foundering from the excessive violence  
p. 316. of the wind; on the 15th of April they cleared the western entrance of the Straits, which Captain Carteret judges to be too dangerous for navigation.  
p. 317. They now steered to the northward, along the coast of Chili, and being short of water, made for the Island of Masafuero, or that of Juan Fernandez.

p. 321. On the 9th of May they fell in with the former, and on the 10th the latter; round the north end of which they hauled, and opened Cumberland Bay.  
Captain



Captain Carteret did not know that the Spaniards had fortified this island, consequently he was greatly surprized to see a considerable number of men about the beach, with a house, and four pieces of cannon near the water side, and a fort about three hundred yards from the sea, with Spanish colours flying on it. Being prevented by the sudden gusts of wind which came right out of the bay from entering it, they sailed for the Island of Masafuero; and on the 15th anchored on the east side of it, in the same place where Commodore Byron had lain about two years before; but they were soon driven off by the violence of the wind, without being able to procure only a small quantity of water. And from the 16th to the 24th, they suffered an uninterrupted series of danger, fatigue, and misfortunes upon the coast of this island, at the constant hazard of the boats and the lives of the best men, which nothing but the want of a sufficient stock of water for the uncertain voyage they were about to make, would have induced Captain Carteret to experience.

The Island of Masafuero lies thirty-one leagues to the west of Juan Fernandez, nearly in the same latitude. The south part of it is a very good place for refreshment, especially in the summer season. There is plenty of wood and water all round the island, but they are not to be procured without much difficulty, a great quantity of stones, and large fragments of the rock having fallen from the high land into the sea, on which there breaks a surf very dangerous to boats. Besides the goats and fish, already mentioned in Commodore Byron's Voyage, with which this island abounds, seals are so plenty, that as the boat's crew walked along the shore, these animals were continually running against them, making, at the same time, a most horrible noise. Their skins are covered with the finest fur they had ever seen of the kind. There are many birds here, and among others some very large hawks; of the Pintado birds the people that went on shore caught no less than seven hundred of them in one night; during a gale of wind, they flew faster into a fire that was made than they could well take them out.

After their departure from this island, they sailed to the westward, having dark, hazy, cold weather, with frequent thunder and lightning, fleet, and rain, accompanied with hard gales and heavy seas, as it was now the depth of

p. 341. winter in these parts; till on the 2d of July they discovered land to the northward of them. Upon approaching it the next day, it appeared like a great rock covered with trees, rising out of the sea, about five miles in circumference; and it seemed to be uninhabited. It lies in latitude  $25^{\circ} 2'$  south, longitude  $133^{\circ} 21'$  west, about a thousand leagues westward of the continent of America; and having been discovered by a young gentleman, son to Major Pitcairn, of the marines who was unfortunately lost in the Aurora, Captain Carteret called this first discovery they had made, Pitcairn's Island.

p. 341. While they were in the neighbourhood of this island, the weather was extremely tempestuous, with long rolling billows from the southward, larger and higher than any Captain Carteret had ever seen before. The ship, from  
p. 342. having so long laboured in high and turbulent seas, was now become very crazy; her sails were also much torn; and the people, who had hitherto enjoyed a good state of health, began to be affected with the scurvy.

p. 342. On the 11th they discovered a small, low, flat island, covered with green trees; but it was so far to the windward, that they could not fetch it. It lies in latitude  $22^{\circ}$  south, longitude  $141^{\circ} 34'$  west, and Captain Carteret called it the Bishop of Osnaburgh's Island, in honour of his Majesty's second son.

p. 342. On the 12th they fell in with two small islands, which were likewise covered with green trees, but appeared to be uninhabited. They found no anchorage;  
p. 343. the boat, however, landed on the southermost, and observed that the face of it had a pleasant appearance; yet it afforded neither vegetables nor water. There were many birds upon it so tame, that they suffered themselves to be taken by hand. One of the islands lies in latitude  $20^{\circ} 38'$  south, longitude  $146^{\circ}$  west; the other  $20^{\circ} 34'$  south, longitude  $146^{\circ} 15'$  west, and they were named by Captain Wallis the Duke of Gloucester's Islands.

p. 344. The sickness of the crew, and the defective state of the ship, making it  
p. 345. necessary to bear away to the northward, that they might get into the trade wind; on the 22d they arrived in latitude  $16^{\circ}$  south, where, and not before,  
p. 348. they found it; and on the 12th of August discovered land. Such was their  
distressed



distressed situation at this time, that the sudden transport of hope and joy the discovery inspired throughout the whole crew, was inexpressible.

The land proved to be a cluster of islands, of which they counted seven, p. 348. and had reason to believe there were many more: they kept on towards two of them, which were right ahead; and in the evening anchored on the north east side of the largest and highest of the two. They soon after saw two of the natives, who were black, with woolly heads, and stark naked; but they retired into an impenetrable forest, that reached quite to the water's edge, before the boat could reach the shore.

Finding here a great swell, and that watering in this part of the island would p. 349. be very difficult and dangerous, Captain Carteret dispatched the master, with fifteen men, in the cutter, to search the coast to the westward for a harbour where they might repair the damages the ship had sustained. At his going off he delivered him some beads, ribands, and other trifles, which he chanced to have on board, to conciliate the good will of the natives; and at the same time gave him strict injunctions not to offend them, but by every means in his power to endeavour to open a friendly correspondence with them. p. 350. Soon after he sent the long boat, with ten men ashore, nearly opposite to the ship, for water.

In the afternoon the cutter returned, and the first object that presented itself p. 351. was the master, with three arrows sticking in his body. Having on landing exasperated the natives by his imprudent conduct, a body of three or four hundred, armed with bows and arrows, assembled and drove them to their boat. The bows of the Indians were upwards of six feet long, and their p. 352. arrows more than four feet, of which they kept up a continued flight, discharging in platoons, as regularly as the best disciplined troops in Europe could have done. The boat's crew defended themselves with blunderbusses, each loaded with eight or ten pistol balls, for some time; but some of the natives wading after them breast high into the sea, and others pursuing them with the same fortitude and vigour in their canoes, they were obliged to retreat, and make for the ship; half of them being desperately wounded; of whom the master and three of the best seamen afterwards died.

p. 353. As the expedition to find a better place for the ship had thus unhappily failed, Captain Carteret determined to try what could be done where the ship now lay.

p. 355. But here also he was opposed by the natives, who attacked those that went ashore to great advantage under cover of the thick wood that surrounded the beach, and they could be only kept off by a constant discharge of the ship's guns as well as small arms.

p. 355. Hitherto, though Captain Carteret had been ill of an inflammatory and bilious disorder, he had been able to keep the deck; but this evening he was obliged to take to his bed, to which he was for some time afterwards confined: the master was dying of his wounds; the lieutenant was exceedingly ill; the gunner and thirty of the men were incapable of duty; and there remained no hope  
p. 356. of obtaining here such refreshments as the crew stood in need of. These discouraging circumstances not only put an end to the Captain's hopes of prosecuting the voyage further to the southward, but greatly dispirited the people; and as he had no articles on board by which a recovery of the good will of the natives might be attempted, he gave orders to weigh, on the 17th, and to sail to the westward.

p. 356. This island, which Captain Carteret believes to be the same to which the Spaniards have given the name of Santa Cruz, he denominated Egmont Island, in honour of the Earl of Egmont; calling the place in which the ship had  
p. 362. lain, Swallow Bay, and that where the ship was attacked Bloody Bay. The north east point of it, which he named Cape Byron, lies in latitude  $10^{\circ} 40'$  south, longitude  $164^{\circ} 49'$  east. And to the whole cluster, as well those they did not see distinctly, as those they did, he gave the general name of Queen Charlotte's Islands. Those they approached were Lord Howe's, Lord Egmont's, Trevanion's, Volcano, Keppel's, Lord Edgcumbe's, and Ourry's Islands.

p. 363. The country on Egmont Island, the only one of these they landed at, is in general woody and mountainous, with many vallies intermixed. There are  
p. 358. several small rivers, and many harbours on the coast. As they sailed along,  
p. 358. they saw many houses regularly built; and close to the water side stood one much longer than any of the rest, which seemed to be a kind of council house:  
into



into this the master and his men had been received when they went on shore, and they observed that it was neatly built and thatched, the sides and floor lined with fine matting, and a great number of arrows, made up in bundles, were hung up in it ready for use. They saw, at the same time, many gardens or plantations inclosed by a fence of stone, and planted with cocoa nut-trees, bananas, plaintains, yams, and other vegetables. It likewise produces hogs and poultry.

About three miles to the westward of this town they saw another of considerable extent, in the front of which, next to the water-side, there was a breast-work of stone, formed in angles, like a regular fortification: from this circumstance, from their weapons, and from their military knowledge, it is probable these people have frequent wars among themselves. As they sailed on they saw several other towns, some of them fortified; and near the west end of this island, and a small one adjacent, the whole appeared to be one continued town, and the inhabitants innumerable. p. 258. p. 360.

These people are black, but not quite so black as the natives of Guinea, with a woolly head, and a small beard, well featured, of a common stature, and they go quite naked. They are extremely nimble, vigorous, and active; and seem to be almost as well qualified to live in the water as upon land; they are bold even to temerity; and have a perseverance not common among undisciplined savages. Their canoes in general are small, of rude workmanship, being part of the trunk of a tree made hollow, and, upon occasion, may carry a dozen men; some, however, were seen on the beach of a larger size, and with awnings over them. p. 360. p. 363. p. 357. p. 361. p. 363.

As the ship passed a bay near a point of land on this island, to which Captain Carteret gave the name of Ferrers's Point, there stood a town of great extent, which seemed to swarm like a beehive; out of which came an incredible number of people, and holding something in their hands that appeared like a wisp of green grass, stroked each other with it, at the same time dancing or running in a ring. p. 359.

Captain

p. 361. Captain Carteret still continued extremely ill; and the greatest part of his crew being in the same situation, the rest dispirited, and without any officer to lead and direct them, it was become impossible for him to procure refreshments, though they appeared to be in great plenty at Egmont Island; nor could he for the same reason examine the other islands that were near it; and as there was danger of losing the monsoon by a longer delay, no time was to be lost. He therefore gave orders to steer to the northward, hoping to meet with the refreshments he could not obtain here, at the country Dampier has called Nova Britannia.

p. 364. This being done, they sailed on the 18th of August with a fresh trade wind from the eastward; and on the 20th discovered a small, low, flat island, in latitude  $7^{\circ} 56'$  south, longitude  $158^{\circ} 56'$  east, to which Captain Carteret gave the name of Gower's Island. They found no anchorage here, and could only procure a few cocoa nuts from the inhabitants, who are much the same kind of people as those at Egmont Island.

p. 364. The next day, the 21st, the current, which had driven them to the southward of the above island, brought them in sight of two more. These were situated nearly east and west of each other, and were distant about two miles: that to the eastward, which they called Simpson's Island, is much the smallest; the other is lofty, and has a stately appearance, and to this they gave the name of Carteret's Island. Being right to windward they did not work up to them.

p. 366. On the 24th they fell in with nine islands, lying in latitude  $4^{\circ} 36'$  south, longitude  $154^{\circ} 17'$  east, which Captain Carteret supposes to be the islands called Ohang Java, discovered by Tasman. He here observes that the three just mentioned Gower's, Simpson's, and Carteret's, had never, in his opinion, been seen by any European navigator before. To which he adds, "There is  
p. 367. "certainly much land in this part of the ocean not yet known." One of the nine islands, seen this day, is of considerable extent; the other eight are scarcely better than large rocks: but though they are low and flat, they are well covered with wood, and abound with inhabitants. The people of them are also black and woolly headed, like those of Egmont Island; and make use of the same weapons.

The



The same evening they fell in, to the northward, with another island of considerable extent, flat, green, and of a pleasant appearance. They saw none of the inhabitants, but, by the many fires seen in the night, it appeared to be well peopled. It lies in latitude  $4^{\circ} 50'$  south, and Captain Carteret called it Sir Charles Hardy's Island. The next morning they discovered another large high island, which, rising in three considerable hills, had, at a distance, the appearance of three islands. To this they gave the name of Winchelsea Island. p. 367.

On the 26th they saw another large island to the northward, which Captain Carteret concluded to be that discovered by Schouten, and called by him the Island of Saint John. And soon after they saw high land to the westward, which proved to be Nova Britannia. On the 28th, having anchored in a bay, near a little uninhabited island, which they called Wallis's Island, and from which they got about one hundred and fifty cocoa nuts; all the united strength of the whole ship's company was not sufficient to weigh the anchor again. An alarming proof of their disability. And it was not till the next day that they were able to get it up. p. 368.

From this place they sailed to a little cove about four miles distant, to which they gave the name of English Cove. Here they anchored, and immediately began to get wood and water, which they found in great plenty, as well as ballast. But though it abounded with fish, they were able to catch very few; and, notwithstanding they saw several turtle, these animals were so shy, that they could not catch one. So that they were condemned to the curse of Tantalus, perpetually in sight of what their appetites most importunately craved, and perpetually disappointed in their attempts to reach it. They, however, at length, got a few rock oysters, and cockles from the rocks; and from the shore, some cocoa nut and cabbages from a tree which bears that name. This supply of vegetables recovered the sick very fast, and proved an inexpressible refreshment to the whole crew. p. 369.

The shore about the place is rocky, the country high and mountainous, and covered with trees of various kinds: among these were the nutmeg, cocoa nut, and beetle nut-trees; all the different kinds of palms; several species of the olive, p. 370.

olive, canes, bamboos, and rattans, together with some trees of an enormous growth; and many other unknown trees, shrubs, and plants; but no esculent vegetable of any kind. The woods abound with pigeons, doves, rooks, parrots, and a large bird, with a black plumage, that makes a noise somewhat like the barking of a dog, with many others. The only quadrupeds seen were two of a small size like dogs, which were very wild. They saw centipeds, scorpions, and a few serpents, but no inhabitants.

p. 371. While they lay here, they stopped the leaks of the ship as well as they could, and payed her bottom, which was much eaten by the worms, with a mixture of hot pitch and tar; and took possession of the country for his Majesty.

p. 372. The boats having, in examining the coast, met with a fine little harbour, about four leagues W. N. W. that abounded with cocoa nuts; on the 7th of September they weighed and stood for it. Here they stocked themselves with cocoa nuts and cabbages; and Captain Carteret would have staid long enough to have given his people all the refreshment they wanted; but the season of the year made the shortest delay dangerous, as, from the bad state of the ship, the lives of all on board depended on their getting to Batavia, while the monsoon continued to blow from the eastward. They therefore quitted this station, to which the name of Carteret Harbour was given, the best that had fallen to their lot during their whole run from the Straits of Magellan on the 9th.

p. 375. As they now found it impossible, against both wind and current, to pursue the track that Dampier had gone, they were under the necessity of attempting a passage to the westward by a gulph that presented itself between Cape Saint George and Cape Oxford, and into which the current set. On the southernmost side lies the island of Nova Britannia, or New Britain, which Captain Carteret left in possession of its ancient name; and to the northern island, on which they had procured the refreshments, just mentioned, he gave the name of Nova Hibernia, or New Ireland.



In the channel that divides the island, they fell in with another pretty large p. 375. one, which he named the Duke of York's Island. The land of it is level, p. 376. and has a delightful appearance; and near the water side, among groves of cocoa nut trees, stand the houses of the natives; whose canoes are neatly made. The latitude of this island is  $4^{\circ} 9'$  south, longitude  $151^{\circ} 20'$  east. p. 377.

Having left the Coast of New Britain on the 11th, they continued to steer p. 377. along the Coast of New Ireland, through a Strait, which Captain Carteret named St. George's Channel, and the next day discovered a fine large island p. 378. in latitude  $2^{\circ} 53'$  south, longitude  $149^{\circ} 17'$  east, to which he gave the name of Sandwich Island, in honour of the Earl of Sandwich, then first Lord of the Admiralty. This island is larger than the Duke of York's Island, has a pleasant appearance, and is very populous. All the while they lay off it they heard an incessant noise in the night, like the beating of a drum.

As soon as they had passed Sandwich Island, ten canoes put off from New Ireland, with about one hundred and fifty men on board, who exchanged some trifles for bits of old iron and nails, but none of them would venture on board. Their canoes are very long and very narrow; one of them could not be less than ninety feet long. The people are nearly the same as those before p. 379. described at Egmont Island, and like them, they were all stark naked, except a few ornaments made of shells upon their arms and legs. But, what is remarkable, the hair, or rather wool upon their heads, was very abundantly powdered with white powder; and just above one ear was stuck a feather taken from the tail of the common dunghill cock; from whence it may be concluded that they have poultry.\* They were armed with spears, and long sticks or poles.

Over against the north west coast of New Ireland lies a fine large island, to p. 380. which Captain Carteret gave the name of New Hanover. The land of it is high, and finely covered with trees, among which are many plantations; and the whole has a beautiful appearance. And about eight leagues to the westward of this, they saw six or seven small islands, which he called the Duke of Portland's Islands.

p. 381. On the 13th they cleared this strait, which, Captain Carteret here observes, is a much better and shorter passage, either to the eastward or westward, than round the land and islands to the northward, the rout pursued by Dampier; and probably more convenient, as there is no doubt but refreshments of every kind might be procured upon the coasts of the channel, or the islands lying near them, for iron tools, &c. &c. of which the natives are immoderately fond, but with which, to the great misfortune of the Captain, he was not furnished. He here likewise laments, that from his being so much enfeebled and dispirited by sickness, as almost to sink under the duty that for want of officers devolved upon him, he is not able to give a more full and circumstantial description of this country, its productions, and people.

p. 382. As soon as they had cleared Saint George's Channel, they steered westward; and the next day discovered an island of considerable extent, bearing W. N. W. As they proceeded, they discovered more land, consisting of many islands,

p. 383. lying to the southward of that they had just seen. As the ship passed the former, a considerable number of canoes, with several hundred people, came off, and paddled towards her: one of them, with seven men, came near enough to hail, to whom such trifles as they had were shewn, and signs of friendship made; but, in return, they threw their lances, with great force, where the crew stood thickest on deck. Captain Carteret, judging it better to prevent than to repress a general attack, ordered some muskets and several swivel guns to be fired; upon which, some of them being killed or wounded, the rest rowed off, and joined the other canoes. They afterwards repeated their attack, but succeeded no better.

p. 384. The canoe that approached the second time, being taken, they found it to be, though the smallest of the whole, full fifty feet long, but very rudely made out of one tree: in it were six fine fish and a turtle, some yams, one cocoa nut, and a bag full of a small kind of apple or plumb, of a sweetish taste, and farinaceous substance; there were also two large earthen pots, shaped somewhat like a jug; and a considerable quantity of matting,

p. 385. which is used by them both for sails and awning. These Indians are the same kind of people as those on the Coast of New Ireland; ornamented exactly alike, but in addition to the powder on their heads, the faces of these were painted with white streaks, and they chew beetle nut. Their lances were pointed with a kind of bluish flint.

Having



Having disengaged themselves from this fierce and unfriendly people, they pursued their course along the other islands, which were between twenty and thirty in number, and of a considerable extent; one in particular would alone make a large kingdom. Captain Carteret named them the Admiralty Islands, and would have examined them, had the ship been in a better condition, and he been provided with articles proper for the Indian trade; especially as their appearance was very inviting. The middle of the largest lies in latitude about  $2^{\circ} 18'$  south, longitude  $146^{\circ} 44'$  east. p. 385.

Having passed in their course several small islands, they saw land ahead on the 25th, which proved to be three others of nearly the same size. From these, several canoes soon came off, filled with the natives, who, after making signs of peace, came on board without the least appearance of fear or distrust. For a few cocoa nuts, which was the only thing they had with them, Captain Carteret gave one of them a few pieces of an old iron hoop, which threw him into an extacy little short of distraction. These people are of the Indian copper colour, the first of that complexion they had seen in these parts, with fine long black hair, and little beards: their features are pleasing, and their teeth remarkably white and even; they are of the common stature, but nimble, vigorous, and active, to a surprizing degree; their disposition is free and open; they eat and drank whatever was given them; went without hesitation into every part of the ship, and were as familiar and merry with the crew, as if they had been of long and intimate acquaintance; they had only a slight covering round the waist, consisting of a narrow piece of matting. Their canoes were very well and neatly made. They strongly urged the Captain to go on shore, offering to leave an equal number of their own people on board the while; but a strong westerly current prevented this offer from being accepted. p. 388.

Perceiving this, one of them insisted upon going with him; and notwithstanding all Captain Carteret and his companions could say or do, he obstinately refused to go on shore. As Captain Carteret thought this man might be the means of his making some useful discovery, he did not order him to be put on shore by force, but indulged him in his desire. To his great concern, however, p. 389.

he perceived that the poor fellow, whom he named Joseph Freewill, from his readiness to go with them, became gradually sickly, after he had been some time at sea. He lived only till they got to the Island of Celebes, where he died. The largest of these islands, which the natives called Pegan, and to which Captain Carteret gave the name of Joseph Freewill's Island, lies in 50 minutes north of the line, and in 137° 51' east longitude.

p. 391. Pursuing their course on the N. W. on the 27th of October they arrived on the coast of the Island of Mindanao. The boat going ashore to procure refreshments, observed at the southernmost extremity of the island a town and a fort. As soon as she was discovered by the people there, they fired a great gun, and sent off three boats or canoes full of people; and the Lieutenant, who commanded the boat, not having sufficient force with him to oppose them, returned to the ship.

p. 392. Being thus disappointed of landing here, on the 2d of November they anchored in a little bay to the eastward, and procured from a river that was  
p. 393. near two boat loads of water; but about nine o'clock at night they were surprised by a loud noise on that part of the shore abreast of the ship, made by a great number of human voices, which very much resembled the war-hoop of the American savages.

p. 394. The next day, a parley taking place on shore, one of the people addressed the Lieutenant in Dutch, and afterwards in bad Spanish: in which language, having asked many questions, he promised that they should be introduced to the  
p. 395. Governor, and all their wants supplied. But about two hours after many hundreds of men posted themselves among the trees on the beach, armed with muskets, bows and arrows, long pikes or spears, broad swords, hangers  
p. 396. and targets. It was in Captain Carteret's power to have destroyed many of these unfriendly people by firing his great guns, but it would have answered no purpose. And still hoping to procure refreshments, upon friendly terms, at the town, he resolved to visit it.

Accordingly,



Accordingly, early on the 4th, they sailed from this place, which he called Deceitful Bay. But just as they arrived off the town, the weather becoming thick, with heavy rain, and the wind blowing hard towards the shore, they were obliged to stand off, and having no time to lose, Captain Carteret thought it most prudent to bear away for Batavia. p. 396.

All the southern part of Mindanao is extremely pleasant, with many spots where the woods have been cleared for plantations; and fine lawns, of a beautiful verdure. This part also is thickly inhabited, as well as the neighbouring islands. It lies in about  $6^{\circ} 15'$  north latitude, and  $127^{\circ} 20'$  east longitude. Captain Carteret suspects that this opposition to their landing was made by some Dutchmen who were in the town, or at least Dutch partisans, to prevent their having any intercourse with the natives. p. 399. p. 398. p. 401.

After leaving Mindanao, greatly disappointed in their hope of procuring the necessaries they so much wanted, they stood to the westward, and the ship sailing so ill, they made but little way; by the 3d of December the ravages of the scurvy were become universal. Through the insufficiency of the hands to navigate the ship, occasioned by this disease, they were in continual danger, from the tempestuous weather that prevailed; and the winds and currents were so strong against them, that they endeavoured in vain to find a place of refreshment. In this deplorable situation, which one would imagine it was almost out of the reach of fortune to increase; on the 10th they had the additional misfortune to be attacked, without any previous suspicion, by a pirate, at midnight: this sudden attack, however, rather roused than depressed them; and though the pirate attempted to board them before they had the least apprehension of an enemy being near, they defeated his purpose. He then plied them very briskly with what they supposed to be swivels and small arms; and wounded the lieutenant and one of the men; but they soon returned his salute with such effect, that shortly after he sunk, and all on board perished. It was a small vessel; and they afterwards learnt that she belonged to a freebooter, who had more than thirty such ships under his command. p. 402. p. 405. p. 406.

On

p. 407. On the 12th they had the mortification to find that the westerly monsoon was set in; against which, and the current, it was impossible for any ship to get as far westward as Batavia. It was, therefore, necessary to wait till the return of the eastern monsoon. As they had buried thirteen of the crew, and thirty more were at the point of death; as all the petty officers were among the sick; and the Captain and Lieutenant, who did all duties, were in a feeble condition; the only course they could pursue to preserve the lives of the rest, was to endeavour to reach Macassar, the principal settlement of the Dutch upon the Island of Celebes.

p. 408. In pursuance of this plan, they bore away for it, and on the 15th anchored about four miles from that town, which lies in latitude  $5^{\circ} 10'$  or  $5^{\circ} 12'$  south, longitude  $117^{\circ} 28'$  east; having spent no less than five and thirty weeks in their passage from the Straits of Magellan. Here they were, at first, in the most inhuman manner refused admittance by the Dutch Governor; but the resolute and steady conduct of Captain Carteret afterwards, procured them permission to anchor in Bonthain Bay, where they procured plenty of fresh provisions, refitted their ship in the best manner they could, and re-established the health of the crew. Bonthain, which, together with Macassar, are the two principal towns in the Isle of Celebes, the key of the Molucca or Spice Islands, lies in latitude  $5^{\circ} 30'$  south, longitude  $117^{\circ} 53'$  east; the country around it is level, and has a most beautiful appearance; and from the great number of houses interspersed among the plantations and groves of cocoa nut trees, seems to be very populous.

p. 418. As soon as Captain Carteret arrived at Bonthain, he altered the ship's reckoning, as he had lost eighteen hours in coming by the west; and the Europeans he found there, having come by the east, had gained about six, so that the difference was just a day.

p. 426. Having remained here upwards of five months, the season in which navigation to the westward is practicable, to their great satisfaction arrived; they accordingly sailed on the 22d of May 1768 from this place, and on the 3d of June anchored in Batavia Road. They had now great reason to congratulate themselves on their situation; for, during the whole of their passage from Celebes,



Celebes, the ship admitted so much water by her leaks, that they could scarcely keep her from sinking, with two pumps constantly going.

The defects of the ship, being at length after a tedious delay repaired, they p. 439. left Batavia on the 15th of September; and Captain Carteret thought himself happy in being able to procure a supply of English seamen here, as he had now p. 440. lost no less than four and twenty of the hands he had brought out of Europe, and had the same number so ill, that seven of them died on his passage to the Cape of Good Hope.

On the 28th of November they anchored on Table Bay, at the Cape, where p. 441. the recovery of his people made it necessary for Captain Carteret to continue till the 6th of January 1769, when he again set sail, and after a fine and p. 442. pleasant passage, arrived on the 20th at the Island of Saint Helena. From this place they proceeded on the 24th, and having touched at the Island of Ascension p. 442. on the 30th, they were spoke with on the 19th of February by Monsieur Bougainville, who was likewise returning from a similar voyage round the p. 443. world, and who sent an officer on board the *Swallow*, to endeavour to gain from Captain Carteret some intelligence relative to the success of his expedition; but in this he was disappointed by the prudent answers of the Captain to the inquiries that were artfully made. And on the 20th of March, to their great p. 448. joy, they anchored at Spithead; having been absent from England three years and seven months.

## Monfieur BOUGAINVILLE's Voyage in the Frigate LA BOUDEUSE.

Monfieur Bougainville sailed from Nantes on the 5th of November 1766, p. 2. in his most Christian Majesty's frigate *La Boudeuse*, of twenty-six twelve-pounders, in order to restore to the Spaniards the Isles Malouines or Falkland Islands, on which the French had lately established a settlement. At that place he was to be joined by the store ship *L'Etoile*, which was to bring him an additional supply of provisions, and he was then to proceed to the East p. 1. Indies, by crossing the South Seas between the tropics.

Having

- p. 3. Having received some damage, in a violent squall of wind, soon after his departure from Nantes, he put into Brest, to get his damages repaired, and
- p. 5. sailed from thence on the 5th of December; his compliment of men consisting of two hundred and eleven persons, including eleven commissioned officers and three volunteers,
- p. 11. On the 27th of January, 1767, he entered Rio de la Plata, on the coast of
- p. 32. Brazil, and on the 31st anchored in Montevideo Bay. On the 28th of February he left this place, in company with two Spanish frigates and a tartan, laden with cattle, and on the 23d of March entered the great Bay at Falkland Islands.
- p. 71. Having waited here in vain for the arrival of the store ship, during the months of March, April, and May, Monsieur Bougainville left these islands, in order to go to Rio Janeiro, which he had pointed out as a rendezvous to M. de la Giraudais, Commander of the Etoile, in case any thing should prevent his joining him at the Malouines. As the Boudeuse had no more room than just sufficient to hold six months provisions for the crew, he could not attempt to traverse the Pacific Ocean with her alone.
- p. 72. At Rio Janeiro he found the Etoile; whose departure from Rochefort had
- p. 73. been retarded till February, which, added to the bad condition of her rigging and hull, had prevented her from being at the Malouines by the time appointed. This junction, however, now enabling Monsieur Bougainville to continue his
- p. 121. expedition, he departed from hence the 14th of July; but being obliged once more to put into Montevideo, for the repair of the Etoile, and to make some
- p. 124. addition to their stores, it was the 14th of November before they quitted the coast of Brazil.
- p. 128. On the 2d of December they got sight of Cape Virgin Mary, on the coast of Patagonia, in latitude  $52^{\circ} 20'$  south, longitude  $71^{\circ} 49'$  west, from the meridian of Paris; soon after of Terra del Fuego, and on the 6th entered the Straits of Magellan.
- p. 139. Landing near the first narrow or gut, on the 8th they had an interview with some of the natives. The account given by Monsieur Bougainville of the appearance



appearance and disposition of these people is much the same as that of the foregoing English navigators. With regard to their height, which appeared so very extraordinary to Commodore Byron, he nearly agrees, allowing for the difference between the French and English measure, with the description given of them by Captain Wallis: "What makes them appear so gigantic," he says, "are their prodigious broad shoulders, the size of their heads, and the thickness of their limbs." Their colour, he observes, is bronzed, as it is in all the native Americans, without exception, as well those who inhabit the torrid zone, as those who are born in the temperate and frigid ones. He believes they lead the life of Tartars; as besides rambling through the immense plains of South America on horseback, pursuing the game or the wild beasts, like the Tartars they probably pillage the caravans of travellers. He took notice, as Captain Wallis did, that they pronounced several Spanish words; but the word which they made use of so frequently, and which in the ears of the English sounded like *chevow*, appeared to the French to be *shawwa*; and to ingratiate themselves with the Indians, they did not fail, as the boat put off the shore, to shout *shawwa* so loud, that the whole coast resounded with it.

After as boisterous and hazardous a passage as those of the English navigators, they doubled Cape Pillar, and cleared the Straits of Magellan on the 26th of January, 1768. The weather, though it was now the midst of summer in the southern hemisphere, was such as the inhabitants of Paris cannot form any idea of from the worst winter they ever experience. And notwithstanding the shrubs and plants were in flower, and the trees afforded a very brilliant verdure, the most lively temper would be overcome in this dreadful climate; which is shunned by animals in general, and where a handful of people lead a languid life.

Continual squalls, with fogs, hail, rain, and snow, were their portion, during the greatest part of this passage; and such is the nature of the climate, that from the sudden and frequent changes of the weather, it is impossible to foresee these quick and dangerous revolutions. Monsieur Bougainville, however, observes, that notwithstanding the difficulties he met with in these Straits, he would prefer this course to that of doubling Cape Horn, from the month of September to the end of March. During the other months in the year, when

the nights are sixteen, seventeen, and eighteen hours long, he would advise to pass through the open sea.

p. 204. Being now entered the great Pacific Ocean, during the month of February and part of March, they steered to the N. W. till on the 22d they saw at once four little islands bearing S. S. E. and another about four leagues west. The four isles, which Monsieur Bougainville named *Les quatre Facardins*; the four lying too far to windward, they stood for the little isle a-head. As they approached it, they discovered that it was surrounded with a very level sand, and that all the interior parts of it were covered with thick woods, above which the cocoa nut trees raised their fertile heads. The verdure charmed their eyes, while the cocoa nut trees every where exposed their fruits to their sight, and overshadowed a grass plat adorned with flowers; thousands of birds were hovering about the shore, and seemed to announce a coast abounding in fish. But this pleasing prospect was clouded by their not being able to find, on any part of the island, a single harbour or creek which might serve for shelter, or stem the force of the sea.

p. 205. Thus losing all hopes of landing here, unless at the evident risk of having their boats staved to pieces, they resumed their course. But just before they departed, they saw three men running to the sea shore, who presently returned into the woods, and soon after came out again with fourteen or fifteen more. They were naked, and bore very long pikes, which they brandished against the ships, with signs of threatening. After this bravado, they retired to the woods, where, by means of their glasses, the people on board could distinguish huts, and perceive that the natives were very tall, and of a bronze colour.

p. 206. This island Monsieur Bougainville called *Isle des Lanciers*, the *Isle of Lance-bearers*.

p. 206. The next day they discovered an island formed by two very narrow slips of  
p. 207. land, which seemed to be composed of nothing but sandy downs, interspersed with low grounds, on which were neither trees nor verdure. The higher downs are covered with cocoa nuts and other lesser trees, which were very shady. In a kind of lake, which the island forms, they saw periaguas, some sailing, others paddling. The savages in them were naked. In the evening, they saw a great number



number of these islanders along the coast. They seemed to have the same long lances as the inhabitants of the first island. But as a bar, over which the sea broke with great violence, lay along the whole coast, and prevented the boats from landing, they continued their course on the 24th, and left this inaccessible island; which, on account of its figure, Monsieur Bougainville called *Isle de la Harpe*, or *Harp Island*.

From the 25th to the 27th they continued to sail between low and partly p. 208.  
overflowed islands, four of which they examined, all of the same nature, and all inaccessible. Monsieur Bougainville gave the name of the *Dangerous Archipelago* to this cluster of islands, of which they saw eleven, and probably there were more.

Towards the end of this month they had frequent storms, and it rained p. 210.  
continually; so that the scurvy made its appearance on eight or ten of the p. 211.  
crew: moistness being one of the most powerful causes of this disease. Each sailor was allowed daily a pint of lemonade, prepared with a kind of powder, called powder of *faciot*, which they made great use of during the voyage. They distilled about a barrel of the sea water a day, which, thus deprived of its salt, they employed in making broth, and in boiling meat and legumes; and, by way of sparing the fresh water, they always kneaded their bread with salt water.

On the 2d of April they perceived to the N. N. E. a high and steep mountain, p. 211.  
seemingly surrounded by the sea, which Monsieur Bougainville called the *Boudoir*,  
or the *Peak of the Boudeuse*. Standing to the northward, in order to make this p. 212.  
island plain, they saw more land bearing W. by N. on which, to their great joy, they saw, during the night, fires burning in every part, from whence they concluded that it was inhabited.

On the 4th, as they approached this land, several periaguas came off, and p. 213.  
having presented branches of bananas, as a token of friendship, an exchange of cocoa nuts, bananas, and other fruits of the country, for all sorts of trifles took place. They spent the 5th in plying to find anchorage; when the aspect p. 214.

of the coast, elevated like an amphitheatre, offered them the most enchanting prospect.

p. 217. The next day they anchored in a road within the reef, in 34 fathom, with a bottom of grey sand, shells, and gravel. As they drew near the shore, the number of islanders surrounding the ships increased. The periaguas were so numerous about them, that they had much-a-do to warp in. All the natives kept continually crying out *tayo*, which means friend; giving at the same time a thousand signs of friendship, and asking for nails and ear-rings. Many of the periaguas were full of females, most of whom were naked, and who, for agreeable features and beauty of person, might vie with the finest of the European women. These were offered by the men of the island in a manner that admitted of no misconception, to the service of their new visitors.

p. 220. As soon as the ships were moored, Monsieur Bougainville went ashore, accompanied by several of his officers. An immense croud of men and women received them there, and could not be tired with looking at them. Some of the boldest ventured to touch them, and even pushed aside their clothes, as if to see whether they were formed exactly like themselves. The natives were all unarmed; and, unlike the reception they at first gave Captain Wallis, expressed great joy at their arrival. The Chief of this district conducted them to his house, where they found five or six women, and a venerable old man. The women saluted them by laying their hands on their breasts, and saying, several times, *tayo*. The old man was the father of the Chief. He had no other character of old age than that respectable one which is imprinted on a fine figure: his head was adorned with white hair; he had a long beard; all his body was nervous and fleshy, and he had neither wrinkles, nor shewed any marks of decrepitude. This venerable man, instead of sharing in the raptures enjoyed by the rest on this occasion, seemed rather to be displeased with their arrival, and retired without answering their civilities.

p. 222. The Chief then proposed that they should sit down upon the grass, before his house, where he ordered some fruit, broiled fish, and water, to be set before them; after which he presented them with some pieces of cloth, and put on them some of the ornaments of the country; but during their stay a pistol was



was stolen out of the pocket of one of the officers. They were accompanied to their boats by the Chief and all his people. When they were almost come to the beach, they were stopped by an islander of a fine figure, who, lying under a tree, invited them to sit down by him on the grass. They accepted his offer. p. 223. He then leaned towards them, and with a tender air, slowly sung a song, to the sound of a flute, which another Indian blew with his nose. Four of the Islanders went with great confidence to sup and sleep on board, where they were entertained with music of different instruments, and with fire-works; a sight which caused a mixture of surprise and horror in them.

On the 7th, the Chief they had visited, whose name was Ereti, came on board. He brought with him a hog, some fowls, and the pistol which had been stolen at his house the day before. An act of justice that gave them a good opinion of him. The same day, after some objections from Ereti's father, and some of the principal people of the district, they were suffered to form a camp, and bring their sick, which were twelve from the Boudeuse and twenty-two from the Etoile, ashore attended by a guard. Hither the natives, from all sides, brought fowls, hogs, fish, and pieces of cloth, which they exchanged for nails, tools, beads, buttons, and numberless other trifles, which were treasures to these people. p. 224. p. 225.

All their transactions were carried on with the natives in as friendly a manner as possible, if thieving be excepted. Though it does not appear that stealing is usual among themselves, nothing being shut up in their houses, yet, during the two first nights, several things were stolen, notwithstanding the guards and patrols; probably their curiosity for new objects might excite desires in them which they were not able to withstand. p. 227.

The crews of the ships were daily walking about the country, without arms, either quite alone, or in small companies. They were invited to enter the houses, where the inhabitants offered them refreshment; nor did their civility stop here; for after the collation, their hosts offered them young girls. p. 227.

I have

- p. 228. I have frequently, says Monsieur Bougainville, been in the interior parts of the island, and thought myself transported into the Garden of Eden. A numerous people there enjoy the blessings which nature showers liberally down upon them. Every where we found hospitality, ease, and every appearance of happiness, among them.
- p. 232. On the 12th, the wind blowing violently from the south, the Boudeuse parted from some of her anchors, and was in danger of driving on the shore. And while Monsieur Bougainville was busily occupied with a piece of work on which the safety of his people depended, he was informed that three of the natives had been killed or wounded with bayonets, in their huts; that the alarm was spread in the country; that the old men, women, and children, were fled towards the mountains with their goods, and even with the bodies of the dead; and that he should perhaps be attacked by an army of these enraged men. This gave him room to fear a war on shore, at the very moment when both ships were upon the point of being stranded.
- p. 233. He therefore went immediately to the camp, and, in the presence of the Chief, put four soldiers in irons, who were suspected to be the authors of the crime. These proceedings seemed to content the natives, and happily the night passed very quietly in the camp, excepting some alarms occasioned by thieves.
- p. 233. From ten o'clock in the evening the wind freshened very much from the east, attended with a heavy swell, rain, tempest, and every sad appearance that could augment the horror of their situation. After combating great difficulties, and running the most imminent hazard of shipwreck, for two days, on
- p. 237. the 14th the Etoile got without the reef; and on the 15th having toiled all
- p. 238. day and part of the night to complete their water, and to remove the hospital and camp, the Boudeuse joined her.
- p. 235. When the day had appeared, on the 13th, no Indian came near the camp, not a single periagua was seen sailing, all the neighbouring houses were abandoned, and the whole country appeared as a desert. But the Prince of Nassau, who was on shore, found means to renew the confidence of the natives, and they brought more refreshments to the camp than ever.

Before



Before Monsieur Bougainville was thus forced away by the weather, he buried, p. 238.  
near the shed that had been their hospital, an act of taking possession of the  
country inscribed on an oak plank, and a bottle well corked and glued, con-  
taining the names of the officers of both ships; and he followed the same  
method in regard to all the lands discovered during this voyage.

When Ereti perceived the ships were under sail, at day break, he leaped alone p. 240.  
into the first periagua he could find at the shore, and came on board. He  
there embraced them all, held them some moments in his arms, shedding tears  
and appearing much affected at their departure. Soon after, his great periagua  
came on board, laden with refreshments of all kinds. In it were his wives,  
and with them an islander, who had lodged on board the Etoile on their first  
arrival. Ereti presented this man, whose name was Aotourou, to Monsieur Bou- p. 241.  
gainville, giving him to understand that he desired to go with him, and beg-  
ging him to consent to it. He then presented him to each of the officers, telling  
them that he was one of his friends, whom he entrusted with those who were  
likewise his friends, and recommending him to them with the greatest signs of  
concern. They now made Ereti more presents of all sorts; after which he  
took leave of them, and returned to his wives, who did not cease to weep all  
the time of the periagua's being along-side of them.

This island, which Monsieur Bougainville at first called New Cythera, and p. 242.  
says, it is known by the name of Taiti among its inhabitants, is known  
to the English navigators by the name of Otaheite; and was discovered,  
as already observed, by Captain Wallis, in June 1767; and who, on taking pos-  
session of it for his Majesty, named it King George the Third's Island. As  
this place is so particularly described in the following pages, and the account  
given of its inhabitants by Monsieur Bougainville, according to his translator,\*  
abounds with mistakes; the reader is referred to the description hereafter given.

Monsieur Bougainville here informs us, that he learnt from Aotourou, the native p. 273.  
he brought away with him, that about eight months before his arrival at this  
place an English ship had touched there. It is, he continues, the same which  
was commanded by Mr. Wallis. The same chance by which we have discovered

\* Vide Forster's Translation, note, page 221.

this isle, has likewise conducted the English thither, whilst we lay in Rio de la Plata. From hence, doubtless, he observes, proceeds the knowledge of iron, which I found among the natives. To this he adds, "I am yet ignorant  
 " whether the people of Taiti, as they owe their first knowledge of iron to  
 " the English, may not likewise be indebted to them for the venereal disease,  
 " which we found had been naturalized among them." On the contrary, Captain Wallis\* seems to prove, from circumstances which strongly tend to confirm his assertion, that the people under the command of the French navigator must have first communicated the infection.

\*Hawke-  
 fworth's  
 Voyages,  
 Vol. I.  
 p. 269.

p. 274. On the 16th of April they took their departure from Taiti, and soon after perceived land to leeward, which Aotourou said was an island called Oumaitia.  
 p. 275. He gave them, at the same time, to understand, that it was inhabited by a nation allied to his: to the Island of Taiti and those which he had discovered near it, forming the second division of isles in this vast ocean, Monsieur Bougainville gave the name of the Archipelago of Bourbon.

p. 278. The 3d of May they discovered more land to the N. W. which proved to  
 p. 279. be an island extending two leagues E. and W. Its shores are every where steep, and the whole isle is, as it were, nothing more than a high mountain, covered with trees to its summit, without either vallies or plains. They saw fires on it; some huts covered with reeds, built under the shadow of cocoa nut trees; and about thirty men running along the sea shore, upon which the sea broke violently.

p. 280. As they coasted along this isle a periagua approached the ships, but the people in it kept at a distance, and could not be prevailed upon to come on board. Aotourou addressed them in his language without being understood. Soon after several other periaguas arrived, some of them under sail. The people in these, less mistrustful, came near enough to make exchanges. They brought with them yams, cocoa nuts, a water hen of a superb plumage, and some pieces of a very fine shell, together with stuffs of the same make as those of Taiti, but much coarser, and dyed with ugly red, brown and black colours, and sundry other articles; for which they did not choose to take iron, preferring little bits of red stuffs.

These



These islanders, who did not appear to be so gentle as those of Taiti, were of p. 281.  
a middle size, active, and nimble. They paint their breast and their thighs,  
almost down to the knee, of a dark blue; their colour is bronzed; they shave  
or pluck out their beards; and they had all black hair, which stood upright on  
the head. Their periaguas are made with a great deal of skill, and have an  
out-rigger.

In the evening of the 4th they discovered more land to the W. S. W. which, p. 282.  
on the 5th, they found to be a very fine island, interspersed with mountains and  
vast plains, covered with cocoa nut and many other trees. They ranged along  
its southern coast without seeing any appearance of anchorage, the sea breaking  
upon the shore very violently. A great number of periaguas came around the p. 283.  
ships, without venturing along-side, the Indians in which seemed to invite  
them by signs to come on shore; but the breakers prevented it. Though the  
ships ran seven or eight knots at this time, yet the periaguas sailed round them  
with as much ease as if they had been at anchor.

The next day they got sight of more land to the westward, which appeared to p. 283.  
be as high and of as great extent as the other islands, from which it was about  
twelve leagues distant. But a thick fog that rose in the afternoon, and continued  
all the night and the ensuing day, prevented their viewing it more particularly.  
They distinguished at its N. E. extremity two little isles of unequal sizes.

The longitude of these islands is nearly the same in which Abel Tasman was, p. 283.  
by his reckoning, when he discovered the Isles of Amsterdam, Rotterdam,  
Pylstaart, and that of Prince William. It is likewise the same, which, within  
a very little, is assigned to Solomon's Isles. To this chain of islands, lying under p. 284.  
the same meridian, and which make the third division, Monsieur Bougainville  
gave the name of *L'Archipel des Navigateurs*, the *Archipelago of the Navigators*.

On the 12th they discovered another island, which he named *L'Enfant Perdu*, p. 284.  
or *the Forlorn Hope*; a head wind prevented their approaching it, and their  
situation was become by this time almost desperate. Bad weather had begun on  
the 6th of this month, and continued, almost without interruption, to the 20th,

\* O O

during

p. 285. during which time they had calms, rains, and west winds to encounter. The scurvy had now made its appearance again; and there also appeared in both ships several venereal complaints contracted at Taiti, attended with all the symptoms known in Europe. And they had no refreshments left, except for the sick.

p. 286. On the 22d, as they stood to the westward, they saw at day-break a long high land a-head, which, when the sun arose, they discovered to be two islands. One of them Monsieur Bougainville called Isle de la Pentecote, Whitsuntide Isle, from the day on which it was discovered; and the other the Isle of Aurora, from the time of the day it was first seen. And as they advanced to the northward,

p. 287. along the eastern shore of the latter, they saw a little isle rising like a sugar-loaf, bearing N. by W. which he named *Pic de l'Etoile*, the *Peak of the Etoile*.

p. 287. On the 23d they discovered another island, lying about three or four leagues S. W. of Aurora, the N. W. coast of which is at least twelve leagues in extent, and appeared to be high, steep, and woody. They could see no huts, only a smoke arising out of the woods in many places, from the sea-shore up to the tops of the mountains.

p. 289. As the landing seemed easy, the boats were sent ashore to procure wood and refreshments. The natives, at first, made a show of opposing their landing, as a numerous troop of them stood on the beach with their bows and arrows in their hands; but the Prince of Nassau advancing towards them alone, and distributing amongst them some pieces of red cloth, they assumed a more friendly appearance, and suffered the boats to be loaden with wood and fruits. They, however, always kept in great numbers round the people that went on shore, without ever quitting their arms; and as soon as the boats put off, sent a shower of arrows and stones after them. Some muskets fired into the air was not sufficient to drive them away; but another discharge, better directed, abated their ardour, and they fled to the woods with great cries. One of the seamen was slightly wounded by a stone.

p. 290. These people are of two colours, black and mulattoes; their lips are thick; their hair woolly, and sometimes of a yellowish colour; they are short, ugly, ill-



ill-proportioned, and most of them infected with the leprosy; from which circumstance Monsieur Bougainville called the island they inhabit *Isle des Lepreux*, the *Isle of Lepers*. The women were not less disagreeable than the men. p. 291. The latter go nearly naked; the former wear some bandages to carry their children on their backs, made of a kind of cloth, prettily ornamented with drawings of a crimson colour. They wear ornaments on the nose, bracelets on the arm, and hang pieces of tortoiseshell around their necks.

Their arms are bows and arrows, clubs, and sabres of iron, wood, and stones, which they use without slings. Their periaguas appeared to be built and rigged like those at the Isles of Navigators. These people seem to be very numerous, but much harrassed with internal wars. The harsh sound of a kind of drum was repeatedly heard from the interior parts of the wood. p. 292.

Finding there was nothing more to be procured at this island, which Monsieur Bougainville formally took possession of whilst on shore, they hoisted in their boats and made sail. On the 25th they saw land in all parts of the horizon, and they seemed to be shut up in a great gulph. The 26th they discovered several other openings on the coast, but were not able to distinguish the number of isles which composed the Archipelago around them. Having ranged a part of the north coast, they saw a great inlet, seeming to form a fine bay, at the entrance of which were two islands. p. 293.

Monsieur Bougainville immediately sent the boats to reconnoitre it, and soon after heard a discharge of musquets, which gave him great concern. One of the boats having contrary to his orders separated from the others, and got quite close to the shore, the natives fired two or three arrows at the people in her, who, in return, kept up a brisk fire with their muskets and pedereroes; upon which the negroes retired into the woods, howling excessively, and beating their drums. p. 295.

As the other boats, when they came back, reported that no safe anchorage was to be found near enough for the ships to protect the boats; and as they could not flatter themselves that the natives, forgetting the bad treatment they had p. 296.

just received, would consent to furnish them with refreshments, they pursued their course. They had observed the same productions here as on the Isle of Lepers. The inhabitants are likewise of the same species, almost naked, wearing the same ornaments of collars and bracelets, and using the same weapons.

- p. 297. On the 27th, ranging the same coast, at about a league's distance, they saw, on a low point, a plantation of trees, laid out in walks like those of a garden. Under the trees here was a beaten track, and the soil seemed to be sandy. A considerable number of inhabitants appeared about this part. But the boats that went in search of anchorage returned with no better success than before.
- p. 298. The weather now was dark, with squalls and rain at intervals. Often, in the day time, they thought they saw land, which proved to be mere fog banks, and disappeared when it cleared up.

Monfieur Bougainville called the lands they now discovered *Archipel des Grandes Cyclades*, the *Archipelago of the Great Cyclades*. To judge of this Archipelago by the lands passed through, and by those they saw at a distance, he supposes that it contains at least three degrees of latitude, and five of longitude.

- p. 302. From the 29th of May, when they lost sight of these islands, they sailed westward with a very fresh east or south east wind. In the night, between the 4th and 5th of June, they fell in with a little sandy island, which hardly rises above the water, and which, on that account, is a dangerous shoal for ships sailing in the night, or in hazy weather. It was covered with birds. Monfieur Bougainville called it *La Bâture de Diane*, the *Shoal of Diana*.

- p. 303. The next day they saw many indications of land being near, and likewise a new kind of flying fish, which seemed peculiar to these parts; they are black with red wings, they appear to have four wings instead of two, and somewhat exceed the common ones in size.

- p. 303. On the 6th a large sand bank appearing a-head, they altered their course, p. 306. which had hitherto been west to north, to avoid running in with a coast full of



of shoals and sand banks, from whence no advantage could be expected, and which could not be got clear of, but by beating against the reigning winds. It was therefore become necessary to steer to the northward; especially, as they had only bread for two months, and pulse for forty days; their salt provision was, indeed, in greater quantities, but it was so noxious, that they preferred the ship rats to it, when they could catch them.

On the 10th, at day-break, land was again discovered, which bore a more p. 306. pleasing aspect than any they had seen before: it forms a great gulph open to the S. E. But the wretched condition to which they were reduced, did not p. 307. allow them either to spend time in visiting this apparently rich and fertile country, or to stand to the westward, in search of a passage on the south side of New Guinea, which might open a new and short navigation to the Moluccas, by the gulph of Carpentaria. They were now obliged to endeavour to get out of the gulph in which they were, and in which they were more deeply engaged than they at first thought. And, to add to their perplexity, they were in with a dangerous shore, with hard gales, much rain, a thick fog, and a heavy sea.

However, on the 25th, at sun rising, they discovered a very high land, ter- p. 312. minating in a cape, which they doubled that day, to their great joy. This cape, so long wished for, as an outlet from the gulph wherein they were embayed, Monsieur Bougainville named Cape Deliverance; and the gulph of which it forms the easternmost point, *Golfe de la Louisiade*, the *Gulph of the Louisiade*.

About seventy leagues to the northward of Cape Deliverance, on the 28th, p. 313. they fell in with land. But it being an open coast, almost inaccessible, as the p. 314. sea breaks upon it every where, they were obliged to sail on. About a dozen periaguas came pretty near the ships, in which were people as black as the negroes of Africa. Their hair is curled, but long, and of a reddish colour. They wear bracelets and plates on the neck and forehead; and were armed with bows and lances. They made a great noise, and it seemed as if their disposition was far from pacific.

On

- p. 316. On the 1st of July they perceived a fine bay, which promised good anchorage, but the tide setting against them, and there being but little wind, they
- p. 318. could not gain it. The boats, on approaching the shore, were attacked by ten periaguas, having on board about one hundred and fifty men, armed with bows, lances, and shields. They advanced in good order, and when they thought they were near enough, began the attack with horrible cries. Two discharges of
- p. 319. small arms, however, put them to flight. These islanders, likewise, are black, and have curled hair, which they dye white, yellow, or red. Their periaguas, two of which were taken, are long, well wrought, and their head and stern
- p. 320. very much raised. Monsieur Bougainville called the river and creek, from whence those brave islanders came, *Riviere aux Guerriers, the Warriors River*. The whole isle and the bay obtained the name of *Choiseul Isle and Bay*.
- p. 321. On the 4th a new coast presented itself, lying N. N. W. In the afternoon three periaguas, with about eighteen negroes in them, came along side the ships, shewing cocoa nuts, and crying *bouca, bouca, onellé*. Some trifles were thrown them, upon which they made signs that they were going to fetch more cocoa nuts; but they had hardly gone twenty yards, when one of the perfidious fellows let fly an arrow, which happily did not hit any one, and they fled as fast as they could row.
- p. 323. The next day they got sight of two small isles, and a more considerable one. And on the 6th they discovered a new land, which was high, and, in appearance, very fine. In the afternoon they found a good harbour, in which they came to
- p. 329. an anchor. One of their first cares was to search whether the country could furnish any refreshments to the sick, and some solid food to the healthy. Their searches were fruitless. The fishery was unsuccessful, and they only found in
- p. 326. the woods a few palms, and a small number of cabbage trees. They
- p. 328. met with a plate of lead left here by Captain Carteret some months before. Monsieur Bougainville called this harbour *Port Praslin*. They remained here
- p. 332. till the 24th, during which time their situation every moment grew worse, as
- p. 338. they spent their time without advancing homeward, and the number of those
- p. 337. who were ill of the scurvy daily increased. The wind blew constantly from the south almost a storm, it rained incessantly, and in the offing was a dreadful sea.
- From



From Port Praslin they coasted New Britain, which they had constantly in p. 340.  
 fight till the 3d of August; and after passing several islands, on the 11th found p. 342.  
 themselves on the Coast of New Guinea. On the 20th they crossed the line p. 349.  
 for the second time this voyage; and on the 22d, getting sight of a higher coast p. 352.  
 than any part of New Guinea they had hitherto seen, Monsieur Bougainville p. 353.  
 determined to range along it, and not to quit it till they arrived at its extremity,  
 which geographers call Cape Maba, lest they should otherwise miss the passage p. 352.  
 into the Indian Sea, and be carried into one of the Gulphs of Gilolo. On the p. 356.  
 25th they were off the coast and isles of Papua; on the 28th they saw a cluster p. 361.  
 of islands, called by the Dutch the Five Islands, which are said once to have  
 been seven, until two of them were sunk by earthquakes; and on the 1st of  
 September they reached the Isle of Ceram. p. 362.

Not finding admission here, as they had hoisted Dutch colours, with whom  
 the natives of Ceram were then at war, they made no stay, but proceeded to  
 the Isle of Boero, one of the Molucca islands, where the Dutch have a settle-  
 ment. Here they anchored on the 2d; and after some punctilios on the side of p. 366.  
 the Chief of the factory, met with a friendly reception, and had all their  
 wants supplied.

Monsieur Bougainville would willingly have tarried at this agreeable place p. 378.  
 till the sick were perfectly recovered: the fresh provisions and salubrious air of  
 Boero, having, in six days, done them much good; but as the eastern monsoon  
 was now nearly at a conclusion, it became necessary for him to hasten to Batavia.  
 They accordingly sailed from hence on the 7th, and arrived at that place on p. 379.  
 the 28th. On the 16th of October they left Batavia; on the 8th of November p. 419.  
 anchored in the Isle of France; on the 19th of January, 1768, arrived at the p. 448.  
 Cape of Good Hope; on the 4th of February put into Ascension Island; and p. 454.  
 on the 16th of March following entered the Port of St. Maloes; having been p. 459.  
 absent from France two years and four months, during which time they had p. 464.  
 lost only seven men. p. 469.








# A P P E N D I X.

## C O N T A I N I N G

### An Account of CAPTAIN COOKE's second Voyage in his Majesty's Ship the RESOLUTION.

N the 13th of July, 1772, Captain Cooke, in the Resolution, in Voyage, p. 5.  
company with Captain Furneaux, in the Adventure, sailed from  
Plymouth Sound, having received the following instructions for  
the regulation of his voyage: To make the best of his way to p. 2.  
the Island of Madeira, there to take in a supply of wine, and then to proceed  
to the Cape of Good Hope, where he was to refresh the ships companies, and  
take on board such provisions and necessaries as he might stand in need of;  
thence to proceed to the southward, and endeavour to fall in with Cape Cir-  
cumcision, which was said by Monsieur Bouvet, a French navigator, who Introd. p. 16.  
explored those regions in the year 1738, to lie in latitude 54° south, and  
about 11° 10' east longitude from Greenwich. If he discovered this cape, he p. 2.  
was to satisfy himself whether it was a part of the continent, or of an island.  
Should it prove to be the former, he was to explore as great an extent of it as  
he could, making such observations of every kind as might be useful either to  
navigation or commerce, or tend to the promotion of natural knowledge. He  
was also directed to observe the genius, temper, disposition, and number of the  
inhabitants, if there were any, and endeavour to cultivate a friendship and  
alliance with them. In this service, and in making discoveries, he was to con-  
tinue to employ himself, either to the eastward or westward, as his situation  
F f might

might render most eligible, keeping in as high a latitude, and prosecuting his discoveries as near to the south pole as possible. If Cape Circumcision should prove to be part of an island only, or if he should not be able to find the said cape, he was, in the first case, to make the necessary survey of the island, and then stand on to the southward so long as he judged there was a likelihood of falling in with the continent; which he was also to do in the latter case; and then proceed to the eastward in further search of the said continent, as well as to make discoveries of such islands as might be situated in that unexplored part of the southern hemisphere; until having navigated the globe, as near the pole as possible, he was to proceed to the Cape of Good Hope, and from thence to Spithead. In the prosecution of these discoveries, in all unforeseen cases he was authorised to proceed according to his own discretion; and should the Resolution be lost or disabled, he was to prosecute the voyage on board the Adventure.

Voyage,  
p. 5.

On the 29th of the same month he anchored in Funchiale road, in the island of Madeira; from whence, after taking on board a supply of water, wine, and other necessaries, he sailed on the first of August, and having touched at Port Praya, in the island of St. Jago, both ships anchored on the 30th of October in Table Bay at the Cape of Good Hope.

p. 6.

p. 7.

p. 15.

p. 14.

Captain Cook had been told before he sailed, by some gentlemen who were well acquainted with the navigation between England and the Cape of Good Hope, that he had begun his voyage at an improper season of the year, and that he would meet with much calm weather near and under the line. On the contrary, he hardly met with any calms. This, however, might probably be the case some years, but he found by experience that it was not a general occurrence.

p. 15.

The night before they entered the bay, between eight and nine o'clock, the whole sea within the compass of their sight became at once as it were illuminated, or, what the seamen call, all on fire. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander had before satisfied Captain Cook, that this phenomenon was occasioned by sea insects. Mr. Forster, however, seemed not to favour this opinion. The  
Captain,



Captain, therefore, ordered some buckets of water to be drawn up from along side the ship, which was found full of an innumerable quantity of small globular insects, about the size of a pin's head, and quite transparent.

Omitting those incidents which happened during his stay at the cape, they being such only as are common to other navigators, we shall proceed with Captain Cook in his search after the southern continent.

Having finished his business, and taken leave of the governor, and some other p. 19. of the chief officers, who, with very obliging readiness, had given him all the assistance he could desire; on the 22d of November he repaired on board, and making sail, directed his course, agreeable to his instructions, in search of Cape Circumcision.

Nothing material happened till the 29th, when the wind increased to a p. 29. storm, which continued, with some few intervals of moderate weather, till the 6th of December; when they found themselves in latitude  $48^{\circ} 41'$  south, and longitude  $18^{\circ} 24'$  east: this gale, which was attended with rain and hail, blew at times with such violence, that they could carry no sail; by which means they were driven much to the eastward of their intended course, and no hopes were left of reaching the cape they sought for. The sudden transition from warm dry weather to extreme cold and wet, (for, by this time, the thermometer, which usually stood at the cape at 67 and upwards, had now fallen to 38,) made every man in the ships feel its effects.

In the morning of the 10th they saw an island of ice to the westward, being p. 22. then in latitude  $50^{\circ} 40'$  south, and  $2^{\circ} 0'$  east of the Cape of Good Hope. Soon after the wind moderated, and the weather coming hazy, with snow and fleet, they did not perceive another island of ice, which they were steering directly for, till they were within a mile of it. This icy island was flat at top, its sides rose in a perpendicular direction, against which the sea broke exceedingly high, and it appeared to be about fifty feet in height, and half a mile in circuit.

From this time, till the 26th of March following, Captain Cook traversed those seas in search of land, in almost every direction, and in every latitude, as high as  $61^{\circ} 52'$  south, in seas covered with lofty mountains and extensive fields of ice, amidst fogs, rain, hail, and snow, with heavy seas, and intense cold, though it was now the summer season in that hemisphere.

p. 24. December 14th, standing to the southward, they were stopped by an immense field of low ice, to which they could see no end, either to the east, west, or south. In different parts of this field were islands or hills of ice, like those they had found floating alone; and some on board thought they saw land also over the ice, bearing S. W. by S. Captain Cook even thought so himself, but changed his opinion upon more narrowly examining the ice hills, and the various appearances they made through the haze. On the north side of the ice they saw many whales, penguins, some white birds, pintadoes, &c.

p. 25. Next day, the 15th, the fog was so thick, with much snow, that, at times, they could not see the length of the ship; and they had much difficulty to avoid the many islands of ice that surrounded them. About noon the thermometer, which in the open air was at  $32^{\circ}$ , in the surface of the sea was at  $30^{\circ}$ ; and, after being immersed one hundred fathom for about fifteen or twenty minutes came up at  $34^{\circ}$ , which is only  $2^{\circ}$  above freezing.

p. 27. On the 18th they had got clear of the field of ice, but at the same time were carried in among the ice islands, in a manner equally dangerous, and which, with much difficulty, they got clear of. Dangerous as it is to sail among these floating rocks in a thick fog, they thought this preferable to being entangled with immense fields of ice, under the same circumstances. The great danger to be apprehended in the latter case, is the getting fast on the ice; a situation that would be exceedingly alarming. What is called field ice in Greenland, is thicker than in these seas; and the whole field, be it ever so large, consists of one piece: whereas this, from its immense extent, consists of many pieces of various sizes, both in thickness and surface, from thirty or forty feet square to three or four, packed close together, and in places heaped one upon another. "How long it may have lain, or will lie here, observes  
Captain



Captain Cook, is a point not easily determined. Such ice is found in the Greenland seas all the summer long, but it cannot be colder there in the summer than it is here." Be that as it may, in the climate they then were, they had no thaw; on the contrary, the mercury in Fahrenheit's thermometer kept generally below the freezing point, although it was the middle of the summer. p. 28.

It being the general opinion that the ice here described is formed in bays and rivers, under this supposition, Captain Cook was led to believe that land was not far distant, and that it even lay to the southward, behind the ice, which alone hindered their approaching it. Therefore, as he had sailed about thirty leagues along the edge of the ice, without finding a passage to the south, he determined to run thirty or forty leagues to the east, afterwards endeavour to get to the southward, and, if he met with no land or other impediment, to get behind the ice, and put the matter out of all manner of dispute. p. 28.

With this view, on the wind's veering to the N. W. in the evening, he tacked and stood to the eastward, meeting with many islands of ice of different magnitudes, and some loose pieces. The thermometer from  $30^{\circ}$  to  $34^{\circ}$ , weather very hazy, with fleet and snow, and more sensibly colder than the thermometer seemed to point out, inasmuch that the whole crew complained. He continued standing to the eastward till the 21st, when at eight o'clock, A. M. being in latitude  $53^{\circ} 50'$ , and longitude  $29^{\circ} 24'$  east, he hauled to the south, with the wind at west, a fresh gale, and hazy, with snow. p. 29.

Some of the people beginning to have symptoms of the scurvy, the surgeons began to give them fresh wort every day from the malt they had on board for that purpose. One man in particular was highly scorbutic, notwithstanding he had been taking the rob of lemon and orange for some time, which usually is esteemed an effectual remedy, and the benefit of which, two men on board the Adventure had experienced, who, though they were far gone in that disease, were in a manner cured by it. p. 29.

Being

- P. 35. Being on the 2d of January, 1773, after various bearings, arrived in nearly the same longitude that is assigned to Cape Circumcision, and about ninety-five leagues to the south of the latitude it is said to lie in, the weather at the same time being so clear that land might be seen at fourteen or fifteen leagues distance, and no land presenting itself to view, Captain Cook concluded that what Bouvet took for land was nothing but mountains of ice, surrounded by loose or field ice. And the conjecture he himself had formed that it joined to the land, now appeared highly improbable, if it was not totally set aside, as the space between the northern edge of the ice, along which they sailed, and their route to the west when south of it, no where exceeded one hundred leagues, and in some places not sixty.
- P. 37. On the 8th, being in latitude  $61^{\circ} 12'$  south, longitude  $31^{\circ} 47'$  east, they passed more ice islands than they had seen for several days; and about four o'clock the next morning bore down to one which lay to leeward, with a view of taking some of the loose ice on board. Having brought to, they hoisted out three boats, and in about five or six hours took up as much as yielded fifteen tons of good fresh water. The pieces taken up were hard, and solid as a rock, and some of them were so large that they were obliged to break them with pickaxes before they could be taken into the boats. The salt water which adhered to the ice was so trifling as not to be tasted; and after it had lain on the deck a short time entirely drained off, and the water the ice yielded was perfectly sweet and well tasted. Part of the ice they broke in pieces, and put into casks; some they melted in the copper, and filled the casks with the water; and some they kept on deck for present use. Captain Cook observes, that the melting and stowing away the ice is a little tedious, and takes up some time; otherwise it would have been the most expeditious way of watering he ever met with.
- P. 38. Having got on board this supply of water, and the Adventure about two-thirds as much; as he did not doubt of getting more whenever they were in want, which they afterwards did as often as occasion required, without hesitation; he now directed his course more to the south.
- P. 42. On the 17th, between eleven and twelve o'clock, they crossed the Antarctic circle, in longitude  $39^{\circ} 35'$  east, and about 4, P. M. as they were steering to the south,



south, they observed the whole sea in a manner covered with ice from the direction of south-east round by the south to the west. Thirty-eight ice islands great and small were now to be seen, besides loose ice in abundance; and as they continued to advance to the south, it increased in such a manner that they could proceed no further, the ice being entirely closed to the south, in the whole extent from east to W. S. W. without the least appearance of any opening.

This being the case, Captain Cook did not think it prudent to persevere in getting farther to the south, especially as the summer was already half spent, and it would have taken some time to have got round the ice, even supposing it to have been practicable, which, however, appeared very doubtful. He, therefore, came to a resolution to proceed directly in search of the land lately discovered by the French. But finding himself, on the 1st of February, in latitude  $48^{\circ} 30'$  south, and longitude  $58^{\circ} 7'$  east, nearly in the meridian of the island of Mauritius, where he had reason to expect he should fall in with it, and not perceiving the least signs of land, he bore away to the east. p. 43.

The same day Captain Furneaux made the signal to speak with Captain Cook; and on his coming under the Resolution's stern, informed him that he had just seen a large float of sea or rock weeds, and about it several birds called Divers. These were signs, undoubtedly, of the vicinity of land, but whether it lay to the east or the west, it was not possible for them to ascertain. p. 47.

Captain Cook's intention had been to have got into the same latitude four or five degrees of longitude to the westward of the meridian he then was in, and after that to have carried on his researches to the east, but the W. and N. W. winds that had prevailed for the five preceding days, prevented him from carrying this design into execution. p. 48.

On the 3d, being upwards of three degrees to the east of the meridian of Mauritius, he began to despair of finding the land he sought for to the east; and the wind having veered to the north, he resolved to search for it to the westward. He accordingly tacked, and stood to the west, with a fresh gale: this he continued to do till the 6th, when being again disappointed, he gave over plying, and bore away east a little southerly. p. 49.

On

p. 51.

On the 8th, in latitude  $49^{\circ} 53'$  south, and longitude  $63^{\circ} 39'$  east, the wind, having veered round by the N. E. to the east, blew a brisk gale, attended with hazy weather, which soon after turned to a thick fog, the wind shifting at the same time to N. E. Captain Cook ordered a gun to be fired every hour till noon, when he made the signal to tack, and tacked accordingly. But as neither this signal, nor any of the former were answered by the Adventure, he had too much reason to think a separation had taken place, but was at a loss to account for the cause of it.

p. 51.

He had directed Captain Furneaux, in case he was separated, to cruize three days in the place he last saw the Resolution; they therefore continued making short boards, and firing half-hour guns, till the 9th in the afternoon, when the weather clearing, so that they could see several leagues around, they could not perceive the Adventure within the limits of the horizon. Next day, notwithstanding the weather continued pretty clear, she was not to be seen; they however kept firing guns, and burning false fires all night. But this having no effect, Captain Cook gave over looking for her, and made sail towards the S. E.

p. 53.

During the night of the 16th they had fair weather, with a clear serene sky; and between midnight and three o'clock in the morning lights were seen in the heavens similar to those in the northern hemisphere, known by the name of the Aurora Borealis, or Northern Lights. A light which the more surprized Captain Cook, as he had never heard of the Aurora Australis being seen before. The officer of the watch observed that it sometimes broke out in spiral rays, and in a circular form; then its light was very strong, and its appearance beautiful. He could not perceive that it had any particular direction, for it appeared at various times in different parts of the firmament, and diffused its light through the whole atmosphere.

p. 54.

The next night, being again got among the ice islands, the mercury in the thermometer fell two degrees below the freezing point. It is to be observed, that as they advanced to the north, the mercury usually had a gradual rise to  $45^{\circ}$ , and fell again, as they made towards the south, to the degree just mentioned; nor did it rise in the middle of the day to above  $34^{\circ}$  or  $35^{\circ}$ .

About



About noon, on the 20th, being nearly in latitude  $58^{\circ} 47'$  south, longitude p. 55.  $90^{\circ} 56'$  east, they thought they saw land from the S. W. the appearance was so strong, that they doubted not but it was there in reality, and accordingly tacked to work up to it. They were, however, soon undeceived, by finding it was only clouds, which in the evening intirely disappeared, and left a clear horizon, in which space nothing was to be seen but ice islands.

The same night the aurora australis made a very brilliant and luminous appearance: it was first seen in the east, a little above the horizon, and in a short time spread all over the heavens.

They continued standing to the south till February 23, when, being in p. 56. latitude  $61^{\circ} 52'$  south, longitude  $95^{\circ} 2'$  east, they tacked, and spent the night, which was exceedingly stormy, thick and hazy, with sleet and snow, in making short boards. Surrounded on every side with danger, it was natural for them to wish for day light. This, when it came, served only to increase their apprehensions, by exhibiting to their view those large mountains of ice, which in the night they had passed without seeing. These unfavourable circumstances, together with dark nights, at this advanced season of the year, quite discouraged Captain Cook from carrying into execution a design he had formed of crossing the Antarctic Circle once more. Therefore, on the 24th, at four o'clock in the morning, they stood to the north, with a very hard gale at E. S. E. accompanied with snow and sleet, and a very high sea from the same point, which made great destruction among the ice islands. This circumstance, far from being of any advantage, greatly increased the number of pieces they had to avoid. The large pieces, which break from the islands, are much more dangerous p. 57. than the islands themselves. The latter are so high out of the water that they are generally to be seen before the ship is near them; whereas the others cannot be seen in the night till they are under the bows.

These dangers were, however, now become so familiar to them, that the apprehensions they caused were never of long duration; and were in some measure compensated, both by the seasonable supplies of fresh water these ice islands afforded them (of which, had they not frequently availed themselves,

G g

they

they must have been greatly distressed) and also by their very romantic appearance, greatly heightened by the foaming and dashing of the waves into curious holes and caverns formed in many of them; the whole exhibiting a view that at once filled the mind with admiration and horror, and can only be described by the hand of an able painter.

p. 57. Towards evening the gale abated, and in the night they had two or three hours calm. This was succeeded by a light breeze at west, with which they  
p. 58. steered east under all the sail they could set. On the 26th they were in latitude  
p. 64.  $61^{\circ} 21'$  south, almost the highest they made; and from this time to March 16th they had nearly, (but at intervals) a succession of the same weather and events; when being in latitude  $59^{\circ} 7'$  south, longitude  $146^{\circ} 53'$ , and having used his utmost endeavours to discover land by pursuing every probable track, but without effect, Captain Cook came to a resolution to quit the high southern latitudes, where he had so long combated the utmost severity of weather and climate, and proceed to New-Zealand in search of the Adventure.

He had some thoughts, and even desire, of visiting the east coast of Van Dieman's land; but the wind not permitting him to touch there, he shaped his course to  
p. 66. New Zealand, off which place they arrived on the 25th of March, and an-  
p. 68. chored in Dusky Bay, situated in the southern part of Tavei Poenammoo, on the 26th; having been one hundred and seventeen days at sea, in which time they had sailed 3660 leagues, without having once sight of land.

During the different courses they had steered in these inclement seas, they saw several kinds of aquatic birds, some of which made them frequently con-  
p. 22. jecture they were near land. On the 11th of December, in latitude  $51^{\circ} 50'$  south, longitude  $21^{\circ} 3'$  east, they saw some white birds about the size of pigeons, with blackish bills and feet, such as Captain Cook had never seen before; nor had Mr. Forster ever met with a description of them in Natural History. They appeared to be of the pteral tribe, and natives of these icy seas.

p. 23. Upon their first getting among the ice islands, the albatrosses left them, that is, they saw but one now and then. Nor did their other companions the  
pintadoes,



pintadoes, sheerwaters, and small grey birds, that had accompanied them from warmer latitudes, appear in such numbers; on the other hand, penguins began to make their appearance.

December 23d, in latitude  $55^{\circ} 20'$  south, longitude  $31^{\circ} 30'$  east, Mr. Forster, p. 29. in the boat, shot some of the small grey birds just mentioned: they were of the peterel tribe, about the size of a small pigeon, their back, and upper side of their wings, their feet and bills are of a blue grey colour, their bellies and under side of their wings are white, a little tinged with blue, the upper side of their quill feathers is a dark blue tinged with black; a streak is formed by feathers nearly of this colour along the upper part of the wings, and crossing the back a little above the tail; the end of the tail feathers is also of the same colour, their bills are much broader than those of the same tribe generally are, and their tongues remarkably broad. These blue peterels, as they denominated them, are seen no where but in the southern hemisphere, from latitude  $28^{\circ}$ , and upwards.

Being on the 27th, in latitude  $58^{\circ} 19'$  south, longitude  $24^{\circ} 39'$  east, the day p. 31. calm and pleasant, and the sea smooth, they hoisted out a boat, from which Mr. Forster shot a penguin and some peterels. These penguins differ not from those seen in other parts of the world, except in some minute particulars distinguishable only by naturalists. Some of the peterels were of the blue sort, but different from those just described, in not having a broad bill, and the ends of their tail feathers were tipped with white, instead of dark blue. But whether these were only the distinctions betwixt the male and female was a disputed point with the naturalists on board.

December 29th they brought to on the lee side of an island of ice, under which p. 33. they lay for some minutes, with every sail becalmed, it being about half a mile in circuit, and upwards of one hundred feet high. Upon it they saw eighty-six penguins: the side on which these birds were, rose sloping from the sea, so as to admit them to creep up it. It is a received opinion that penguins never go far from land, and that the sight of them is a sure indication of its vicinity. This opinion, Captain Cook remarks, may hold good where there are no ice islands,

but where such are, these birds, as well as many others, which usually keep near the shores, finding a roosting place upon the islands, may be brought by them a great distance from land.

- p. 33. The next day they shot one of the white birds, upon which they lowered a boat into the water to take it up, and by that means killed a penguin, which weighed eleven pounds and a half. The white bird was of the peterel tribe: the bill, which is rather short, is of a colour between black and dark blue, and their legs and feet are blue. These seem to be the same sort of birds that Bouvet mentions to have seen off Cape Circumcision.
- p. 38. January 11th, in latitude  $64^{\circ} 12'$  south, longitude  $37$  east, they saw some penguins; and Mr. Forster shot an albatross, whose plumage was of a colour between brown and dark grey, the head and upper side of the wings rather inclining to black, and it had white eyebrows. They had first seen these birds about the time of their falling in with the ice islands, and some had accompanied them ever since. Those just described, and the dark brown sort, with a yellow bill, were the only albatrosses that had not now forsaken them.
- p. 42. On the 17th they saw many whales playing about the ice, and for two days before had seen several flocks of the brown and white pintadoes, which they named antarctic peterels, because they seemed to be natives of that region. They are, says Captain Cook, undoubtedly, of the peterel tribe, as they are, in every respect, shaped like the pintadoes, differing only from them in colour. The head and fore part of the body of these are brown, and the hind part of the body, tail, and ends of the wings, are white. The white peterel also appeared in greater number than before, with some few dark grey albatrosses, and the ship's constant companion the blue peterel. But the common pintadoes had quite disappeared, as well as many other sorts, which are frequently seen in lower latitudes.
- p. 43. The 19th, being in latitude  $64^{\circ} 12'$  south, longitude  $40^{\circ} 15'$  east, a bird, called by Captain Cook in his voyage, the Port Egmont Hen, on account of the great plenty at Port Egmont, in Falkland Isles, came hovering several times  
over



over the ship, and then left it in the direction of N. E. This is a short thick bird, about the size of a large crow, of a dark brown or chocolate colour, with a whitish streak under each wing in the shape of a half moon. Captain Cook says, he had been informed that these birds are found in great plenty at the Fero Isles, north of Scotland, and that they never go far from land. "Certain it is, continues he, that I never before saw them above thirty leagues off, but I do not remember ever seeing fewer than two together; whereas here was but one, which, with the islands of ice, may have come a good way from land."

On the 20th one of these birds was seen in the morning, probably the same p. 44. they had observed the night before, as their situation was not much altered. And on the 21st they saw a white albatross, with black tipped wings, and likewise a pintado bird.

February 2d they saw two or three birds known by the name of the Egg- p. 48. Bird, being in latitude  $48^{\circ} 36'$  south, longitude  $59^{\circ} 35'$  east.

During the evening of the 6th three Port Egmont hens were seen; the morn- p. 50. ing of the 7th another appeared; in the evening of that day, and several times during the night, penguins were heard. And at day light, in the morning of the 8th, several of these were seen, with divers of two sorts, apparently such as are usually met with on the coast of England.

The 13th, being in latitude  $53^{\circ} 37'$  south, longitude  $72^{\circ} 10'$ , they had con- p. 52. tinually a great number of penguins about the ship, which seemed to be different from those they had seen near the ice, as they were smaller, with reddish bills and brownish heads. The meeting with so many of these birds gave them some hopes of finding land, and occasioned various conjectures about the situation of it. But they had now been so often deceived by these birds, that they found from experience they could no longer look upon them, nor, indeed, upon any other oceanic birds, which frequent high latitudes, as sure signs of the vicinity of land.

The

The foregoing are all the species of birds they met with in the vast aqueous track they traversed between their departure from the Cape of Good Hope, and their arrival at New Zealand. And from the last mentioned date they appeared much feldomer than before.

p. 68. After so long a continuance at sea, in a high southern latitude, it may be reasonably supposed, that many of the people of the Resolution must be ill of the scurvy. The contrary, however, happened. The sweetwort, already mentioned, being given to such as were scorbutic, had so far the desired effect, that only one man on board could be said to be very ill of this disease; and that was occasioned chiefly by a bad habit of body, together with a complication of other disorders. Captain Cook does not indeed impute the general good state of the crew wholly to the sweetwort, but partly to the frequent airing and sweetening the ship by fires, &c. He also allows the portable broth and four krout a share in this desirable event; the latter of which, he says, can never be enough recommended.

p. 69. Having found a good harbour in Dusky Bay, with every conveniency, they entered it Saturday, March 27, 1773, by a channel scarcely twice the width of the ship, and in a small creek moored her head and stern so near the shore, as to reach it with a brow or stage, which nature had, in a manner, prepared for them in a large tree, whose end or top reached the gunwale. Wood for fuel and other purposes was so convenient, that the yards were locked in the branches of the trees. And about one hundred yards from the stern was a fine stream of fresh water. This snug retreat Captain Cook named Pickersgill Harbour, after Lieutenant Pickersgill, who, being sent in the boat for that purpose, on their arrival, discovered it on the S. E. side of the bay.

p. 70. As soon as the ship was moored, they began to clear places in the wood, in order to set up the astronomer's observatory; a forge to repair the iron work; with tents for the sail makers and coopers; and pursued every other necessary occupation. They also began to brew beer from the branches or leaves of a tree resembling the American spruce, of which, with the inspissated juice of wort and molasses, they made a wholesome beer; and supplied the place of vegetables,



vegetables, which this place did not afford. Captain Cook here observes, that he had made several trials of the inspissated juice of wort since he left the Cape of Good Hope, and found it to answer in a cold climate beyond all expectation.

Captain Cook's first care having been to send in search of fresh provisions, the fishing boat returned very successful, which gave them certain hopes of being plentifully supplied with that article. Nor did the shores and woods appear less destitute of wild fowl: so that they hoped to enjoy, with ease, what in their situation might be called the luxuries of life. This determined him to stay some time in Dusky Bay, in order to examine it thoroughly, as no one had ever landed before on any of the southern parts of this country. He having discovered them during his former voyage in 1770, but without landing on any part of the coast that lay to the south, as related in the foregoing journal. P. 69.  
Park.  
Jour.  
p. 122.

The few sheep and goats they had left (of the former there remained only one ram and one ewe) were not likely to fare quite so well as the people, there being no grass, but what was coarse and harsh: even this, however, it was to be expected they would devour with greediness after so long a voyage, yet they did not care to taste it; this, upon examination, was found to proceed from their teeth being loose, through the sea scurvy, of which many of them had every symptom to an inveterate degree. p. 71.

Some of the officers, on the 28th, went up the bay in a small boat on a shooting party, but, discovering inhabitants, they returned before noon to acquaint Captain Cook therewith; for hitherto they had not seen the least vestige of any. They had just got on board, when seven or eight people in a canoe came within musket shot of the ship, and, having looked at it for some time, retired. Nor did all the signs of friendship that could be made prevail on them to come nearer. p. 71.

After dinner the captain, accompanied by several of the officers and gentlemen, went in search of them in the cove where they were first seen: there they found  
a canoe,

a canoe, hauled upon the shore near two small huts, where were several fire-places, and some fishing nets; a few fish were lying on the shore, and some in the canoe; but they saw no people, they probably having retired into the woods: having left in the canoe some medals, looking glasses, beads, &c. after a short stay, they rowed to the head of the cove, and returning back, put ashore at the same place; but it did not appear that any thing left there had been touched: However, they added a hatchet, and returned on board.

- p. 72. April 1st, Captain Cook, accompanied as before, went to see if any of the articles left in the canoe had been taken away. They found every thing remaining in the same state, nor did it appear that any body had been there since. After shooting some birds, one of which was a duck, with a blue grey plumage and soft bill, they returned on board. The next day they killed three seals; and in a cove found many ducks, wood-hens, and other wild fowl, some of which they killed.
- p. 73.

It is here necessary to remark, that the nature of this additional work will not permit us to attend the officers and crews engaged in this expedition, on every shooting party; in every excursion to procure provisions; or to make discoveries in the repairs of the ship, &c. we must, therefore, confine ourselves to a description of the most singular birds they see or kill, as making part of the Natural History; to the most interesting events that happen to them; and the most material discoveries they make. Let it henceforth be concluded, that Captain Cook and those under his command, explored every part mentioned in his instructions, for the benefit of future navigators; that Mr. Forster and his assistants went frequently on shore to botanize; that the astronomers employed their time in making observations; and that the general purposes of the voyage were attended to. Though the limits of this abridgment will not admit the minutiae of all these transactions, yet no circumstance shall be omitted, that may conduce to render it a satisfactory compendium of his second and third voyages.

- p. 73. On the 6th Captain Cook and his companions, in their return from an excursion, had a short interview with three of the natives, one man and two women.



women. They would have passed by without seeing them, had not the man hallooed to them. He stood, with his club in his hand, upon the point of a rock; and behind him, at the skirts of the wood, stood the two women, with each of them a spear. The man could not help discovering great signs of fear when the boat approached the rock. He, however, stood firm, nor did he even move to take up some things which were thrown ashore to him. At length Captain Cook landed, and having embraced him, presented him with such articles as he had about him, which at once dissipated his fears. Presently after they were joined by the women, as well as by the gentlemen and some of the seamen from the boats. After this they spent about half an hour in conversation, little being understood on either side, in which the youngest of the two women bore the greatest share. Captain Cook ordered some fish and fowl, which they had in the boat, to be presented to them; but these they threw into the boat again, giving them to understand that such things they wanted not. Night approaching, obliged the captain to take leave of his new acquaintance; when the youngest of the two women, whose volubility of tongue was so excessive, as to draw from one of the seamen an observation, "that women did not want tongue in any part of the world," gave them a dance; but the man viewed them with the greatest attention.

The next morning Captain Cook made the natives a visit, carrying with him various articles, which he presented them with; and which they received with great indifference, except hatchets and spike nails; these they most esteemed. He now saw their whole family: it consisted of the man, his two wives, (as supposed) the young woman before mentioned, a boy about fourteen years old, and three small children, the smallest of which was at the breast; they were all well looking, except one woman, who had a large wen on her upper lip, which made her look disagreeable; and she seemed, on that account, to be in a great measure neglected by the man. The captain and his attendants were conducted by them to their habitation, which was but a little way within the skirts of the wood, and consisted of two mean huts, made of the bark of trees; their canoe, which was a double one, just large enough to transport the whole family from place to place, lay in a small creek near the huts. When Captain Cook took leave, the Chief presented him with a piece of cloth or garment of their

p. 74.

H h

own

own manufacturing, and some other trifles. He at first thought it was meant as a return for the presents that had been made him; but the Indian soon undeceived him, by expressing a desire for one of the boat cloaks. He took the hint, and ordered one to be made of red baize, as soon as he got on board.

p. 75. On the 9th he paid the natives another visit, and made known his approach by hallooing to them; but they neither answered him, nor met him on the shore, as usual. The reason, however, was soon discovered; for he and his companions found them at their habitation, all dressed or dressing in their very best, with their hair combed and oiled, tied up upon the crowns of their heads, and stuck with white feathers; (see plate 23. Parkinson's Journal) some wore a fillet of feathers round their heads; and all of them had bunches of white feathers stuck in their ears: thus dressed, and all standing, they received their visitors with great courtesy. Captain Cook presented the Chief with the cloak he had got made for him, with which he seemed so well pleased, that he took his Pattapattou (his sling) from his girdle, and gave it him. After a short stay the company took their leaves.

Park.  
Jour.  
p. 127.

p. 76. About ten o'clock on the 12th, the family of the natives came towards the ship in their canoe. Seeing they approached it with great caution, Captain Cook met them in a boat, which he quitted when he got to them, and entered their canoe. Yet, after all, he could not prevail on them to put a long side, and at last was obliged to leave them to follow their own inclinations. At length, they put on shore in a little creek hard by, and afterwards came and sat down on the shore a-breast of the ship, near enough to speak with those on board. The captain then caused the bagpipes and fife to play, and the drum to beat. The two first they did not regard, but the latter excited some little attention in them. Nothing, however, could induce them to come on board: but they entered with great familiarity into conversation, (though little understood) with such of the officers and seamen as went to them, paying much greater regard to some than to others. And these, there was reason to believe, they took for women. To one man, in particular, the young woman shewed an extraordinary fondness, until she discovered his sex; after which she would not suffer him to come near her. Whether it was that she before took him for one  
of



of her own sex, or that the man, in order to discover himself, had taken some liberties with her, which she thus repented, is not to be determined.

Near the cove, where they first saw the natives, on the south side of the bay, p. 77. about a league above the place where the ship lay, Captain Cook discovered a large cascade, which falls from a high mountain; huge heaps of stones lay at the foot of it, which had been broken off, and brought by the stream from the adjacent mountains: these stones were of different sorts, but none, according to Mr. Foster's opinion, contains either minerals or metals. The rocky part of the whole country seemed to consist of those stones, and no other. In this cove, which he named, from this circumstance, Cascade Cove, there is good anchorage, and other conveniences.

On the 13th, Captain Cook, with a party, taking a survey of the bay, came p. 79. to a creek, where they found an immense number of peterels; some on the wing, others in the woods, in holes in the ground under the roots of trees, and in the crevices of rocks, where there was no getting at them, and where it was supposed their young were deposited, as not one was to be seen in the day; the old ones were probably at that time out at sea searching for food, which in the evening they bring to their young. The noise they made was like the croaking of many frogs. They appeared to be of the broad bill kind, before described, which are not so commonly seen at sea as the others. Here, however, they were in great numbers; and flying much about in the night. Some of the gentlemen (the party being benighted on shore) at first took them for bats.

In a shooting excursion, on the 15th and 16th, at the head of a fine sandy p. 80. beach, they found an immense number of wood-hens, and brought away ten couple of them; and having likewise killed some ducks, returned in the evening with about seven dozen of wild fowl, and two seals.

On the 18th, it being fair and clear weather, the natives, before mentioned, p. 81. paid them another visit. And the next morning the Chief and his daughter were induced to come on board, while the others went a fishing in the canoe. Before they went on board, Captain Cook shewed them the sheep and goats that

were on shore, which they viewed for a moment with a kind of stupid insensibility. After this he conducted them to the brow by which the crew usually entered the ship. But before the Chief set his foot upon it, he took a small green branch in his hand, with which he struck the side of the ship several times, repeating a speech or prayer; when this was over, he threw the branch into the main chains, and came on board. This custom and manner of making peace, as it were, Captain Cook says is practised by all the nations in the South Seas that he had seen.

The natives being taken down into the cabin, when breakfast was prepared, they sat at table, but would not taste any of the victuals. The Chief wanted to know where they slept; and, indeed, to pry into every corner of the cabin, all parts of which he viewed with some surprize; but it was not possible to fix his attention to any one thing a single moment. The works of art appeared to him in the same light as those of nature, and were as far beyond his comprehension. What seemed to strike him most, was the number and strength of the decks, and other parts of the ship.

Before he came on board he presented Captain Cook with a piece of cloth, and a green talk hatchet; to Mr. Foster he also gave a piece of cloth; and the girl gave another to Mr. Hodges. This custom of making presents before they receive any is common with the natives of the South Seas; but Captain Cook here remarks, that he never saw it practised in New-Zealand before. Of all the various articles given to the Chief, hatchets and spike nails were the most valuable in his eyes: these he would never suffer to go out of his hands after he had once laid hold of them; whereas, many other things he would lay carelessly down any where, and at last leave them behind him.

p. 82.

As soon as Captain Cook could get quit of the two natives, they were conducted into the gun-room, where, having left them, he set out with two boats to examine the head of the bay. Going on shore to view a flat piece of land, they saw some ducks, at which they got a shot, and killed one. The moment they had fired, some of the natives, whom they had not discovered before, set up a most hideous noise in two or three places close by them. They hallooed  
in



in their turn, and at the same time retired to their boat, which was full half a mile off. The natives kept up a clamorous noise, but did not follow them. It was afterwards found that they could not, because a branch of a river parted them. Nor did they find their numbers answerable to the noise they made.

Meeting with a river that would admit their boat, they rowed in, and being soon after reinforced by the other boat, proceeded up it, shooting wild ducks, of which there were great numbers, as they went along; now and then hearing the natives in the woods. At length a man and woman appeared on the banks of the river, the latter waving something white in her hand, as a sign of friendship. Captain Cook directed the other boat, that being the nearest, to land; but as they could not do so in time, the natives retired into the woods. Two others, however, soon after appeared on the opposite bank; and they, likewise, endeavoured to obtain an interview with these, but without effect; for as they approached the shore, the Indians always retired farther into the woods, which were so thick as to cover them from their sight.

The ebbing tide obliged the boats to retire out of the river to the place p. 84. where the party had spent the preceding night. As they were embarked, in the morning, in order to return to the ship, they saw two men on the opposite shore, hallooing to them; which induced Captain Cook to row over to them. Accordingly he landed, with two others, unarmed; the two natives standing about one hundred yards from the water-side, with each a spear in his hand. When the three advanced together, the natives retired; but stood when the captain advanced alone. It was some little time before he could prevail upon them to lay down their spears: this, at last, one of them did, and met the captain with a grass plant in his hand; one end of which he gave him to hold, whilst he himself held the other. Standing in this manner, the Indian began a speech, not one word of which was understood by Captain Cook, and made some long pauses, as if he expected an answer; for when the captain spoke, the other proceeded. As soon as this ceremony was over, which was of short continuance, they saluted each other. The native then took his Hahou or coat from off his own back, and put it on Captain Cook's; after which peace seemed firmly established.

More

- p. 84. More people joining from the boats did not in the least alarm the two men; on the contrary, they saluted every one singly as they came up. Captain Cook gave each of them a hatchet and a knife, having nothing else with him. These, perhaps, were the most valuable things he could give them, at least they were the most useful. They wanted him to go to their habitation, telling him, they would give them something to eat; but the tide would not permit him to accept of their invitation. Others were seen on the skirts of the wood; but none of them joined these two. Probably they were their wives and children.
- p. 85. When Captain Cook and his party took leave, the natives followed them to their boat; and seeing the musquets lying across the stern, made signs for them to be taken away; which being done, they came along side, and assisted to launch her. At this time it was necessary to look well after them, for they wanted to take away every thing they could lay their hands upon, except the musquets; these they took care not to touch, being taught, by the slaughter they had seen made by them among the wild fowl, to look upon them as instruments of death.
- p. 85. Captain Cook saw no canoes or other boats with them. Two or three logs of wood tied together served the same purpose; and were indeed sufficient for the navigation of the river on the banks of which they lived. There fish and fowl were so plenty, that they had no occasion to go far for food; and they had but few neighbours to disturb them: the whole number at this place, according to the best observation Captain Cook could make, not exceeding three families. About noon he took leave of these two men, and proceeding down the north side of the bay, reached the ship about eight o'clock in the evening.
- p. 85. He then learnt that the man and his daughter stayed on board till yesterday noon; and having understood from the people what things had been left in Cascade Cove, the place where they were first seen, he sent and took them away. This family remained near the ship till the 20th, when they all went away, and were seen no more. This sudden departure was somewhat extraordinary, as he never left the ship empty handed. From one or another he did not get less than nine or ten hatchets, with three or four times that number of  
large



large spike nails, besides many other articles. So far as these things may be counted riches in New Zealand, he exceeds every man there, being at this time possessed of more hatchets and axes than are in the whole country besides.

The 21st Captain Cook went with a party out to the isles to hunt seals. p. 86.  
The surf ran so high that they could only land at one place, where they killed ten. These animals served them for three purposes; the skins they made use of for their rigging; their fat gave oil for their lamps; and the flesh they eat. Their hartslets are equal to that of a hog; and the flesh of some of them eats little inferior to beef-stakes.

On the morning of the 23d, some of the officers went to the Cascade Cove, in p. 86.  
order to ascend one of the mountains, the summit of which they reached about two in the afternoon, as could be seen by the fire they made. In the evening they returned on board, and reported, that in-land nothing was to be seen but barren mountains, with huge craggy precipices, disjoined by valleys, or rather chasms, frightful to behold. On the S. E. side of Cape West they discovered a ridge of rocks, on which the waves broke very high.

Having five geese left out of those they brought from the Cape of Good Hope, p. 86.  
Captain Cook went with them next morning to Goose Cave, (so named on this account) where he left them. He chose this place for two reasons: first, as there are no inhabitants to disturb them; and, secondly, here being most food for them. There is little doubt but they will breed, and in time they may spread over the whole country, and fully answer the intent of leaving them. He and his companions spent the day in shooting, in and about the Cove, and returned on board at ten o'clock in the evening. One of the party shot a white-hern, which agreed exactly with Mr. Pennant's description, in his British Zoology, of the white herns that either now are or were formerly in England.

The 25th was the eighth fair day they had had successively: a circumstance p. 87.  
uncommon at this place, especially at this season of the year. This fair weather gave them an opportunity to complete the taking in of their wood and water; to overhaul the rigging; caulk the ship, and put her in a condition for sea.

On

On the 27th Captain Cook set out to explore an arm or inlet he had lately discovered, and found that it communicated with the sea, and afforded a better outlet for ships bound to the north, than that by which he had entered the bay. In this expedition they shot forty-four birds of different kinds, such as sea-pies, ducks, &c. without going one foot out of their way, or causing them any other delay than picking them up.

p. 88. Having got the tents and every other article on board the 28th, they only waited for a wind to carry them out of the harbour, through the New Passage; the way Captain Cook proposed to go to sea. Every thing being removed from the shore, he ordered the top-wood to be set on fire, in order to dry the piece of ground they had occupied, which the next morning they sowed with several sorts of garden-seeds. The soil was such as did not promise success to the planter; it was, however, the best to be found.

p. 88. At two o'clock in the afternoon on the 29th, they weighed, with a light breeze at S. W. and stood up the bay, for the New Passage. But, notwithstanding their utmost endeavours, it was the 11th of May before they could clear the bay, and get out to sea, through the contrary winds, attended with heavy showers of rain, they met with. About noon they got clear of the land, and taking an observation, found themselves in latitude  $45^{\circ} 34' 30''$  south, the entrance of the bay bearing S. E. by E.

p. 92. Here Captain Cook gives directions for sailing in and out of Dusky Bay, for the benefit of future navigators: but a recapitulation of these being incompatible with this abridgment, we shall proceed to give a short description of the adjacent country, which, in Mr. Parkinson's Journal, is confined to the appearance of the coast only, as in that voyage they did not land on any part of the southern or western coasts of Tavai Poenammoo; or, as it is called in the chart (plate 25) Toai Poonamoo.

Park.  
Jour.  
p. 125.

p. 95. The country is exceedingly mountainous, not only about Dusky Bay, but through all the southern part of this western coast of Tavai Poenammoo. A prospect more rude and craggy is rarely to be met with; for in-land nothing appears



appears but the summits of mountains of a stupendous height, and consisting of rocks that are totally barren and naked, except where they are covered with snow; while the land bordering on the sea coast, and all the islands, are thickly clothed with wood almost down to the water's edge. The trees here are of various kinds, such as are common to other parts of this country; and are fit for the shipwright, house-carpenter, cabinet-maker, and many other uses. The most considerable for size is the spruce tree: a tree so denominated by Captain Cook from the similarity of its foliage to the American spruce; the wood, however, is more ponderous, and bears a greater resemblance to the pitch pine. Many of these trees are from eight to ten feet in circumference, and from eighty to one hundred feet in length; large enough to make a main mast for a fifty gun ship. Here, as well as in all other parts of New Zealand, grow a great number of aromatic trees and shrubs, most of the myrtle kind. But amidst all this variety none were met with that bore fruit fit to eat. In many parts the woods are so over-run with supple-jacks, that it is scarcely possible to force one's way among them. Several were seen, which were forty or fifty fathom long.

The soil is a deep black mould, evidently composed of decayed vegetables; p. 96. and so loose, that it sinks under you at every step. And this might be the reason that so many large trees are met with blown down by the wind, even in the thickest part of the woods. All the ground among the trees is covered with moss and fern, of both which there is great variety. But, except the flax or hemp plant, and a few other plants, there is very little herbage of any sort; and none that was eatable, that they found, but about a handful of water-creffes, and near the same quantity of celery.

What Dusky Bay most abounds with, is fish. Six or eight men, in a boat, p. 96. with hooks and lines, caught daily sufficient to serve the whole ship's company. Of this article the variety is almost equal to the plenty; and of such kinds as are common to the more northern coast: but some are superior, in particular the cole fish, as they called it, which, Captain Cooke says, is both larger and finer flavoured than any he had ever met with before; and was, in the opinion of most on board, the highest luxury the sea afforded them. The shell fish are muscles, cockles, scallops, cray-fish, and many other sorts. The only amphi-

bious animals are seals, of these great numbers are to be found about this bay, and on the small rocks and isles near the sea coast.

p. 96. They found here five different kinds of ducks, some of which he did not recollect to have seen before: the largest are as big as a Muscovy duck, with a very beautiful variegated plumage, on which account they called it the painted duck; both male and female have a large white spot on each wing; the head and neck of the latter is white, but all the other feathers, as well as those on the head and neck of the drake, are of a dark variegated colour: the second sort have a brown plumage, with bright green feathers on their wings, and are about the size of an English tame duck: the third sort is the blue-grey duck before-mentioned, or the whistling duck, as some called them from the whistling noise they made; what is most remarkable in these is, that the end of their beaks is soft, and of a skinny, or more properly, a cartilaginous substance: the fourth sort is somewhat bigger than a teal, and all black, except the drake, which has some white feathers in his wings. There are but few of this sort; and they saw them no where, but in a river at the head of the bay. The last sort is a good deal like a teal.

p. 97. The other fowls, whether belonging to the sea or land, are the same as those commonly found in other parts of this country, (vide Journal, p. 115) except the blue peterel before mentioned, and the water or wood-hens: these last, although they are numerous enough here, are so scarce in other parts, that Captain Cook remarks he never saw but one. The reason may be, that as they cannot fly, they inhabit the skirts of the woods, and feed on the sea beech; and are so very tame or foolish, as to stand and stare at their pursuers till they may be knocked down with a stick. The natives, consequently, may have in a manner wholly destroyed them. They are about the size, and a good deal like a common dunghill hen; most of them are of a dirty black or dark brown colour, and eat very well in a pye or fricafée.

p. 98. Amongst the small birds, the wattle bird, poy bird, and fan-tail, on account of their singularity, ought to be particularised. The wattle bird (so called, because it has two wattles under its beak, the size of those of a small dunghill cock)



cock) is larger, particularly in length, than an English black bird; its bill is short and thick, and its feathers of a dark lead colour; the colour of its wattles is a dull yellow, almost an orange. The poy bird is less than the wattle bird; the feathers of a fine mazarine blue, except those of its neck, which are of a most beautiful silver grey, and two or three short white ones on the pinion joint of the wings; under its throat hang two little tufts of curled snow white feathers, called its *poies*, which being the Otaheitean word for earrings, occasioned Captain Cook's giving that name to the bird; which is not more remarkable for the beauty of its plumage, than for the sweetness of its note; the flesh is also most delicious, and was the greatest luxury the woods afforded them. Of the fan-tail there are different sorts: but the body of the most remarkable one is scarcely larger than a good filbert, yet it spreads a tail of most beautiful plumage full three quarters of a semi-circle of at least four or five inches radius.

For several days after the Resolution arrived in Pickersgill Harbour, and as p. 98. they were clearing the woods to set up their tents, &c. a four footed animal was seen by three or four of the people; but as no two gave the same description of it, of what kind it was cannot be ascertained. All, however, agreed that it was about the size of a cat, with short legs, and of a mouse colour. One of the seamen, and he that had the best view of it, said it had a bushy tail, and was most like a jackall of any animal he knew. The most probable conjecture is, that it is of a species not hitherto known. The incident, notwithstanding, discovers that this country is not so destitute of quadrupeds, as it was once thought to be.

The most mischievous animals here, are the small black sand flies, (vide Journal, p. 115) which are very numerous, and so troublesome, that they exceed every thing of the kind the crew had ever met with: wherever they bite, they cause a swelling, and such an intolerable itching, that it is not possible to refrain from scratching, which, at last, brings on ulcers like the small-pox.

The almost continual rains may be reckoned another evil attending Dusky p. 99. Bay. Though this, perhaps, may only happen at the season of the year  
I i 2 they

they were there; nevertheless, the situation of the country, the vast height and proximity of the mountains, seem to subject it to much rain at all times. The people of the Resolution, however, who were daily exposed to the rain, felt no ill effects from it; on the contrary, such as were sick and ailing, when they arrived, recovered daily, and the whole crew soon became strong and vigorous, which can only be attributed to the healthiness of the place, and the fresh provisions it afforded. The beer, Captain Cook here remarks, certainly contributed not a little to this salutary event. As already observed, they made it at first of a decoction of the spruce leaves; but finding that this used alone caused it to be too astringent, they afterwards mixed it with an equal quantity of the tea plant. This was a plant to which they had given that name in their former voyage, from their using it as tea. It partly destroyed the astringency of the other, and made the beer extremely palatable; so that it was esteemed by every one on board.

p. 101. The inhabitants of this bay are of the same race of people with those in the other parts of this country; speak the same language, and observe nearly the same customs. What could induce three or four families (for there appeared to be no more) to separate themselves so far from the society of the rest of their fellow-creatures, is not easy to guess. By Captain Cook's meeting with inhabitants in that place, he thinks it probable that there are people scattered over all this southern island. But the many vestiges of them in different parts of this bay, compared with the number of the natives actually seen, indicates that they live a wandering life. And, judging from appearances and circumstances, there is reason to believe, that, few as they are, they live not in perfect amity one family with another.

p. 102. Mr. Wales, by a variety of observations, found that the latitude of his observatory at Pickersgill Harbour was  $45^{\circ} 47' 26'' \frac{1}{2}$  south, and by the mean of several distances of the moon from the sun, that its longitude was  $166^{\circ} 18'$  east, which is about half a degree less than it is laid down in Captain Cook's chart, constructed in his former voyage.

After



After leaving Dusky Bay, May 11th, as already related, Captain Cook directed p. 103. his course along shore for Queen Charlotte's Sound, where he expected to find the Adventure. In this passage they met with nothing remarkable, or worthy of notice, till the 17th, at four o'clock in the afternoon: being then about three leagues to the westward of Cape Stephens, having a gentle gale at west by south, and clear weather, the wind at once flattened to a calm, the sky became suddenly obscured by dark dense clouds, and seemed to forebode much wind. This occasioned them to clew up all their sails; and presently after six water-spouts were seen, four rose and spent themselves between the ship and the land, that is to the S. W. of them; the fifth was without them; the sixth first appeared in the S. W. at the distance of two or three miles at least from them: its progressive motion was to the N. E. not in a strait, but in a crooked line, and passed within fifty yards of their stern, without their feeling any of its effects. The diameter of the base of this spout Captain Cook judged to be about 50 or 60 feet; that is, the sea within such a space was much agitated, and foamed up to a great height; from this a tube or round body was formed, by which the water, or air, or both, was carried in a spiral stream up to the clouds. Some of the people said they saw a bird in the one near them, which was whirled about like the fly of a jack as it was carried upwards. During the time these spouts lasted, they had, now and then, light puffs of wind from all points of the compass, with some few slight showers of rain, which generally fell in large drops; and the weather continued thick and hazy for some hours after, with variable light breezes of wind; at length the wind fixed in its old point, and the sky resumed its former serenity.

Some of these spouts appeared at times to be stationary, and at other times to have a quick, but very unequal progressive motion, and always in a crooked line, sometimes one way, and sometimes another, so that once or twice they were observed to cross one another. From the ascending motion of the bird, and several other circumstances, it was very evident that these spouts were caused by whirlwinds; and that the water in them was violently hurried upwards, and did not descend from the clouds, as some have asserted. The first appearance of them is by the violent agitation and rising up of the water; and presently after, a round column or tube is seen forming from the clouds above, which

which apparently descends till it joins the agitated water below. Captain Cook says, he uses the term apparently, because he does not believe it to be so in reality; on the contrary, he conceives that the tube is already formed from the agitated water below, and ascends, although at first it is either too small, or too thin to be seen. When the tube is formed, or become visible, its apparent diameter increases, until it is pretty large; after that it decreases; and at last it breaks or becomes invisible towards the latter part. Soon after the sea below resumes its natural state, and the tube is drawn by little and little up to the clouds, where it is dissipated. The same tube would sometimes have a vertical, and sometimes a crooked or inclined direction. Captain Cook further observes, that he had been told, that firing a gun would dissipate them; and he was very sorry he did not try the experiment, as they were near enough, and had a gun ready for the purpose; but as soon as the danger was past, he thought no more about it, being too attentive in viewing these extraordinary meteors.

p. 105. The wind having returned to the west, as already mentioned, they resumed their course to the east, and at day light, the next morning, being the 18th, appeared off Queen Charlotte's Sound, where they discovered their consort the Adventure, by the signals she made: an event which every one felt with an agreeable satisfaction. At noon the lieutenant of the Adventure came on board,

p. 106. from whom Captain Cook learnt that their ship had been there about six weeks; and at six in the evening, being come to an anchor in Ship Cove, near the Adventure, Captain Furneaux came on board, and gave the following account of his proceedings from the time he parted from the Resolution.

p. 107. " On the 7th of February, 1773, in the morning, the Resolution being then about two miles ahead, the wind shifting to the westward, brought on a very thick fog, so that we lost sight of her; we soon after heard a gun, the report of which we imagined to be on the larboard beam, upon which we hauled up to S. E. and kept firing a four-pounder every half hour, but had no answer, nor further sight of her; we then kept the course we steered before the fog came on. But not seeing any thing of her in the evening, though it was at intervals clear, which gave us much uneasiness, we tacked and stood to the westward, to cruise in the place where we last saw her, according to agreement



agreement in case of separation. A very heavy gale of wind and thick weather prevented us from reaching the intended spot; we, however, cruised as near the place as we could get, for three days; when, giving over all hopes of joining company again, we bore away for winter quarters, distant fourteen hundred leagues, through a sea entirely unknown; and reduced the allowance of water to one quart per day.

For several days we had much westerly wind, hard gales, with squalls, snow p. 108. and fleet, with a long hollow sea from the S. W. which led us to conclude, that there is no land in that quarter.

On the 26th, at night, we saw a meteor of uncommon brightness in the p. 108. N. N. W. it directed its course to the S. W. with a very great light in the southern sky, such as is known to the northward by the name of Aurora Borealis, or Northern Lights. We perceived the light for several nights running; and what is remarkable, we saw but one ice island after we parted company with the Resolution, till our making land; though we were most of the time two or three degrees to the southward of the latitude we first saw it in. We were daily attended by a great number of sea birds; and frequently saw porpoises, curiously spotted, white and black.

On the 1st of March we were surprised with the cry of land from the man p. 108. at the mast head, on the larboard beam. We immediately hauled our wind, and stood for it; but, to our great mortification, in a few hours, we found it to be only clouds, which disappeared as we sailed towards them. We then bore away for the land laid down in the charts by the name of Van Diemen's Land, discovered by Tasman, in 1642.

March the 9th, being in latitude  $43^{\circ} 37'$  south, longitude  $145^{\circ} 36'$  east, we saw p. 109. land, bearing N. N. E. about eight or nine leagues distant. We hauled up for it, and after passing two or three small islands, discovered a bold shore, which seemed to afford several bays or anchoring places. The country appeared hilly, and full of trees; the shore rocky, and difficult landing, occasioned by the winds blowing here continually from the westward, which caused such a surf, that the sand cannot lie on the shore.

On

p. 110. On the 10th, the weather being moderate, and the ship about four miles from the land, in the morning sent the great cutter on shore to find if there was any harbour or good bay. Soon after, it beginning to blow very hard, made the signal several times for the boat to return, but they did not see or hear any thing of it. The ship being by this time three or four leagues off, so that we could not see any thing of the boat, we began to be in great anxiety about her, as there was a very heavy sea. However, at half past one, P. M. to our inexpressible satisfaction, the boat returned safe.

p. 110. They had landed, but with much difficulty, and saw several places where the Indians had been, particularly one they had lately left, where there had been a fire, around which there lay a great number of pearl escallop shells; these were brought on board, with some burnt sticks and green boughs. There was a path from this place through the woods, which, in all probability, led to their habitations; but by reason of the weather, our people had not time to pursue it. The soil seems to be very rich; the country is well clothed with wood, particularly on the lee side of the hills; and plenty of water, which falls from the rocks, in beautiful cascades, for two or three hundred feet perpendicular, into the sea. But they did not perceive the least sign of any place to anchor in with safety.

p. 110. We then made sail for Frederick Henry Bay, and running along shore, about noon were abreast of the westernmost point of a very deep bay, called by Tasman, Stormy Bay. Whilst crossing this bay, we had very heavy squalls and thick weather: at times, when it cleared up, we saw several fires in the bottom of the bay, which is near two or three leagues deep, and has, I doubt not, good places for anchoring; but the weather being so bad, I did not think it safe to stand into it. At seven, being abreast of a fine bay, and having little wind, we anchored in twenty-four fathoms, sandy bottom. As it was a fine evening, we had a good observation by the moon, and found we were in latitude  $43^{\circ} 20'$  south, longitude  $147^{\circ} 34'$  east. We at first took this bay to be that which Tasman calls Frederick Henry Bay, but now found that his is laid down five leagues to the northward of this.

At



At day break, the 11th, I sent the master on shore to sound the bay, and find p. 111.  
out a watering place: at eight he returned, having discovered a most excellent  
harbour, for which we made; and about seven P. M. anchored in seven  
fathoms water, about a mile from the shore, between two points: that to the  
north we take to be Tasman's Head, and the eastermost we named Penguin  
Island, from a curious one we caught there.

We lay here five days, which time was employed in wooding, watering, and p. 112.  
overhauling the rigging. We found the country very pleasant; the soil black  
and rich, though thin; the sides of the hills covered very thickly with large  
trees, which grow to a great height before they branch off; they are all of the  
evergreen kind, but different from any I ever saw: the wood is very brittle, and  
easily split, and there appears to be no great variety of sorts, as we saw only  
two; the leaves of one sort are long and narrow, and the seed (of which I  
got a few) in the shape of a button, and has a very agreeable smell; the leaves  
of the other are like the bay tree, and it has a seed like the white thorn,  
with an agreeable spicy taste and smell. Out of the trees we cut down for  
fire wood there issued some gum, which the surgeon called gum-lac. The trees  
are mostly burnt or scorched near the ground, occasioned by the natives setting  
fire to the underwood in the most frequented places; and by these means they  
have rendered it easy walking.

The land birds, we saw, are a bird like a raven; some of the crow kind, p. 112.  
which were black, with the tips of the feathers of the tail and wings white,  
the bill long and very sharp; some paroquets; and several kinds of small birds.  
The sea-fowl are ducks, teal, and the sheldrake. I forgot to mention a large  
white bird that one of the gentlemen shot, about the size of a kite, of the  
eagle kind. As for beasts, we saw but one, which was an opossum; but we  
observed the dung of some which we judged to be of the deer kind. The fish  
in the bay are scarce; those we caught were mostly sharks, dog-fish, and a  
fish called by the seamen nurfes, which is like the dog-fish, only full of small  
white spots; and some small fish not unlike sprats. The lagoons, which are  
brackish, abound with trout and several other sorts of fish.

p. 113.

While we lay here we saw several smokes and large fires, about eight or ten miles in shore to the northward, but did not see any of the natives, though they frequently come into this bay, as appears by several wigwams or huts which were there, where we found some bags and nets made of grafs, in which it is probable they carry their provisions and other necessaries: in one of them there was the stone they strike fire with; and tinder made of bark, but of what tree could not be distinguished. We found in one of the huts a spear, which was made sharp at one end, I suppose, with a shell or stone: those things we brought away, leaving in the room of them medals, gun-flints, a few nails, and an old empty barrel, with the iron hoops on it. They seem to be quite ignorant of every sort of metal. The boughs of which their huts are made are either broken or split, and tied together with grafs in a circular form, the largest end stuck in the ground, and the smaller parts meeting in a point at the top, and covered with fern and bark: so poorly is this executed, that they will hardly keep out a shower of rain: in the middle is the fire-place, surrounded with heaps of muscle, pearl-scallop, and cray-fish shells, which I believe to be their chief food, though we could not find any of the fish. They lie on the ground, on dried grafs, round the fire; and they appear to have no settled place of habitation, as their houses seemed built only for a few days, but to wander about, in small parties, from place to place in search of food, and are actuated by no other motive. We never found more than three or four huts in a place, and these only capable of containing three or four persons each. And, what is remarkable, we never saw the least marks either of canoe or boat; and it is generally thought they have none, being altogether, from what we could judge, a very ignorant and wretched set of people, though natives of a country capable of producing every necessary of life; and a climate the finest in the world. We found not the least signs of any minerals or metals.

p. 114.

Having completed our wood and water, we sailed from Adventure Bay, (as we named it) intending to coast it up along shore, till we should fall in with the land seen by Captain Cook, and discover whether Van Diemen's Land joins with New Holland.

p. 114.

On the 16th we passed Maria's Islands, so named by Tasman; and on the 17th having passed Schouten's Islands, we hauled in for the main land, and  
stood



stood along shore at the distance of two or three leagues off. The country here appears to be very thickly inhabited, as there was a continual fire along shore, as we sailed; but the weather being bad, we could not send a boat on shore, or have any intercourse with the inhabitants. After tracing the coast for several days, and making the best observations I could, it is my opinion, that there is not any straits between New Holland and Van Diemen's Land, but a very deep bay, which the contrary wind could not permit me to explore; I therefore left the coast, and steered for New Zealand. p. 115.

On the 24th of March we arrived on the coast of New Zealand, having made twenty-four degrees of longitude from Adventure Bay, after a passage of fifteen days. April the 3d we entered Cook's Straits, and on the 7th anchored in Ship Cove, in Charlotte Sound. p. 116.

The two following days were employed in clearing a place on Motuara Island for erecting tents for the sick, having several on board much afflicted with the scurvy; and likewise for the sail-makers, and coopers. On the top of the island stood a post, erected by the Endeavour's people, with her name and time of departure on it.

On the 9th we were visited by three canoes, with about sixteen of the natives, and to induce them to bring us fish and other provisions, we gave them several articles, with which they seemed highly pleased. One of our young gentlemen, seeing something wrapt up in a better manner than common, had the curiosity to examine what it was; and, to his great surprize, found it to be the head of a man lately killed. They were very apprehensive of its being forced from them, particularly the man who seemed most interested in it; whose very flesh crept on his bones for fear of being punished by us, as Captain Cook had expressed his great abhorrence of this unnatural act. They used every method to conceal the head, by shifting it from one to another; and by signs endeavouring to convince us that there was no such thing amongst them, though we had seen it but a few minutes before. They then took their leave of us, and went on shore. p. 118.

p. 119. They frequently mentioned Tupia, which was the name of the native of Otaheite, brought here by the Endeavour, and who died at Batavia; and when we informed them that he was dead, some of them seemed to be much concerned, and, as well as we could understand them, wanted to know whether we killed him, or if he died a natural death. By these questions we may conclude they are the same tribe Captain Cook saw. In the afternoon they returned again with fish and fern roots, for which we gave them nails and other trifles; though the nails are what they set the most value on. The man and woman who had the head did not come off again. Having a catalogue of words in their language, we called several things by their names, which surprized them greatly. They wanted it much, and offered a great quantity of fish for it.

p. 119. Next morning they returned again, to the number of fifty or sixty, with their Chief, as we supposed, at their head, in five double canoes. They gave us their implements of war, stone hatchets, and clothes, &c. for nails and old bottles, which they set a great value on. A number of the head men came on board, and it was with some difficulty we got them out of the ship by fair means; but on the appearance of a musquet, with a fixed bayonet, they all went into their canoes very precipitately. We were daily visited by more or less, who brought fish in great plenty for nails, beads, and other trifles, and behaved very peaceably.

p. 120. We settled the astronomer, with his instruments, and a sufficient guard, on a small island that is joined to Motuara, at low water, called the Hippa, where there was an old fortified town that the natives had forsaken. Their houses served our people to live in; and, by sinking them about a foot inside, we made them very comfortable.

p. 120. On the 11th of May we felt two severe shocks of an earthquake, but received no kind of damage; and on the 17th had the pleasure of seeing the Resolution off the Mouth of the Sound, after a separation of fourteen weeks."

Having thus given the substance of Captain Furneaux's journal during the absence of the Adventure from her Consort, we now return to that of Captain Cook.

The



The Resolution being, as before recited, moored near the Adventure, in Queen Charlotte's Sound, Captain Cook went ashore the morning after his arrival, in search of scurvy-grass, celery, and some other vegetables, which he knew were to be found there; and, returning on board with a boat load, and a prospect of an ample supply, he gave orders that they should be boiled with wheat and portable broth every morning for breakfast; and with pease and broth for dinner: knowing, from experience, that these vegetables, thus dressed, are extremely beneficial in removing all manner of scorbutick complaints. p. 121.

Captain Cook had long had a desire, as already mentioned, to visit Van Diemen's Land, in order to inform himself if it made a part of New Holland; and certainly would have done so, had the winds proved favourable. But as Captain Furneaux had now, in some measure, cleared up that point, he could have no business there. He therefore came to a resolution to continue his researches to the east, between the latitudes of  $41^{\circ}$  and  $46^{\circ}$ ; with this determination he acquainted Captain Furneaux, and ordered him to get his ship in readiness to put to sea as soon as possible. p. 121.

On the 20th of May he sent on shore the only ewe and ram remaining of those he had brought from the Cape of Good Hope, with an intent to leave in this country; but the next day they were both found dead, occasioned, as supposed, by eating some poisonous plant. The same day he visited several gardens Captain Furneaux had caused to be made, and planted with various articles; all of which were in a flourishing state. He likewise set some men to work to make a garden on Long Island, which he planted with garden seeds, roots, &c. p. 122.

On the 21st they were visited, for the first time since the arrival of the Resolution, by some of the natives, who dined on board; and it was not a little they devoured; in the evening they were dismissed with presents. p. 122.

Going on a shooting party, the 24th, in company with Captain Furneaux and Mr. Foster, in their way, they met a large canoe, in which were fourteen or fifteen people, who, as they had before done to Captain Furneaux, made inquiries after Tupia, and seemed to express some concern when they were told he p. 122.

he was dead. On the return of the captains to the ship, they were informed that a canoe had been along side, the people in which seemed to be strangers, and who also inquired after Tupia.

p. 123. The 29th, several of the natives making them a visit, Captain Cook took one of them to his gardens, and shewing him the plants and roots, pointed out the uses of them to him. It was easy to give him an idea of them by comparing them with such as he knew. The man was so well pleased, that, of his own accord, he began to hoe up the earth about the plants of some potatoes. Two or three families of these people now took up their abode near them, employing themselves daily in fishing, and supplying them with the fruits of their labour; the good effects of which the crew soon felt; for they were by no means such expert fishers as the natives, nor were their methods of fishing equal.

p. 123. June the 2d, the ship's company being nearly ready to put to sea, Captain Cook sent on shore two goats, a male and female, and left them on the east side of the sound; and Captain Furneaux likewise sent to Cannibal Cove a boar and two breeding sows; so that there is reason to hope this country will, in time, be stocked with these species of animals.

p. 124. In an excursion to the east, they met with the largest seal they had ever seen: it was swimming on the surface of the water, and suffered them to come near enough to fire at it, but without effect, for after a chase of near an hour they were obliged to leave it: by the size of this animal, they conjectured it to be a sea lioness, and it bore a great resemblance to the drawing in Anson's Voyage. A sea lion having been seen in their former voyage, at the entrance of the Sound, increases the probability.

p. 124. On the 3d one of the boats was chased by a large double canoe, but with what intent is not known. Early next morning some of their friends brought them a large supply of fish. One of them agreed to go away with Captain Cook, but when it came to the point he changed his mind; as did some others, who had promised to go in the Adventure. It was even said that some of them offered their children to sale: this, however, proved to be a mistake, and arose from the crew's being ignorant of the customs and manners of the natives.

About



About nine o'clock, on the 4th, a large double canoe, in which were twenty p. 125.  
or thirty people appeared in sight, at which the friendly Indians, on board, seemed greatly alarmed, saying, they were their enemies. Two of them, the one with a spear, the other with a stone hatchet, in his hand, mounted the arm chests, on the poop, and there, in a kind of bravado, bid their enemies defiance; while the others that were on board took to their canoe and went ashore, probably to secure the women and children. The people in the canoe seemed to pay very little regard to those on board, but kept advancing slowly towards the ship, and after performing the usual ceremonies, put along side. The Chief was then easily prevailed upon to come on board, followed by many others; and peace, which it did not appear they had any intention to break, was immediately established on all sides.

One of the first questions these strangers asked was for Tupia, and when told p. 126.  
he was dead, one or two expressed their sorrow by a kind of lamentation, which appeared more formal than real. A trade soon commenced between the people and them. It was not possible to hinder the former from selling the clothes from off their backs for the meereft trifles, things that were neither useful nor curious. This caused Captain Cook to dismiss the strangers sooner than he would otherwise have done. When they departed, they went over to Motuara, where, by the help of glasses, four or five canoes were discerned, and several people on shore. This induced Captain Cook to go over, accompanied by Mr. Forster, and one of the officers: they were well received by the Chief and the whole tribe, which consisted of near one hundred persons, men, women, and children; having with them six canoes, and all their utensils; which made it probable that they were come to reside in the Sound. But this is only conjecture, as it is common for them, when they go but even a little way, to carry their whole property with them.

Captain Cook is led, from various circumstances, to conclude that the inha- p. 127.  
bitants of Tavai Poenammoo live a wandering life, dispersed in small parties, and knowing no head but the chief of the family or tribe. Whereas the inhabitants of Eahei nomauwe, the island that forms the northern district of New Zealand, appear to be united under one head, and governed by general laws: consequently

consequently they are not alarmed at the appearance of every stranger; and if attacked have strong holds to retire to, where they can, with advantage, defend themselves, their property, and their country. His not being able to recollect the face of one person he met with at Queen Charlotte Sound, seems to confirm the former part of this observation, and renders it probable that the people which inhabited it in the year 1770, have been since either driven out of it, or, of their own accord, have removed to some other place.

p. 128. After passing an hour on Motuara with the natives, and having distributed among them some presents, and shewed the gardens to the Chief, Captain Cook returned on board, and spent the remainder of his royal master's birth-day in festivity, having the company of Captain Furneaux and all his officers. Double allowance enabled the seamen to share in the general joy.

p. 130. During Captain Cook's stay in the Sound, the natives gave him too much reason to observe, that this second visit to their country had not mended the morals of either sex. He had always looked upon the females of New-Zealand to be more chaste than the generality of Indian women. Whatever favours a few of them might have granted to the people in the Endeavour, it was generally done in a private manner, and the men did not seem to interest themselves much in it. But now he was informed that the men were the chief promoters of a shameful traffick; and that, for things of a trifling value, they would oblige the women to prostitute themselves, whether they would or no, and that without any regard to privacy.

p. 129. Both ships being now ready for sea, Captain Cook gave Captain Furneaux an account in writing of the route he intended to take; which was to proceed to the east, between the latitudes  $41^{\circ}$  and  $46^{\circ}$  south, till they arrived in longitude  $140^{\circ}$  or  $135$  west; then, provided no land was discovered, to proceed to Otaheite, from thence back to Queen Charlotte Sound, by the shortest route; and after taking in wood and water to proceed to the south, and explore all the unknown parts of the sea between the Meridian of New Zealand and Cape Horn. He then appointed several places of rendezvous, in case a separation should again take place.

On



On the 7th of June, at four in the morning, they unmoored, and at seven p. 131. weighed and put to sea; and by eight o'clock the next morning got quite through the strait. From this time to the 22d of July they steered in different directions, without any thing worthy of remark happening; the Journal containing nothing but the latitude and longitude, variation of the wind and weather, with similar occurrences.

That day, July 22, was rendered remarkable by their not seeing a single bird. p. 135. Not one day had passed, since they left the land, without seeing some of the following birds: viz. albatrosses, sheerwaters, pintadoes, blue peterels, and Port Egmont hens. But these frequent every part of the southern ocean in the higher latitudes. They were now in latitude  $31^{\circ} 6'$  south, and  $134^{\circ} 12'$  p. 135. west. The weather so warm, that it was necessary to put on lighter clothes, the mercury in the thermometer, at noon, rising to 63. Not a bird, nor any other thing was to be seen, that could induce them to think they had ever been in the neighbourhood of any land. On the 25th they met the first tropic bird they had seen in this sea.

On the 29th Captain Cook sent on board the Adventure to enquire into the p. 136. state of the crew, having heard that they were sickly; and this he found to be but too true; her cook being dead, and about twenty of her best men down in the scurvy and flux. At this time the Resolution had only three men on the sick list, and only one of them attacked with the scurvy; several more, however, began to show symptoms of it, and were, accordingly, put upon the wort, marmalade of carrots, rob of lemons and oranges.

He appointed one of his seamen cook to the Adventure, and wrote to Captain p. 138. Furneaux, desiring him to make use of every method in his power to stop the spreading of the disease among his people; and proposing such as he thought might tend towards it. But he afterwards found that this advice was unnecessary, every method having been used that could be thought of. He was at a loss how to account for the scurvy raging more in one ship than another, p. 137. unless it was owing to the crew of the Adventure being more scorbutic when they arrived in New-Zealand than that of the Resolution, and to their eating

few or no vegetables while they lay in Queen Charlotte's Sound; which arose partly from the want of knowing the right sorts, and partly because it was a new diet, which alone was sufficient for seamen to reject it. To introduce any new article of food among seamen, let it be ever so much for their good, he observes, requires both the example and authority of a commander; without both of which it will be dropt before the people are sensible of the benefits resulting from it.

p. 138. On the 1st of August, being in latitude  $25^{\circ} 1'$  south, longitude  $134^{\circ} 6'$  west, nearly the same that Captain Carteret assigns for Pitcairn's Island, discovered by him, in 1767, they looked well out for it, but saw nothing. According to the longitude in which he has placed it, they must have passed about fifteen leagues to the west of it. But as this was uncertain, Captain Cook did not think it prudent, considering the situation of the Adventure's people, to lose any time in looking for it.

p. 138. As they had now got to the northward of Captain Carteret's tracks, he gave up all hopes of discovering a continent; islands were all he was to expect to find, until he returned again to the south. He had in the present and former voyages crossed this ocean in the latitude of  $40^{\circ}$  and upwards, without meeting with any thing that in the least induced him to think he should find what he was in search after: on the contrary, every thing conspired to make him believe that there is no southern continent between the meridian of America and New-Zealand; at least, this passage did not produce any indisputable signs of any. For this supposition he gives many satisfactory reasons, too long for insertion here.

p. 140. The 6th, in latitude  $21^{\circ}$ , they saw flying fishes, gannets, and egg-birds. They daily saw flying fishes, albacores, dolphins, &c. but neither by striking, nor with hook and line, could they catch any of them: this required some art, which none of the people were masters of. This day a boat was hoisted out, and Captain Furneaux sent for to dinner, from whom they learnt that his people were much better: the flux had left them, and the scurvy was at a stand. Some cyder which he happened to have, and which he gave to the scorbutick people, contributed not a little to this happy change. About eight o'clock in  
the



the evening, after two hours calm, and some heavy showers of rain, they got the trade wind at S. E. upon which Captain Cook directed his course to the W. N. W. as well by keeping in the strength of it, to get to the north of the islands discovered in his former voyage, as to have the chance of discovering any other islands that may lay in the way. During the day-light they made all the sail they could, but at night either run under an easy sail, or lay to.

On the 11th, at day break, land was seen to the south: this, upon a nearer p. 141. approach, they found to be an island of about two leagues in extent, clothed with wood, above which the cocoa nut trees shewed their lofty heads. Captain Cook judged it to be one of those isles discovered by Monsieur Bougainville. It lies in latitude  $17^{\circ} 24'$  south, longitude  $141^{\circ} 39'$  west. He called it after the name of the ship, Resolution Island. The sickly state of the Adventure's crew rendering it necessary for him to make the best of his way to Otaheite, where he was sure of finding refreshments, he consequently did not wait to examine this island, which appeared too small to supply their wants, but pursued his course to the west. At six o'clock in the evening land was seen from the mast head, bearing W. by S. probably this was another of Bougainville's discoveries. They named it Doubtful Island.

At day break, on the 12th, they discovered land right a-head, distant about p. 142. two miles; so that day light made known to them their danger but just in time. This proved another of those low or half drowned islands, or rather a large coral shoal of about twenty leagues in circuit: a very small part of it was land, which consisted of little islets ranged along the north side, and connected by sand banks and breakers; these islets are clothed with wood, among which the cocoa nut trees were only distinguishable; in the middle is a large lake or inland sea, in which was a canoe under sail. This island, which was named after Captain Furneaux, lies in latitude  $17^{\circ} 5'$  south, longitude  $143^{\circ} 16'$  west.

Friday the 12th they saw another of these low islands, in latitude  $17^{\circ} 4'$  south, p. 142. longitude  $144^{\circ} 30'$  west, which obtained the name of Adventure Island. Monsieur Bougainville very properly calls this cluster of low islands the Dangerous Archipelago. The smoothness of the sea sufficiently convinced them that

p. 143. they were furrounded by them, and how necessary it was to proceed with the utmost caution, especially at night. At five o'clock P. M. they again saw land, which they afterwards found to be Chain Island, discovered in their former voyage. The next morning they had a large swell from the south, a sure sign that they were now clear of the low islands; they therefore steered for Otaheite, without being apprehensive of meeting with any danger.

p. 144. On the 15th, in the morning, they saw Osnaburg Islands, or Maitea, discovered by Captain Wallis, bearing by S. by W. and intending to put into Oaiti-Piha Bay, which lies near the S. E. end of Otaheite, in order to get what refreshments they could before they went down to Matavia; they made sail till midnight, when they brought to; and at four o'clock the next morning stood on for the land, with a fine breeze at east, but at day break they found themselves not more than half a league from the reef.

p. 144. The breeze now began to fail them, and at last fell to a calm: this made it necessary to hoist out their boats to tow the ships off; but all their efforts were not sufficient to keep them from being carried near the reef. As the calm continued, their situation became still more dangerous. They were not, however, without hopes of getting round the western point of the reef, and into the bay, till about two o'clock, P. M. when they came before an opening or break in the reef: through this, now, they hoped to get the ships; but, on sending to examine it, they found there was not a sufficient depth of water, though it caused such an indraught of the tide of flood through it as was very near proving fatal to the Resolution; for as soon as the ships got into this stream, they were carried with great impetuosity towards the reef. The moment this was perceived, one of the warping machines, which they had in readiness, was carried out, with about four hundred fathoms of rope, but it had not the least effect. The horrors of shipwreck now stared them in the face. They were not more than two cables length from the breakers, and yet could find no bottom to anchor, which was the only probable means they had to save the ships. They, however, dropped an anchor, but before it took hold, and brought them up, the ship was in less than three fathoms water, and struck at every fall of the sea, which broke close under her stern in a dreadful surf, and threatened them every moment



moment with shipwreck. The Adventure, very luckily, brought up close upon their bow, without striking.

Upon this, they carried out two kedge anchors, with hawsers to each, which p. 145. found ground a little without the bower, but in what depth they never knew. By heaving upon these, and cutting away the bower anchor, they got the ship afloat, but lay there some time in the greatest anxiety, expecting every minute that either the kedges would come home, or the hawsers be cut in two by the rocks. At length the tide, fortunately, ceased to act in the same direction: Captain Cook, thereupon, ordered all the boats to try to tow off the Resolution; and when he saw that was practicable, they hove up the two kedges; at that moment a light air came off the land, which so assisted the boats, that they soon got clear of all danger. He then ordered the boats to assist the Adventure; but, before they reached her, she was under sail, with the land breeze, and soon after joined her consort, leaving behind her three anchors, her coasting cable, and two hawsers, which were never recovered. Thus were they once more safe at sea, after narrowly escaping being wrecked on the very island they had so ardently wished to be at but a few days before. The calm, after bringing them into that dangerous situation, happily continued: for had the sea breeze, as usual, set in, the Resolution must inevitably have been lost, and, probably, the Adventure too.

During the time they were in this critical situation, a number of the natives p. 146. were on board and about the ship. They seemed to be insensible of the danger the crews were in, shewing not the least surprize, joy, or fear, when the ship was striking; and departed, a little before sunset, quite unconcerned. Many of p. 144. the natives had come off in their canoes from different parts on the arrival of the ships upon the coast, bringing with them a small quantity of fish, a few cocoa nuts, and other fruits, which they exchanged for nails and beads, &c. Most of them knew Captain Cook again; and many inquired for Mr. Banks and others, who were with him before; but not one asked for Tupia.

The next morning, being the 17th, they anchored in Oaiti-Piha Bay, in twelve p. 146. fathoms water, about two cables length from shore. Both ships were by this time

time crowded with a great number of the natives, who brought with them cocoa nuts, plantains, bananoes, apples, yams and other roots, which they exchanged for nails and beads. To several, who called themselves Chiefs, Captain Cook made presents of shirts, axes, and several other articles, and in return, they promised to bring him hogs and fowls: a promise, however, which they never intended to perform.

p. 147. On the 18th the natives came off again with fruit, as the day before, but in no great quantity. There was also a party of the crew on shore, trading under the protection of a guard: but nothing was brought to market but fruit and roots, though many hogs were seen about the houses of the inhabitants. The cry was, that they belonged to Waheatoua the Earee de hi, or King; and he had not yet been seen, nor indeed any other Chief of note. Many, however, who called themselves Earees came on board, partly with a view of getting presents, and partly to pilfer whatever came in their way.

p. 147. One of these sort of Earees was caught taking things which did not belong to him, and handing them out of the quarter gallery. Many complaints of the like nature were made to Captain Cook against those on deck, which occasioned his turning them all out of the ship. The cabin guest made good haste to be gone. The Captain was so exasperated at his behaviour, having made several presents to him and his friends, who were not a few, that after he had got some distance from the ship, he fired two musquets over his head, which made him quit the canoe, and take to the water. He then sent a boat to take up the canoe; but, as she came near the shore, the people from thence began to pelt the sailors with stones: being in some pain for her safety, as she was unarmed, he went himself in another boat to protect her, and ordered a great gun loaded with ball to be fired along the coast, which made them all retire from the shore; and he was suffered to bring away two canoes without the least opposition: in one of the canoes was a little boy, who was much frightened; but Captain Cook soon dissipated his fears by giving him beads, and putting him on shore. A few hours after they were all good friends again; and the canoes were returned to the first person who came for them.

It



It was not till the evening of this day that any one inquired after Tupia, and then but two or three. As soon as they learnt the cause of his death, they were quite satisfied. As little inquiry was made after Aotourou, the man who went away with Monsieur Bougainville. But they were continually asking after Mr. Banks, and several others, who were with Captain Cook in his former voyage. p. 148.

These people informed him, that Toutaha, the Regent of the greater Peninsula of Otaheite, had been killed in a battle which was fought between the two kingdoms, about five months before; and that Otoo was the reigning Prince. Tubourai, Tamaide, and several more of the principal friends of the English, about Matavia, fell in this battle; as did also a great number of the common people: but, at present, a peace subsisted between the two kingdoms. p. 148.

In an excursion which Captain Cook, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, made along the coast, they met with a Chief, who entertained them with excellent fish, fruit, &c. In return for this hospitality, he made him a present of an axe, and other things. The Chief, afterwards, accompanied them back to the ships, where he stayed but a little while. p. 149.

Towards the dusk of the evening, on the 20th, one of the natives made off with a musquet belonging to the Guard on shore. Captain Cook was present when this happened, and sent some of the people after him: this, however, would have been to little purpose, had not some of the natives, of their own accord, pursued the thief: having knocked him down, they took from him the musquet, and brought it back. Fear, on this occasion, there is no doubt, operated more with the pursuers than principle; yet they deserve to be applauded for such an act of justice. p. 149.

The morning of the 21st a Chief made Captain Cook a visit, and presented him with a quantity of fruit; among which were a quantity of cocoa nuts, which the people had drawn the water from, and afterwards thrown overboard. These he had picked up, and tied in bundles so artfully, that the deception was not at first perceived. When he was told of it, without betraying the least emotion,

emotion, and, as if he knew nothing of the matter, he opened two or three of them himself, and having signified to them that he was satisfied it was so, went on shore, and sent off a quantity of plantains and bananas.

p. 150. Having got on board a supply of water, fruit, and roots, Captain Cook determined to sail the next morning to Matavia, as he found it was not likely that he should get an interview with Waheatoua, without which it was very improbable he should procure any hogs. But the wind blowing fresh from the N. W. prevented this design from being carried into execution.

p. 150. In the evening of the 22d he was informed that Waheatoua was come into the neighbourhood, and wanted to see him: in consequence of this information, he determined to wait one day longer in order to have an interview with that Prince. He accordingly set out the next morning, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, Mr. Forster, and several of the natives. He met the Chief about a mile from the landing-place, towards which he was advancing to meet him; but as soon as he saw Captain Cook and his party, he stopped, with his numerous train, in the open air. The Captain found him seated upon a stool, with a circle of people round him, and knew him at first sight, as he did the Captain; having seen each other several times in 1769. At that time he was but a boy, and went by the name of Tearee; but, upon the death of his father Waheatoua, he took upon him that name.

p. 150. After the first salutation was over, having seated Captain Cook on the same stool with himself, and the other gentlemen on the ground by them, he began to enquire after several, by name, who were with the Captain on his former voyage. He next enquired how long he would stay; and when he was told no longer than the next day, he seemed sorry; asked him to stay some months, and at last came down to five days; promising, that, in that time, he should have hogs in plenty. But, as the Captain had been here already a week without so much as getting one, he could not put any faith in this promise. The presents Captain Cook made him, consisted of a shirt, a sheet, a broad axe, spike nails, knives, looking-glasses, medals, beads, &c. in return, he ordered a pretty good hog to be carried to the boat. They stayed with him all the morning,  
during



during which time he never suffered Captain Cook to go from his side, where he was seated: he was also seated on the same stool; which was carried from place to place by one of his attendants, whom they called the stool-bearer. At length the company took leave, in order to return on board to dinner; after which they visited the Chief again, and made him more presents; and he, in return, gave each of the Captains a hog. Some others were got by exchanges at the trading places: so that they procured in the whole, that day, as much fresh pork as gave the crews of both ships a meal. And this in consequence of their having the interview with the king.

The fruits they got at this place greatly contributed towards the recovery of the sick people belonging to the Adventure. Many of them, who had been so ill as not to be able to move without assistance, were, in this short time, so far recovered, that they could walk about of themselves. When they put into that Bay, the Resolution had but one scorbutic man on board, and a marine, who had been long sick, and who died the second day after their arrival, of a complication of disorders, without the least mixture of the scurvy. p. 152.

On the evening of the 25th they arrived in Matavai Bay, the other part of the island; before they got to an anchor the decks were crowded with natives; many of whom Captain Cook recognized, and almost all of them knew him. A great crowd were gotten together upon the shore, among whom was Otoo, their king. The Captain was just going to pay him a visit, when he was informed that he was *mataow'd* (frightened) and gone to Oparree. He could not conceive the reason of the King's thus going off in a fright, as every one seemed pleased to see him. A Chief, whose name was Maritata, was at this time on board, and advised him to defer his visit till the next morning, when he would accompany him. p. 153.

He did so, and accordingly the next day, accompanied by Captain Furneaux and others, together with Maritata and his wife, he set off for Oparree. As soon as they landed they were conducted to Otoo, whom they found seated on the ground, under the shade of a tree, with a great concourse of his subjects around him. After the first compliments were over, Captain Cook presented

M m

him

him with such articles as he guessed were most valuable in his eyes; he also made presents to several of his attendants: in return, they offered him cloth, which he refused to accept, telling them, that what he had given them was for *Tiyo* (Friendship).

The King inquired after Tupia, and all the gentlemen that were with the Captain in his former voyage, by name. It was not without much ado that a promise could be obtained from him to visit on board. He said, he was *mataou no to poupoue*, that is, afraid of the guns. Indeed, his whole actions shewed him to be a timorous Prince. He was about thirty years of age, six feet high, and a fine personable well-made man. All his subjects appeared uncovered before him, his father not excepted.

Otaheite and the adjacent islands, together with the dress, customs, and manners of the inhabitants being so fully described in the preceding Journal, a further account of them here would be a needless repetition. A few of the most singular transactions of Captain Cook, and those under his command, during his two last voyages, with some of the additional observations he was enabled to make, will therefore be inserted.

p. 155. On the 27th, Captain Cook, carrying home the King and his sister, who had that day visited him on board, he had no sooner landed, than he was met by a venerable old lady, the mother of the late Toutaha (vide Journal, p. 21): she seized him by both his hands, and burst into a flood of tears, saying, *Toutaha tiyo no toutee matty Toutaha* (Toutaha, your friend, or the friend of Cook, is dead). Captain Cook observes, that he was so much affected with her behaviour, that it would have been impossible for him to have refrained mingling his tears with hers, had not Otoo come and taken him from her. He, with some difficulty, obtained leave to see her again, when he presented her with an axe, and some other articles.

p. 156. As a proof of the king's pusillanimity, he relates, that having, among other things, made him a present of a broad sword, he was so intimidated at the very sight of it, that they had much ado to persuade him to accept of it, and have



have it buckled upon him; and it had remained on but a short time, before he desired leave to take it off, and sent it out of his sight.

On the 29th, being at Oparree, Otoo, as a part of the entertainment of the day, conducted Captain Cook and his suite to the theatre, where they were entertained with a dramatic *Heava*, or play, in which were both dancing and comedy. The performers were five men, and one woman, who was no less a person than the King's sister. The music consisted of three drums only. It lasted near two hours; and upon the whole was well conducted. It was not possible for the English part of the audience to find out the meaning of the play. Some part seemed adapted to the present time, as Captain Cook's name was frequently mentioned; but others were certainly wholly unconnected with them. The dancing dress of the lady was very elegant, being decorated with long tassels made of feathers. In the island of Ulietea, some time after, they were entertained with a similar *Heava*: the subject of which was rather more intelligible to them, but not less singular: the music consisted, as here, of three drums; and the actors were seven men, and one woman the Chief's daughter. The plot that constituted the principal part of the drama, was a theft committed by a man and his accomplice, in such a masterly manner, as sufficiently displayed the genius of the people in this vice. The theft is discovered before the thief has time to carry off his prize; then a scuffle ensues with those set to guard it, who, though four to two, are beat off the stage, and the thief and his accomplices bear away their plunder in triumph. The laws of this country gave the strangers reason to expect a different denouement, as by these, a thief is punished with death, or a good tiparrahying (beating). But, though such a law exists among them, the natives alone are benefited by it; as strangers are robbed with impunity, in all these islands, on every occasion.

About ten o'clock, in the evening, August 30, the ships were alarmed with the cry of murder, and a great noise on shore near the bottom of the bay. The disturbance was supposed to be occasioned by some of the marines and seamen making too free with the women; and they were accordingly punished for their misconduct. The natives were so much alarmed, on this occasion, that they fled from their habitations in the dead of the night, and the terror

spread all along the coast. For when Captain Cook went in the morning to visit Otoo, he found him removed, or rather fled, many miles from the place of his abode. Even when the King was found, the Captain was obliged to wait some hours before he would see him; and he then complained of the last night's riot.

As Captain Cook intended this to be his last visit, he had taken with him a suitable present: among other things, were three cape sheep, which the King had seen before, and for which he had asked. These people never lose any thing for want of asking for. The presents he got at this interview entirely removed his fears, and opened his heart; so that, in return, he gave them three hogs. When they took their leave, Captain Cook acquainted him that he should sail from the island the next day; at which the king seemed much moved, and embraced him several times.

p. 159. Lieutenant Pickersgill, having been at Attahourou, on the first of September, for hogs, Pottatou, the Chief of that district, and some of his friends, came along with him to visit Captain Cook, there having been a friendly intimacy between them. The Lieutenant went in the boat as far as Paparra, where he saw old Oberea, so often mentioned in the former voyage; she seemed much altered for the worse; was poor, and of little consequence. The first words she said to Mr. Pickersgill were, *Earee mataou ina boa*, Earee is frightened, you can have no hogs. By this it appeared that she had little or no property, and was herself subject to the Earee.

p. 161. The wind now being come round to the east, they put to sea, and directed their course for the island of Huaheine, where they anchored on the 3d, when, according to the usual custom, the natives came immediately off to them, bringing some of the productions of the isle.

p. 162. The next day, Captain Cook, accompanied by Captain Furneaux and Mr. Forster, went to pay his first visit to Oree, the Chief of the island, who, he was informed, was waiting for him. They were conducted to the place by one of the natives; but were not permitted to go out of the boat till they had gone through



through some part of the following ceremony, usually performed at this isle on such like occasions. The boat, in which they were desired to remain, being landed before the Chief's house, that stood close to the shore, five young plantain trees, which are their emblems of peace, were brought on board separately, and with some formality; three young pigs, their ears ornamented with cocoa-nut fibres, accompanied the first three; and a dog, the fourth: each had its particular name and purpose, rather too mysterious for them to understand. Lastly, the Chief sent to Captain Cook the inscription engraved on a small piece of pewter, which he had left with him in July 1769. This was in the same bag in which it had been presented; and with it was a piece of counterfeit English coin, and a few beads put in at the same time; which shows how well he had taken care of the whole. When they had made an end of putting into the boat the things just mentioned, the Guide, who still remained with them, desired them to decorate three young plantain trees with looking-glasses, nails, medals, beads, &c. This being accordingly done, they landed with these in their hands, and were conducted towards the Chief, through the multitude, they making a lane, as it were, for them to pass through. They were made to sit down a few paces short of the Chief; and their plantains were taken from them, and, one by one, laid before him, as the others had been before them: one was for *Eatoua* (or God); the second for *Earee* (or King); and the third for *Tiyo* (or Friendship). This being done, Captain Cook wanted to go to the King, but was told he would come to him, which he accordingly did, fell upon his neck and embraced him: this latter part was by no means ceremonious; the tears, which trickled plentifully down his venerable cheeks, sufficiently bespoke the language of his heart.

The whole ceremony being over, all the friends of the Chief were introduced to them, to whom they made presents: those made by Captain Cook to the Chief, consisted of the most valuable articles he had; for he regarded him as a father; in return, he gave the Captain a hog, and a quantity of cloth, promising, at the same time, that all his wants should be supplied; and this promise he punctually fulfilled. The good old man carried his kindness so far, as not to fail sending aboard every day, for the Captain's table, the very best of ready dressed fruit and roots, and those in great plenty.

But

p. 164. But though the worthy old Chief was thus favourably disposed towards his visitors, some of his subjects, either through prejudice, or their natural propensity to thieving, were rather inimical to them. On Monday, the 6th of September, as soon as Captain Cook got on shore, he was informed that one of the inhabitants had been very troublesome and insolent: the man being pointed out to him, completely equipped in the war habit, with a club in each hand, and seemingly bent on mischief, he took the weapons from him, and broke them before his eyes; and, with some difficulty, forced him to retire from the place. As they told Captain Cook that he was a Chief, this made him the more suspicious of him, and occasioned him to send for a guard, which, till now, he had thought unnecessary.

p. 164. About the same time, Mr. Spearman, having imprudently gone out alone botanizing, was set upon by two men, who stripped him of every thing he had about him, except his trowsers, and struck him several times with his own hanger; but, happily, did him no harm. As soon as the fellows had accomplished their end, they made off. After which, another of the natives brought a piece of cloth to cover him, and conducted him to the trading place, where a great number of the inhabitants then were: as soon as he was brought there, the natives all fled to a man with the utmost precipitation. Captain Cook went to Oree to complain of the outrage; who, when he heard the whole affair, wept aloud, as did many others.

After the first transports of his grief were over, he began to expostulate with his people, observing to them how well Captain Cook had treated them, both in this and his former voyage, and how base it was in them to commit such actions. He then set out in the boat with Captain Cook to endeavour to recover the lost things; notwithstanding the intreaties of his attendants, who, no sooner saw their beloved Chief in the Captain's power, than, apprehensive of his safety, they set up a great outcry: the grief they shewed was inexpressible; every face was bedewed with tears; they prayed, intreated, nay, even attempted to pull him out of the boat. But all they could do or say availed nothing. His sister, with a spirit equal to that of her royal brother, was the only person who did not oppose his going.

After



After a fruitless search of many hours, they returned to the ship, where the Chief sat at table with them, and made a hearty dinner; his sister, according to custom, eat nothing. In the afternoon Captain Cook liberally rewarded them for the confidence they had placed in him, and then carried them both on shore, where some hundreds of people waited to receive them, many of whom embraced their Chief with tears of joy. All now was peace and gladness; and the natives crowded in, from every part, with hogs, fowls, and fruit, so that two boats were presently filled. During their short stay at the small, but fertile Isle of Huahaine, they procured to both ships not less than three hundred hogs, besides fowls and fruit. p. 167.

On the 7th of September, early in the morning, while the ships were unmooring, Captain Cook went to pay a farewell visit to Oree, taking with him for a present such things as were not only valuable, but useful. On his departure, the good old Chief embraced him with tears in his eyes. The Captain had not been long returned before Oree came himself on board, to inform him that the robbers were taken; and desiring him to go on shore, either to punish them, or see them punished: but this could not be done, as the ships were under sail. The Chief stayed on board till they were full half a league at sea; and then took an affectionate leave. p. 168.

Before they quitted Huahaine, Captain Furneaux agreed to receive on board his ship a young man, named Omai, a native of Ulietea, in which island he had had some property, but had been dispossessed of it by the people of Bolabola. Captain Cook here remarks, that Omai was not a proper sample of the inhabitants of these happy islands, not having any advantage of birth, or acquired rank, nor being eminent in shape, figure, or complexion. For their people of the first rank (from living a more luxurious life, and being less exposed to the heat of the sun) are much fairer, and usually better behaved, and more intelligent, than the middling class of people, among whom Omai is to be ranked. He, however, carried himself with great propriety (having naturally a good understanding, quick parts, and honest principles) during his voyage, and after his arrival in England, where he acquired the esteem and patronage of several of the nobility and gentry, particularly of Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander. p. 169.

The

p. 171. The Chief was no sooner returned to the island, than they made sail for Ulietea; and the next morning, September the 8th, anchored there in seventeen fathoms water. As soon as they arrived, the inhabitants flocked on board, as usual, bringing with them hogs and fruit: the latter they exchanged for nails and beads; the former were refused, as yet, the ships being fully stored with them; several they were, however, obliged to take, as many of the principal people brought off little pigs, pepper, or Eavao-root, and young plaintain trees, and handed them into the ship, or put them into the boats along side, whether they would or no; for if the officers refused to take them on board, they would throw them into the boats. In this manner did these good people welcome Captain Cook and his companions to their country.

p. 172. On the 9th Captain Cook paid a formal visit to Oreo, the Chief of that part of the island, carrying with him the necessary presents. They went through no sort of ceremony at landing, but were at once conducted to him at his house, which stood near the water-side, where he and his friends received them with great cordiality. The Chief expressed great satisfaction at seeing the Captain again, and desired that they might exchange names, which he accordingly agreed to. This appears to be the greatest mark of respect and friendship they can show to a stranger. He then inquired after Tupia, and all the gentlemen, by name, who were with Captain Cook when he first visited the isle. Tupia had been likewise much inquired after at Huahaine; at that place every one asked about him, and concerning the occasion of his death, and, like true philosophers, were perfectly satisfied with the answers they received.

p. 174. Oreo behaved in the most friendly manner during the stay of the ship; purchasing hogs for them on the best terms, and shewing them every civility. On the 12th he ordered an *Heava* to be acted for their entertainment, in which two very pretty young women were the actresses: but this was somewhat different from that before described.

p. 175. The Chief, and some of his friends, paying Captain Cook a pretty early visit, on the 14th, he acquainted the Chief that he would dine with him that day;  
and



and desired he would order two pigs to be dressed after their manner, which he accordingly did. About one o'clock, the Captains, with the officers and gentlemen of both ships, went to partake of them. When they came to the Chief's house, they found the cloth laid: that is, green leaves were strewed thick on the floor; round these they seated themselves. Presently one of the pigs came over Captain Cook's head soufe upon the leaves, and immediately after, the other; both so hot as hardly to be touched; the table was garnished round with hot bread fruit and plantains, and a quantity of cocoa nuts brought for drink. Each man being ready, with his knife in his hand, they fell to without ceremony; and it must be owned, in favour of the cookery, that victuals were never cleaner nor better dressed: for, though the pigs were served up whole, and the one weighed between fifty and sixty pounds, and the other nearly half as much, yet all the parts were equally well done; and eat far sweeter, than if dressed according to any of the English methods. The Chief and his son, and some other of his male friends, eat with the visitors, and pieces were handed to others who sat behind, for they had a vast crowd about them; so that it might be truly said they dined in publick. The Chief never failed to drink his glass of Madeira whenever it came to his turn, not only now, but at all the times he dined on board, without ever being once affected by it. As soon as they had dined, the boat's crew took the remainder; and by them, and those about them, the whole was consumed. When the company rose up, many of the common people rushed in, to pick up the crumbs which had fallen, and for which they searched the leaves very narrowly.

The timorous disposition of these people was conspicuous on many occasions, p. 176. but on none more so than the following: On the 15th Captain Cook and the crew were surprized that none of the natives came off to the ships as usual. On going ashore, he found Oreo's house quite empty; the King and all his family gone, and the whole neighbourhood, in a manner, deserted. All that he could learn from the few that remained was, that several of the inhabitants had been killed, and others wounded, by the guns of the ships. Having at length found out the retreat of the Chief, on his landing near it, he was met with by a venerable old lady, his wife, who threw herself into his arms,

N n

weeping

weeping bitterly, and unable to speak. Taking this lady by the hand, he led her towards her husband, whom he found seated under the shade of his house, surrounded by a vast number of people. As soon as the Chief perceived Captain Cook, he likewise threw his arms about him, and burst into tears; in which he was accompanied by all the women, and some of the men. When an explanation could be got, it was discovered that this alarm arose from two of the ship's boats being absent; Lieutenant Pickersgill having been sent the day before with the Resolution's launch and Adventure's cutter to Otaha to procure bananoes and plantains: the boats not returning the same night, the natives concluded the crews of them had deserted, and, consequently, were apprehensive that their Captain would take some violent measures for recovering them. But being assured that the boats would certainly return safe, their tears immediately subsided, they became cheerful and satisfied, and acknowledged that there was no foundation for the report of any of the natives being killed or wounded.

p. 179. Having now got a large supply of refreshments, Captain Cook left this island  
p. 180. on the 17th of September, and steered to the west. Many young men of the island offered voluntarily to go away with him, but he only thought proper to take one on board: this was a native of Bolabola, named Oedidee, a youth about seventeen or eighteen years of age, nearly related to the great Opoony, Chief of that island.

p. 182. In his observations on these islands, Captain Cook remarks, that the island of  
Otaheite, which, in the year 1767 and 1768, swarmed, as it were, with hogs  
and fowls, was now so ill supplied with these animals, that scarcely any thing  
p. 183. could induce the owners to part with them. The ships were, however, whilst there, abundantly furnished with all the fruits the island produces, except bread fruit, which was not in season: among these they got great plenty of apples, and a fruit like a nectarine, called, by them, aheeya: the latter is common to all the isles: but the apples were only to be got at Otaheite; and were found of infinite use to those in the scurvy: the other islands, that is,  
p. 184. Huaheine, Ulietea, Otaha, and Bolabola, were, on the contrary, in a more flourishing state than when he was there before: possessing not only the necessaries, but many of the luxuries of life, in the greatest profusion.

As



As he had some reason, in his former voyage, to believe, that among their religious customs, human sacrifices were sometimes considered as necessary by the natives of these islands, Captain Cook took some pains to investigate this point: an opportunity, which promised success to his inquiries, offered one day at Matavai: being in a *morai*, (a burying place) and having with him, as he usually had, one of his men, who spoke the language tolerably well, he put the following questions to one of the natives present, who appeared to be an intelligent sensible man. In the *morai* was a *tupapow*, on which lay a corpse and some viands: seeing which, he began with asking him if the plantains, &c. were for *Eatua*? (God) and if they sacrificed to the *Eatua* hogs, dogs, fowls, &c.? to all which the native answered in the affirmative. He then asked if they sacrificed men to the *Eatua*? he answered *taataeno*; that is, they did bad men, having beaten them till they were dead. He then asked if good men were put to death in this manner? his answer was, no, only *taataeno* (bad men). He next asked him if any earees were? he said, they had hogs to give to the *eatua*, and again repeated *taataeno*. Several more questions were put to him, and all his answers seemed to tend to this one point: that men for certain crimes were condemned to be sacrificed to the gods, provided they had not wherewithal to redeem themselves. Captain Cook afterwards learnt from Omia that they offer human sacrifices to the Supreme Being; but that the choice depended on the caprice of the High Priest. p. 184. p. 186.

He likewise enters into a vindication of the women of Otaheite, and the rest of the Society Isles, from the representation that has been given of them, as ready to grant the last favour to any man who will come up to their price: he allows that there are prostitutes here, as well as in other countries; and, perhaps, more in proportion; but denies that the favours of married women, and the better sort of the unmarried, are more easily obtained than in other places. He says, that, by seeing the abandoned mix indiscriminately with those of a different turn, in whose opinion the woman that prostitutes herself does not seem to have committed a crime, strangers are led to think that they are all disposed the same way, and that the only difference is in the price. p. 187.

p. 189. After leaving Ulietea, as before mentioned, Captain Cook steered to the west, inclining to the south, to get clear of the tracks of former navigators, and to get into the latitude of the islands of Middleburg and Amsterdam: in this route they now and then saw some men of war and Tropic birds, and a small sea bird, which is seldom seen but near the shores of the isles; they therefore conjectured that they had passed some land at no great distance.

p. 191. On the 1st of October they made the Island of Middleburg; and after ranging the S. W. side of it, without seeing the least prospect of either anchorage or landing-place, bore away for Amsterdam, which was then in sight. But they had scarcely turned their sails, before they observed the shores of Middleburgh to assume another aspect, seeming to offer both anchorage and landing: upon this they hauled the wind, plied in under the island, and came to an anchor in twenty-five fathom water. Here they were received in the same friendly manner they had been at the Society Islands.

p. 192. Having, by presents, obtained the friendship of a Chief, named Tioony, on going ashore they were conducted to his house, which was situated about three hundred yards from the sea, at the head of a fine lawn, and under the shade of some shaddock trees. The situation was delightful: in front was the sea, and the ships at anchor; behind, and on each side, were plantations, in which were some of the richest productions of nature. The floor of the house was laid with mats, on which they were seated; and the natives, of whom there were great numbers present and about, seated themselves in a circle round them on the outside. Having the bagpipes with them, Captain Cook ordered them to be played; and, in return, the Chief directed three young women to sing a song, which they did with a very good grace; and having each of them received a present, this immediately set all the women in the circle a singing: their songs were musical and harmonious, and no ways harsh or disagreeable.

p. 193. After sitting here some time, they were, at their own request, conducted to one of the adjoining plantations, where the Chief had another house, into which they were introduced. Bananoes and cocoa nuts were set before them to eat, and a bowl of liquor was prepared, in their presence, of the juice of *eava* (or



(or pepper) for them to drink; pieces of the root were first offered them to chew, but as they excused themselves from assisting in the operation, this was performed by others: when sufficiently chewed, it was put into a large wooden bowl, and mixed with water; as soon as it was properly strained for drinking, the natives made cups, by folding green leaves, which held near half a pint, and presented to each of them one of these, filled with the liquor: this liquor they called *ava ava*. Captain Cook was the only person who tasted it: the manner of brewing it having quenched the thirst of every one else. The bowl was, however, soon emptied of its contents, of which both men and women partook. It was observed that they never filled the same cup twice; nor did two persons drink out of the same, each had a fresh cup and fresh liquor. p. 186.

This house was situated at one corner of the plantation, and had an area before it, on which they were seated: the whole was planted round with fruit and other trees, whose spreading branches afforded an agreeable shade, and whose fragrance diffused a pleasing odour through the air. Having signified a desire to see the country, they were conducted by Tioony through several plantations, which were laid out with great judgment, and inclosed with very neat fences, made of reeds: these were all in very good order, and well planted with various fruit trees, roots, &c. The Chief took some pains to let them know that most of them belonged to himself. Near some of the houses, and in the lanes that divided the plantations, were running about some hogs and very large fowls, which were the only domestick animals they saw; and these the natives did not seem willing to part with: which determined Captain Cook to leave this island, and visit that of Amsterdam. p. 194.

Agreeable to this intention, they sailed on the 3d of October, highly delighted with the country they were leaving, and with the obliging behaviour of the inhabitants, who seemed to vie with each other in doing what they thought would give them pleasure. p. 195.

The same day they anchored in Van Diemen's Road, where they met with nearly the same reception as at Middleburg. Having here also expressed a desire to view the country, they were conducted into it by Attago, a Chief, who, p. 197.

p. 198. who, at the first interview, had attached himself to Captain Cook, and, as a  
 p. 199. testimony of his friendship, exchanged names with him. In this progress, they first passed through a lane which led to an open green, where stood one of their houses of worship: it was built on a mount that had been raised by the hand of man, about eighteen feet above the common level, of an oblong form, and inclosed by a wall, or parapet of stone, about three feet in height: from this wall the mount rose with a gentle slope, and was covered with a green turf; on the top of it stood a house of the same shape as the mount, about twenty feet in length, and sixteen broad. As soon as they came before the place, every one seated himself on the green, about fifty or sixty yards from the front of the house. Presently came three elderly men, who seated themselves between the company and the house, and began a speech, or rather a prayer, as it seemed to be from its being wholly directed to the house: this lasted about ten minutes, and then the priests, for such they appeared to be, came and sat down with the rest; when Captain Cook made them presents of such things as he had with him.

p. 199. Having then made signs that they wished to see the premises, Attago went with them, without shewing the least reluctance, and gave them full liberty to examine every part of it. In the front were two stone steps leading to the top of the wall, from this the ascent to the house was easy, round which was a fine gravel walk. The house was built in all respects like to their common dwelling houses; that is, with posts and rafters, and covered with palm thatch; the eaves came down within three feet of the ground, which space was filled up with strong matting, made of palm leaves, as a wall: the floor of the house was laid with fine gravel, except in the middle, where there was an oblong square of blue pebbles, raised about six inches higher than the floor: at one corner of the house stood an image, rudely carved in wood, and on one side lay another, each about two feet in length. Captain Cook, as he wished to avoid offending either the natives, or their God, did not so much as touch the images, but asked Attago, as well as he was able, if they were *Eatuas*, or Gods. Whether the Chief understood him or no, he could not say, but as  
 p. 200. he turned them over and over in as rough a manner as he would have done any other log of wood, the Captain was convinced from it, that they were not placed



placed there as representatives of the Divinity. Before they quitted the house, they thought it necessary to make an offering at the altar: accordingly, they laid down upon the blue pebbles, some medals, nails, and several other things; but this was no sooner done, than Attago took them up, and put them in his pocket. Behind the mount stood a grove, composed of several sorts of trees; among others of the etoa tree, as it is called at Otaheite, of which are made clubs, &c. and likewise a kind of low palm, which is very common in the northern parts of New Holland.

After they had done examining this place of worship, which, in the language p. 201. of the natives, is called A-fia-tou-ca, they struck into a road leading into the country: this road, which was about sixteen feet broad, and as level as a bowling-green, seemed to be a very publick one; there being many other roads, from different parts, leading into it, all inclosed, on each side, with neat fences made of reeds, and shaded from the scorching sun by fruit trees. The Europeans thought themselves transported into the most fertile plains in Europe. There was not an inch of waste ground; the roads occupied no more space than was absolutely necessary; the fences did not take up above four inches each; and even this was not wholly lost, for in many were planted some useful trees or plants: it was every where the same; change of place altered not the scene. Nature, assisted by a little art, no where appears in more splendour than at this isle. In these delightful walks they met a number of people, some travelling down to the ships with their burdens of fruit, and others returning back empty: these all gave the strangers the road, by turning either to the right or left, and sitting down or standing with their backs to the fences, till they had passed; at several of the cross roads, or at the meeting of two or more roads, were generally Afiatoucas. In a boat-house, near the shore, was p. 203. shewn them a fine large double canoe, not yet launched, belonging to an old Chief.

These people gave many proofs of their being no less inclined to thieving, p. 205. nor less dexterous at it, than those islanders the English had lately left. On the 5th of October a man got into the Master's cabin, through the outside scuttle, and took away some books and other things: and, being pursued by a boat,

a boat, he dived under her, and unshipped the rudder, so that she became ungovernable, by which means he escaped; some other very daring thefts were committed at the landing-place. One fellow took a seaman's jacket out of the boat, and carried it off, in spite of all that the crew in her could do: till he was fired at by them, he would not part with it. The rest of the natives present, who were very numerous, took very little notice of the whole transaction; nor were they the least alarmed when the man was fired at.

p. 206.

It appeared that there were different degrees of Chiefs in this island, from the following circumstance: The day before Captain Cook intended to sail, on going ashore, he was informed that a much greater man than any they had yet seen, was come to pay them a visit. More than ordinary respect was paid him by the natives; some of whom, when they approached him, fell on their faces, and put their head between their feet; and no one durst pass him without permission. Captain Cook found this great man seated near the landing-place, with so much fullen and stupid gravity, that, notwithstanding what had been told him, he took him for an idiot, whom the people, from some superstitious notions, were ready to worship. He saluted and spoke to him: but the Chief neither answered, nor took the least notice of him, nor did he alter a single feature in his countenance. This confirmed Captain Cook in his opinion; and he was just going to leave him, when one of the natives, an intelligent youth, undeceived him so far, as to leave no room to doubt that he was the King, or principal man, in the island. He accordingly made him suitable presents, which the Chief received, or, rather, suffered to be put upon him, and laid by him, without losing a bit of his gravity, speaking one word, or turning his head either to the right or left; but sitting the whole time like a statue. In this situation the Captain left him, and returned on board. He had not long been on board before word was brought him that a quantity of provisions had come from this Chief: a boat was sent to bring it from the shore; and it was found to consist of twenty baskets of roasted bananoes, four bread, and yams, with a roasted pig, of about twenty pounds weight. When they were brought to the water-side, the bearers said it was a present from the *Areeke*, that is, the King of the island, to the *Areeke* of the ship. After this, the dignity of this fullen Chief, whose name was Kohaghee-too-Fallangou, was not to be doubted.

These



These islands were first discovered by Captain Tasman, in 1643, and by him called Amsterdam and Middleburg: but the former is called, by the natives, Ton-ga-tabu, and the latter Ea-oo-wee. They are situated between the latitude of  $21^{\circ} 29'$  and  $21^{\circ} 3'$  south, and between the longitude of  $174^{\circ} 40'$  and  $175^{\circ} 15'$  west, deduced from observations made on the spot. p. 211.

Middleburg, or Eaoowee, which is the southernmost, is about ten leagues in circuit: the skirts of this island are mostly taken up in the plantations; but the interior parts are but little cultivated, though very fit for cultivation: however, the want of it adds greatly to the beauty of the isle; for here are agreeably dispersed groves of cocoa nut and other trees; lawns, covered with thick grass; here and there plantations; and paths leading to every part of the island; all in such beautiful disorder, as greatly enlivens the prospect. p. 211.

The anchorage, which Captain Cook named English Road, from his being the first that anchored there, is on the N. W. side.

The island of Amsterdam, or Tongotabu, is wholly laid out in plantations, stocked with the richest productions of nature, such as bread-fruit, cocoa nut trees, plantains, bananoes, shaddocks, yams, and some other roots, sugar cane, and the fruit like a nectarine before mentioned. The chief difference between this island and Middleburg is, that only a part of the latter is cultivated; whereas the whole of the former is. In Amsterdam the lanes and roads for travelling are laid out in so judicious a manner, as to open a free and easy communication from one part of the island to the other. Here are no towns or villages; most of the houses are built in the plantations, with no other order than what convenience requires: they are nearly constructed like those in the other isles, but with little areas before each of them, planted round with trees and shrubs. Their household furniture consists of a few wooden platters, cocoa nut shells, and some neat wooden pillows, shaped like four footed stools or forms. Their common clothing, with the addition of a mat, serves them for bedding. p. 213.

p. 214. Captain Cook saw no other domestick animals among them, but hogs and fowls: the former are of the same sort as those at the other isles in this sea; but the latter are far superior, being as large as any in Europe, and their flesh equally good, if not better. He saw neither dogs nor rats here, nor any wild quadrupeds, except small lizards. The land birds are pigeons, turtle doves, parrots, parroquets, owls, bald cootes, with a blue plumage, a variety of small birds; and large bats in abundance. The produce of the sea he knows little of, but thinks it probable the same fish are found here as at the other isles. Their fishing instruments are the same: that is, hooks made of mother of pearl, gigs, with two, three, or more prongs, and nets made of very fine thread, with the meshes wrought exactly like ours.

p. 215. But nothing can be a more demonstrative evidence of the ingenuity of these people, than the construction and make of their canoes, which, in point of neatness and workmanship, exceed every thing of the kind Captain Cook saw in this sea: they are of two kinds, double and single; the single ones are from  
p. 216. twenty to thirty feet long, and about twenty inches broad in the middle; the double ones are about sixty or seventy feet long, and four or five feet broad in the middle: both sorts are neatly ornamented.

p. 217. Both men and women are of a common size with Europeans; their colour is that of a lightish copper, and more uniformly so than amongst the inhabitants of Otaheite and the Society Isles; they have a good shape, and regular features; and are active, brisk, and lively: the women, in particular, are extremely merry and chearful: their hair, in general, is black, but more especially that of the  
p. 218. female sex: the men cut or shave their beards quite close, which operation is performed with two shells; they have fine eyes; and in general good teeth, even to an advanced age. The custom of *tattowing*, or puncturing the skin, prevails among them. The dress of both sexes consists of a piece of cloth, or matting, wrapped round the waist, and hanging down below the knees; from the waist, upwards, they are generally naked; their ornaments are amulets, necklaces,  
p. 219. and bracelets of bones, shells, and beads of mother of pearl, tortoiseshell, &c. which are worn by both sexes.

Their



Their musical instruments are of two sorts: one a large flute, made of a piece of bamboo, which they fill with their noses, as at Otaheite (vide Journal, plate 9); the other composed of ten or eleven small reeds of unequal lengths, bound together, side by side, as the Doric pipe of the ancients is said to have been: into these they blow with their mouth. Their common method of saluting each other is by touching or meeting noses, as is done in New Zealand. Their military weapons are clubs and spears, made of a hard wood, also bows and arrows. They have a singular custom of putting every thing you give them to their heads, by way of thanks; and a still more singular one was observed to prevail among them, which was, that the greater part of the people, of every rank, age, and sex, had lost one or both of their little fingers; the reason of this mutilation could not be discovered.

Their government appears to resemble that of Otaheite, and consists in a King, or great Chief, who is called here Areeke, with other Chiefs under him, who are Lords of certain districts, and, perhaps, sole proprietors; to whom the people seem to pay great obedience. Besides these, there seemed to be a third sort, to whom great submission was likewise shewn. Captain Cook is of opinion, that all the land on Tongatabu is private property; and that some are servants or slaves to those who are possessed of it. As to their religion he could form no idea of it: that they professed some kind or other, is certain, for the buildings called Afiatoucas, before mentioned, are undoubtedly set apart for this purpose. It cannot be supposed that he could acquire any great insight into their civil and religious policy in so short a time as four or five days, especially as he and his people understood but little of their language: even the two islanders he had on board could not at first understand them: they, however, at length discovered that their language was nearly the same as that spoken at Otaheite and the Society Isles, only in a different dialect.

On the 7th of October they left the Island of Amsterdam, and made sail to the southward: it being Captain Cook's intention to proceed directly to Queen Charlotte's Sound, in New Zealand, and having there taken in wood and water, to go on farther discoveries to the south and east.

- p. 226. At five o'clock, A. M. of the 21st, they made the land of New Zealand, and he being desirous of having some intercourse with the natives as far north as possible, in order to leave with them some hogs, fowls, roots, &c. which he had provided for that purpose, as he apprehended they were more civilized than those at Queen Charlotte's Sound; he made for Cape Kidnappers, where he
- p. 229. effected his purpose. After this he proceeded towards the Sound, and, having got within sight of the intended port on the 25th, was driven off from the land by a furious storm.
- p. 231. On the 29th, the wind being subsided, it blew a fresh gale, with which the Resolution stretched to the S. W. the Adventure being in company: she was seen until midnight, at which time she was two or three miles astern; but presently after she disappeared; nor was she to be seen at day light. It was supposed she had tacked and stood to the N. E. by which manœuvre the Resolution lost sight of her. Captain Cook, however, continued his route, and,
- p. 234. on Wednesday, the 3d of November, anchored in Ship Cove, where, to his great disappointment, he did not find the Adventure, as he hoped to do.
- p. 247. Having remained here till the 25th without hearing any thing of her, he gave up every expectation of joining her at this place, and determined to proceed on his voyage, but not without searching every likely part of the coast for
- p. 249. her. He accordingly sailed on that day; and on the 26th doubled Cape
- p. 250. Palliser, firing guns whenever they approached the shore. Every one, however, being now of opinion that she could neither be stranded on the coast, nor be in any of the harbours thereof, Captain Cook gave over looking for her, and all thoughts of seeing her any more during the voyage, as no rendezvous was fixed upon after leaving New Zealand.
- p. 250. Nevertheless, this did not discourage him from fully exploring the southern parts of the Pacific Ocean: in doing which, he intended to employ the whole of the ensuing season. Nor did he find his officers or men in the least discouraged by the loss of their consort.



To accompany him, in his various meanders, through this unexplored and inclement ocean during his tedious researches, would be equally tiresome to the reader, as it would be only a repetition of similar circumstances to those already related: suffice it, therefore, to say, that from the 26th of November, 1773, p. 251. to March the 11th, 1774, he ploughed this extensive deep, going as far south as 67° 31', amidst inexpressible difficulties, surrounded by ice, and driven about p. 256. by boisterous winds, without seeing any thing that could induce him to think p. 264. they were ever in the neighbourhood of any land.

On the 25th of February, 1774, Captain Cook was taken ill of the bilious p. 274. cholic, which was so violent as to confine him to his bed: it was several days before the most dangerous symptoms of the disorder were removed; but at length it yielded to the skill and care of the surgeon, to which, under God, the preservation of so valuable a life was owing. When he began to recover, p. 275. a favourite dog, belonging to Mr. Forster, fell a sacrifice to the Captain's tender stomach. They had no other fresh meat whatever on board; and he could eat of this flesh, as well as broth made of it, when he could taste nothing else: thus he received nourishment and strength from food which would have made most people in Europe sick; so true it is, he remarks, that necessity is governed by no law.

On the 11th of March land was seen, bearing west, to which, having stretched p. 276. in, on the 12th, by the help of the glass, they discerned people, and some of those Colossal statues or idols mentioned by the authors of Roggewin's Voyage: this navigator sailed from the Texel on the 21st of August, 1721; having under his command three ships fitted out by the Dutch to make discoveries in the South Pacifick Ocean, where he discovered this island, which he named Easter Island, and afterwards several others. Introduc. p. xvi.

Having anchored near a sandy beach, about a mile from the shore, the next day a canoe, conducted by two men, came off, who brought with them a bunch of plantains, which, being drawn into the ship by a rope, they returned ashore: this gave the crew a favourable opinion of the islanders, and inspired them with hopes of getting some refreshment, of which they were in great want. p. 277.

On

- p. 278. On the 14th Captain Cook went ashore, accompanied by several of the gentlemen, and landed on the Sandy Beach, where some hundreds of the natives were assembled, and who were so impatient to see them, that some of them swam off to meet the boats. After distributing a few trinkets among them, Captain Cook made signs for something to eat; on which they brought down a few potatoes, plantains, and sugar canes, and exchanged them for nails, looking glasses, and pieces of cloth. They soon found that these people were as expert thieves, and as tricking in their exchanges, as any they had met with.
- p. 279.
- p. 280. Some of the officers (Captain Cook's health not yet permitting) made an excursion into the country, on the 15th, to examine into the nature and produce of it; they were accompanied by several of the gentlemen, and attended by
- p. 281. a party of men: when they set out, they were followed by a great crowd of the natives, who pressed much upon them: but they had not proceeded far, before a middle aged man, punctured from head to foot, and his face painted with a sort of white pigment, appeared with a spear in his hand, and walked along side of them, making signs to his countrymen to keep at a distance, and not molest the strangers. When he had pretty well affected this, he hoisted a piece of white cloth on his spear, placed himself in the front, and led the way with this ensign of peace.
- p. 281. The greatest part of the country had but a very barren appearance; there were, however, several large tracks planted with potatoes and some plantain walks; but they saw no fruit on any of the trees. On the east side, near the sea, they met with three platforms of stone work, or rather the ruins of them: on each had stood four of those large statues seen by Roggewin; some of which were now fallen down, and most of them defaced: they measured one, and found it to be fifteen feet in length, and six feet broad over the shoulders. Each statue had on its head a large cylindric stone, of a red colour, wrought perfectly round, fifty-two inches high, and sixty-six in diameter. The east side of the island appears to be full of these statues, and some of them of much larger dimensions.



As they passed along they observed, on a hill, a number of people collected together, some of whom had spears in their hands; but, on being called out to by their countrymen, they dispersed, except a few, amongst whom was one seemingly of some note: he was a stout, well made man, with a fine open countenance; his face was painted; his body punctured; and he wore a better *ba-hou*, or cloth, than the rest. He saluted them, as he came up, by stretching out his arms, with both hands clinched, lifting them over his head, opening them wide, and then letting them fall gradually down by his sides. To this man, whom the party understood to be the Chief of the island, their other friend gave his white flag; and he delivered it to another, who carried it before them the remainder of the day. p. 283.

They here met with a well, the only one they saw, whose water was perfectly fresh, being considerably above the level of the sea: but it was dirty, owing to the filthiness or cleanliness (call it which you will) of the natives, who never go to drink without washing themselves all over as soon as they have done; and if ever so many of them are together, the first leaps right into the middle of the hole, drinks, and washes himself without the least ceremony; after which another takes his place, and does the same. p. 283.

Captain Cook observes that no nation need contend for the honour of the discovery of Easter Island, as there can be but few places which afford less convenience for shipping than it does: here is no safe anchorage; no wood for fuel; nor any fresh water worth taking aboard. Nature has been exceedingly sparing of her favours to this spot. The produce is sweet potatoes, yams, gourds, plantains, and sugar canes, all pretty good, the potatoes especially. They have a few tame fowls, such as cocks and hens, small but well tasted; they have also rats, which, it seems, they eat; land birds there are scarcely any, and sea birds but few; neither did the sea appear to abound with fish. p. 288.

The inhabitants do not seem to exceed six or seven hundred souls; and about two-thirds of those they saw were males. In colour, features, and language, they bear such affinity to the people of the more western isles, that no one can doubt their having had the same origin. In general the natives of this island are p. 289.  
p. 290.

are a slender race, most of them under six feet in height; they are brisk and active, have good features, and not disagreeable countenances; are friendly and hospitable to strangers, but, as said before, very much addicted to pilfering. Tatowing is much used here; the men from head to foot, the women but a little: red and white paint is considered as an ornament by both sexes.

p. 290. Their clothing is a piece or two of quilted cloth, about six feet by four, or a mat: one piece wrapped round their loins, and another over their shoulders, make a complete dress; their hair, in general, is black, the women wear it long, and sometimes tied up on the crown of the head; but the men wear it and their beards cut short. As harmless and friendly as these people seem to be, they are not without offensive weapons, such as short wooden clubs and spears.

p. 292. Their houses are low miserable huts: the largest seen was about sixty feet long, eight or nine high in the middle, and three or four at each end. They saw no household utensils amongst them, except gourds, and these but very few. Not more than three or four canoes were seen on the whole island, and these very mean.

p. 294. Captain Cook farther says, he has no doubt but that all the plantations here, also, are private property, and that there are, as at Otaheite, and the other islands, Chiefs (Areekes) to whom these plantations belong. But of the power or authority of these Chiefs, or of the government of the people, he confesses himself quite ignorant. Nor is he better acquainted with their religion. The gigantic statues, before mentioned, are not, in his opinion, looked upon as idols by the inhabitants, whatever they might have been at the time the Dutch discovered the island: on the contrary, he rather supposes the places where they are fixed to be burial places for certain tribes or families.

p. 288. Such is the produce and state of Easter Island, or Davis's Land, which is situated in latitude  $27^{\circ} 5' 30''$  south, longitude  $109^{\circ} 46' 20''$  west; it is about ten or twelve leagues in circuit; has a hilly and strong surface, and an iron-bound shore.

inding



Finding the island likely to afford so scanty a supply of what they stood in need of, Captain Cook determined not to make any longer stay in it, and accordingly set sail on the 16th, steering N. N. W. intending to touch at the Marquesas, if he met with nothing before he got there. On the 7th of April they fell in with these islands, four of which were discovered by Mendana, a Spanish navigator, in 1595: the first isle, being a new discovery, they named it Hood's Island, after the young gentleman who first saw it; the second was that of St. Pedro; the third, La Dominica; the fourth, St. Christina; and the fifth, La Magdalena. In the evening they anchored in Mendana's Port, at the entrance of a bay, in the Island of St. Christina, in thirty-four fathom water, a fine sandy bottom.

The natives immediately put off to the ship, as usual, with whom they trafficked for pigs, bread, fruit, and fish, and found them as arrant thieves as any of the inhabitants of the Pacifick Ocean. At first they carried on this trade both on board and ashore, with great success; so that on the 10th the whole crew enjoyed a meal of fresh meat. But the next morning they found the scene quite changed. The nails and spikes that purchased a pig the evening before, and which the natives were mad after, were now despised: the reason was, several of the young gentlemen having landed the preceding day, had given away, in exchange, various articles which the people had not seen before, and which took with them more than nails, or more useful iron tools. But what ruined their market most, was, one of them giving for a pig a very large quantity of red feathers he had got at Amsterdam, which article they did not know was held in such estimation here.

Their fine prospect of getting a plentiful supply of refreshments from these people being thus frustrated, and as they had not wherewith to purchase them; at the same time, finding that these islands were not very convenient for taking in wood and water, nor for giving the ship the necessary repairs she wanted, Captain Cook resolved forthwith to leave them, and make once more for the Society Isles; endeavouring, in the passage, to fall in with some of those discovered by former navigators, particularly the Dutch.

- p. 306. The Marquesas consist of five islands, as already mentioned, and are situated  
 p. 308. in about  $9^{\circ} 55'$  south latitude, and  $139^{\circ} 8'$  west longitude. The trees, plants, and other productions of them, so far as a knowledge could be obtained, are nearly the same as those at Otaheite and the adjacent isles. The inhabitants, collectively, are without exception the finest race of people in this sea: for fine shape and regular features, they, perhaps, surpass all other nations; nevertheless, the affinity of their language to that spoken at the Society Isles shows that they are of the same extraction. The men are punctured, or curiously *tattooed* from head to foot: this makes them look dark; but the women, who are but little punctured, are as fair as some Europeans; and so are the youths and young children, who are not punctured at all. The men, in general, are tall: that is, about five feet ten inches, or six feet; and of a proper medium in bulk; their hair, like ours, is of various colours; but they saw none red; some have it long, but the general custom is to wear it short, except a bunch on each side of the crown, which they tie in a knot. In most other respects, as in their dress, dwellings, food, weapons, &c. they are nearly similar to the Otaheiteans.
- p. 312. Hogs were the only quadrupeds they saw, and cocks and hens the only tame fowls. However, the woods seemed to abound with small birds of very beautiful plumage, and fine notes.
- p. 305. On Monday the 11th of April they weighed, and passing the island of La  
 p. 312. Dominica, steered to the south. Nothing particular happened till the 17th, when they fell in with a string of low islets, connected together by a reef of coral rocks: as they coasted along, the natives appeared in several places armed with long spears and clubs; a boat being sent on shore, a few only of them came to the beach, but many appeared in the skirts of the woods, with spears in their hands. The presents made them were received with coolness; which plainly showed the visit was not agreeable to them. Forty or fifty more, all armed, joining their countrymen on the beach, the commanding officer of the boat thought it prudent to embark: some were for pushing them off, others for detaining them; but, at last, they suffered them to depart at their leisure. The boat brought on board five dogs, which seemed to be in plenty there; and  
 p. 314. also some cocoa nuts, the only fruit they saw. This island, which is called by the natives Tiookea, was discovered and visited by Commodore Byron in 1764;  
 it



it lies in latitude  $14^{\circ} 27' 30''$  south, longitude  $144^{\circ} 56'$  west. The inhabitants, and perhaps those of the low islands, are of a much darker colour than those of the higher islands, and seem to be of a more ferine disposition.

After passing several more of these low islands, with which the Pacific Ocean from latitude  $20^{\circ}$  down to  $14^{\circ}$  abounds, they re-entered Mataiva Bay, in the island of Otaheite, on Friday the 22d of April. p. 317.

Captain Cook, at his first arrival, intended staying no longer at this place than was necessary for Mr. Wale's to regulate the watch, and make some observations, thinking he should meet with no better success in procuring fresh provisions, than he did the last time he was here; but the friendly reception he met with, and a few excursions to the plains of Matavai and Oparee, convinced him that he had formed a wrong judgment. He found at these two places, built and building, a great number of large canoes, and houses of every kind; people living in spacious habitations, who had not a place to shelter themselves in eight months before; several large hogs about each house; and every sign of a rising state. Judging, from these favourable circumstances, that they should not mend themselves by removing to another island, he resolved to make so long a stay as should be necessary for repairing the ship and recruiting the stores. p. 318.

Going ashore on the 26th, they observed a number of large canoes in motion; but were surprized, when they arrived, to see upwards of three hundred ranged in order, for some distance, along the beach, all completely equipped, and manned, besides a vast number of armed men upon the shore. So unexpected an armament collected together in the space of one night gave rise to various conjectures. They landed, however, in the midst of them, and were received by a vast multitude, many of whom were under arms, and many not: the cry of the latter was *Tiyo no otoo*, and that of the former *Tiyo no towba*; to which both parties added *Tiyo no tootee*. p. 319.

Captain Cook and his officers afterwards got into their boat to take a view of this grand fleet. The vessels of war consisted of one hundred and sixty large p. 320.

P. 321. double canoes, very well equipped, manned, and armed. The Chiefs, and all those on the fighting stages, were dressed in their war habits: that is, a vast quantity of cloth turbans, breast-plates, and helmets. The vessels were decorated with flags, streamers, &c. so that the whole made a grand and noble appearance, such as they had never seen before in this sea, and what no one would have expected. Their instruments of war were clubs, spears, and stones. The vessels were ranged close along side of each other, with their heads ashore, and their sterns to the sea; the Admiral's vessel being nearly in the centre. Besides the vessels of war, there were one hundred and seventy sail of smaller double canoes, all with a small house upon them, and rigged with mast and sail, which the war canoes had not. These, they judged, were designed for transports, victuallers, &c. for in the war canoes were no sort of provisions whatever. In these three hundred and thirty vessels, there could be no less than seven thousand seven hundred and sixty men: a number which appears incredible, especially as they belonged to two districts only.

P. 322. This fleet was part of an armament intended to go against the Island of Eimeo, whose Chief had thrown off the yoke of Otaheite, and assumed an independency. It was commanded by Towha, whose name had been resounded, in conjunction with the King's, on their first landing, a brave, sensible, and intelligent Chief. Five general officers were to command in this expedition; of which number Otoo was one, who, notwithstanding he was their King, (if their names were mentioned in order, according to the posts they held) was only the third in command: this, however, may arise from his being a young man, and consequently without sufficient experience to command such an undertaking. The expedition, they were told, was to take place in five days after the departure of the Resolution, which was now fixed; and Waheatoua, King of Tiarabou, was to send a fleet to join that of Otoo, to assist him in reducing to obedience the Chief of Eimeo.

P. 348. Captain Cook could not exactly learn the number of men that were to be employed on this expedition, but, according to the most moderate calculation, nine thousand would be required to man the canoes of the four divisions he saw; and, if it be supposed that every district in the island, of which there are forty-three,

P. 349.



three, raised and equipped a proportionable number, the whole island can raise and equip one thousand seven hundred and twenty war canoes, and sixty-eight thousand able men, allowing forty to each canoe: and as these cannot amount to above one-third part of the number of both sexes, children included, the whole island cannot contain less than two hundred and four thousand inhabitants. A number, he remarks, which, at first sight, exceeded his belief; but, when he reflected on the vast swarms which appeared wherever they came, he was convinced that this estimate is tolerably exact. There cannot be a greater proof of the richness and fertility of Otaheite, which is not forty leagues in circuit, than its supporting such a number of inhabitants.

Captain Cook further observes, that, notwithstanding when he was last here, p. 346. he conceived but an unfavourable opinion of Otoo's talents, the improvements made since in the island convinced him of his mistake, and proved that he must be a man of good parts. The improvements they found on the plains of Oparree and Matavai, have been already mentioned, the same were observed in every other part into which they came: that so many large canoes and houses should be built in so short a space as eight months, appeared almost incredible. The iron tools which they had got from the English, and other nations, who have lately touched at the isle, had no doubt accelerated the work, and that there is no want of hands has been seen.

The number of hogs was another thing that excited their wonder. Probably these animals were not so scarce when they were here before, as they imagined; and not choosing to part with any, the natives had conveyed them out of their sight. Be that as it may, they now not only got as many as they could consume during their stay, but some to take to sea with them. Having likewise laid in a stock of fruit and other necessaries, of which now and then was a profusion, they left Otaheite, and anchored, on the 15th of May, in O'Wharre p. 354. Harbour, in the Island of Huaheine.

A few incidents only that happened during their revisiting the Society Islands, in addition to those already related, will be inserted. They traded here as usual, but found hogs much scarcer than when at this place before. Bread- p. 362. fruit,

fruit, cocoa nuts, &c. they, however, were plentifully supplied with. Robberies were not less frequent.

p. 356. May the 17th, in the evening, some of the officers and gentlemen went to a dramatic entertainment, which seemed to prove that these exhibitions usually contain some moral, and were intended for instruction, as well as amusement. The piece represented a girl as running away with some of the Resolution's people from Otaheite. This, in some degree, was true: as a young woman had taken her passage with them to go to Ulietea, and happened now to be present at the representation of her own adventure; which had such an effect upon her, (a proof that the actors possessed some dramatic powers) that it was with difficulty the gentlemen could prevail upon her to see the play out, or to refrain from tears whilst it was acting. The piece concluded with the reception she was supposed to meet with from her friends at her return, which was not a very favourable one; and was, without doubt, intended at once as a satire on the girl, and to discourage others from following her steps. The getting up an extempore entertainment of this nature in so short a time, shows that the natives are not wanting in fertility of genius.

p. 358. Day light no sooner broke upon them, on the 21st, than they saw upwards of sixty canoes under sail, and steering over for Ulietea. On enquiring the reason, they were told that the people in them were Eareeoies, and were going to visit their brethren in the neighbouring islands. These men may be almost compared to Free-Masons, as they assist each other when need requires, and seem to have some customs among them, which they either will not, or cannot explain. Oedidee informed Captain Cook that he was one of the fraternity, and Tupia had done the same: he was not, however, able to get any tolerable idea of this set of men from either of them.

p. 364. On the 23d of May they left the Island of Huaheine, and the next day arrived at Ulietea. Going ashore to pay the Chief a visit, and make the customary present, at their first entering his house, they were met by four or five old women, weeping and lamenting, as it were, most bitterly, and, at the same time, cutting their heads with instruments made of sharks teeth, till the blood ran plentifully  
down



down their faces and on their shoulders. What added to this disagreeable scene was, that the party were obliged to submit to the embraces of these old hags, and by that means were all besmeared with blood. This ceremony (for it was merely such) being over, the women went out, washed themselves, and immediately after appeared as chearful as any of the company.

In this island they saw another singular dramatic entertainment. It was called *Mididdij Harramij*, which signifies *the child is coming*. It concluded with the representation of a woman in labour, acted by a set of great brawny fellows, one of whom, at last, brought forth a strapping boy, about six feet high, who ran about the stage, dragging after him a large wisp of straw, which hung by a string from his middle: the moment the actors got hold of the fellow who represented the child, they flattened or pressed his nose. From this they judged that these people do so by their children when born, and may be the reason why they all, in general, have flat noses. p. 366.

Besides the plays which were performed at the Chiefs, there were a set of strolling players in the neighbourhood, who seem to have acted with a view of profit. Captain Cook observes, that he generally appeared at Oreo's theatre towards the close of the play, and twice at the other, in order to give his mite to the actors. The only actresses at the Chief's theatre was his daughter, a pretty brown girl, at whose shrine, on these occasions, many offerings were made by her numerous votaries: and these, he believes, was one great inducement to her father's giving them these entertainments so often. p. 368.

June the 2d they received intelligence, that three days before, two ships had arrived at Huaheine. The same report said, that one was commanded by Mr. Banks, and the other by Captain Furneaux. The man who brought the account declared, that he was made drunk on board one of them, and described the persons of Mr. Banks and Captain Furneaux so well, that Captain Cook entertained not the least doubt of the truth; and began to consider about sending a boat over to Huaheine, when a man happened to come on board who denied the whole, saying, it was a *wà warre*, a lie. Nor could they, after the strictest enquiry, find there was the least foundation for the intelligence. p. 372.

On

- P. 373. On the 4th, every thing being prepared for sailing, Oreo, the Chief, and his whole family, came on board to take their last farewell: this they did in the most affectionate manner; and were continually importuning Captain Cook to return; the Chief, his wife, and daughter, but especially the two latter, scarcely ever ceased weeping. Oreo's last request was for him to return, and when he saw he could not obtain that promise, he asked the name of his
- P. 374. Marai (burying-place). As strange a question as this was, the Captain hesitated not a moment to tell him, Stepney, the parish in which he lived when in London; so ignorant are mortals of that event: he was made to repeat the word several times over, till they could pronounce it: then, *Stepney Marai no Toote* was echoed through an hundred mouths at once. Mr. Forster having been asked the same question by one of the natives ashore, returned a different, and, indeed, a more proper answer, (as the fate of the very person who occasioned the observation has since confirmed) by saying, that no man who used the sea could say where he should be buried. All the great families of these islands having burial places of their own, which go with the estate to the next heir, they concluded other nations had the same; and wishing to remember their visitors (for whom they seemed to entertain so cordial a regard) beyond the period of their lives; on being told they should see them no more, wanted to know the exact spot where they were to mingle with their parent dust.
- P. 374. Oedidee, whom they had taken up here when they touched at this island, during the former part of their present voyage, now left them. Nothing but the fear of never being able to return to his native country, could have torn him from them; and he took his leave with a regret fully demonstrative of the esteem he bore to them.
- P. 375. When Captain Cook first came to these islands, he thought of visiting Bolabola, which Tupia had represented in a favourable light; but as he had now got on board a plentiful supply of all manner of refreshments, and the route he had in view allowing him no time to spare, he laid this design aside, and directed his course to the west, taking his final leave of these happy isles, on which benevolent nature has spread her luxuriant sweets with a lavish hand; and the inhabitants of which, copying the bounty of nature, are equally liberal, contributing plentifully and chearfully to the wants of navigators.

Having



Having left Ulietea on the 4th of June; on the 6th they fell in with Howe Vol. II.  
Island, discovered by Captain Wallis in 1767, which lies in latitude  $16^{\circ} 46'$  P. 1.  
south, longitude  $154^{\circ} 8'$  west. On the 16th they discovered another island in  
latitude  $18^{\circ} 4'$  south, longitude  $163^{\circ} 10'$  west, to which they gave the name of P. 2.  
Palmerston Island, in honour of Lord Palmerston. And on the 20th, another  
in latitude  $19^{\circ} 1'$  south, longitude  $169^{\circ} 37'$  west, which the hostile conduct of  
the natives, on their landing, and their ferocious aspect, occasioned their P. 5.  
naming Savage Island.

After passing several other islands, they arrived on the 26th at Anamocka or P. 9.  
Rotterdam, one of the isles discovered by Tasman in 1642. Here they procured  
some roots, fruits, and a few fowls, with some fresh water. They found the  
inhabitants very courteous and affable; but such great thieves, that the prin-  
cipal part of the incidents that happened during the stay of the Resolution,  
arose from the employment they gave her people on these occasions. This  
island, which is of a triangular form, lies in latitude  $20^{\circ} 15'$  south, longitude P. 19.  
 $174^{\circ} 31'$  west. The inhabitants, productions, &c. of it are the same as those P. 20.  
of Amsterdam, before described: these two, with Middleburg and Pylstart, P. 19.  
make a group, containing about three degrees of latitude, and two of longitude.  
Captain Cook named them the Friendly Isles, or Archipelago, as the firm alliance  
and friendship which seems to subsist among their inhabitants, and their cour-  
teous behaviour to strangers, entitles them to that denomination.

Captain Cook observed, that these people seem to be much affected with the P. 20.  
leprosy, or some scrophulous disorder: it breaks out in the face more than any  
other part of the body: he saw several whose faces were ruined by it, and their  
noses quite gone.

From the Friendly Isles they proceeded west, and, after having passed several P. 28.  
others, they arrived on the 21st of July at the Island of Mallicollo, which lies  
in latitude  $16^{\circ} 25'$  south, longitude  $167^{\circ} 57'$  east. The harbour, which is situated  
the N. E. side of the island, they named Port Sandwich. P. 37.

p. 36. The people of Mallicollo seem to be a quite different nation from any they had met with, and speak a different language. The country appears to be fertile,  
 p. 34. but the fruits not so good as those at the Society and Friendly Isles. The inhabitants are, in general, the most ugly, ill proportioned people they had ever seen, and in every respect different from all others they had visited in this sea. They are a very dark coloured, and rather diminutive race, with long heads, flat faces, and monkey countenances; their hair, which is mostly black or brown, is short and curly, but not quite so soft and woolly as that of a negro. But what adds most to their deformity, is a belt or cord which they wear round the waist, and tie so tight over the belly, that the shape of their bodies is not unlike that of an over-grown pismire; the men go quite naked,  
 p. 35. except a piece of cloth or leaf used as a wrapper. The women, of whom they saw but few, are not less ugly than the men: their heads, faces, and shoulders are painted red; they wear a kind of petticoat; and some of them had something over their shoulders like a bag, in which they carry their children; their ornaments are ear-rings made of tortoiseshell and bracelets. Their weapons are clubs, spears, and bows and arrows: the two former are made of hard or iron  
 p. 31. wood. Their habitations are something like those of the other islands, rather low, and covered with palm thatch.

p. 31. In one particular, however, they varied much from the neighbouring islanders, that is, in their honesty. During the stay of the ship they lost but one article, the buoy of the kedge anchor, which was restored upon the first application. And in their dealings they gave such extraordinary proofs of their honour, as  
 p. 33. quite surprized the crew. Some canoes coming off when the ship was under sail, several of them dropped astern, after they had received the goods from her, and before they had time to deliver theirs in return. Instead of taking advantage of this, as the natives of the Society Isles would have done, they used their utmost endeavours to get up with the ship: one man in particular followed them a considerable time, and did not reach her till it was calm: as soon as he came along side, he held up the thing, which several were ready to buy, but he refused to part with it till he saw the person to whom he had before sold it, and to him he gave it: the person, not knowing him again, offered him something in return, which he refused, and shewed him what he had given him before.

The



The night before they left Port Sandwich, two reddish fish, about the size of large bream, and not unlike them, was caught with a hook and line. On these fish most of the officers and some of the petty officers dined the next day. The night following, every one who had eaten of them was seized with violent pains in the head and bones, attended with a scorching heat all over the skin, and numbness in the joints. There remained no doubt that this was occasioned by the fish being of a poisonous nature, and having communicated its bad effects to all who partook of them, even to hogs and dogs. One of the former died about sixteen hours after; it was not long before one of the latter shared the same fate: and it was a week or ten days before all the gentlemen recovered. These must have been the same sort of fish mentioned by Quiros, under the name of Pargos, that poisoned the crews of his ships.

On the 23d of July they departed from Mallicollo, and on the 25th fell in with one large and four small islands. The large one Captain Cook named Sandwich, in honour of his noble patron the Earl of Sandwich; one of the smaller Montague, and another Hinchinbrooke. As they passed Montague Isle, several of the natives came down to the sea side, and by signs seemed to invite them ashore. Some were also seen on Sandwich Island, which exhibited a most delightful prospect, being spotted with woods and lawns, agreeably diversified over the whole surface.

After this they discovered several other islands; and on the 3d of August anchored on the N. W. side of one, in seventeen fathoms water. Being in want of fire wood and water, Captain Cook went ashore on the 4th, with two boats; where on a fine sandy beach he stepped out of the boat, without wetting a foot, in the face of a vast multitude. He took but one man out of the boat with him; and ordered the other boat to lie a little distance off. With only a green branch in his hand, which he had before got from one of the natives: he then approached them, and was received with great courtesy and politeness. But presently after the scene was changed. The Chief made signs for him to haul the boat up upon the shore, and, on his refusal, they proceeded to do it themselves by force. Being most of them armed with clubs, spears, darts, and bows and arrows, a skirmish now ensued; and it was not till after several of them

were killed and wounded, that they retired. One of the boat's crew was wounded in the cheek with a dart, the point of which was as thick as a man's finger; and an arrow, pointed with hard wood, struck against another's naked breast, but did not penetrate the skin.

p. 48. This place not being likely to supply their wants with convenience, as soon as the boats returned on board, they set their sails, and plyed out of the bay.

p. 49. From the slight observations they could make, these islanders seemed to be a different race from those of Mallicollo, and spoke a different language. They are of the middle size, have a good shape, and tolerable features. The Promontory or Peninsula on which this affray happened, Captain Cook named Traitor's Head, from the treacherous behaviour of its inhabitants. It is situated in latitude  $18^{\circ} 43'$  south, longitude  $169^{\circ} 28'$  east.

p. 49. As they advanced to the S. S. E. on the 4th, they discovered another island, towards which they steered during the night, being directed by a great light they saw upon it. This, on their nearer approach, they found to proceed from a volcano. At first, the behaviour of the natives was nearly similar to those of the island they landed on last; but by the mediation of a friendly old man, whose name was Paowang, and the prudent but resolute behaviour of Captain Cook, they were kept within tolerable bounds. Some of them, at times, would indeed behave daring and insolent, but others were equally courteous and civil.

p. 51. Whilst they were casting anchor, some of the natives wanted to carry off every thing within their reach: but a four-pounder and a few musketoon shot  
p. 56. put a stop to their depredations. The presents made to the old people, and to such as seemed to be of consequence, had little effect on the conduct of the young and daring. Captain Cook, however, taking Paowang to the woods, and making him understand that he wanted to cut down some trees, to take on board ship, he readily gave his consent; nor was there any one who made the least objection.

p. 57. During the night of the 6th, as it did most nights during their stay, the volcano vomited up vast quantities of fire and smoke, and the flames were seen  
to



to rise above a hill which lay between the ship and it: at every eruption it made a long rumbling noise like that of thunder, or the blowing up of large mines; a heavy shower of rain, which fell at the time, seemed to increase it: and the wind blowing from that quarter, the air was loaded with ashes, which fell so thick, that every thing was covered with the dust: it was a kind of fine sand, or stone ground or burnt to powder, and was exceedingly troublesome to the eyes.

By the 9th the behaviour of the natives was become more courteous and obliging, though they still kept armed. They were, however, very jealous of their visitors going up into the country. Mr. Forster had by this time learnt from the people the proper name of the island, which they called Tanna; and Captain Cook likewise gathered from some others the names of those in the neighbourhood: the one he touched at last, he found, was called Erromango; a small isle which they discovered the morning they landed here, was named Immer; the Table Island, to the east, discovered at the same time, Erronam, or Footoona; and an island that lies to the S. E. Annattom: all which are to be seen from Tanna.

The natives gave them to understand, in a manner which seemed not to admit of a doubt, that they eat human flesh; and that circumcision was practised among them. By a man's scalding his fingers in taking a stone up out of some water, this day, as they were loading ballast, a discovery was made of several hot springs at the foot of a cliff.

Some of the officers and gentlemen advanced on the 10th, for the first time, a little way into the island, where they met with a small straggling village, the inhabitants of which treated them with great civility. And the next morning Mr. Forster and his party made also an excursion into the country.

During the night of the 11th, the volcano was exceedingly troublesome, and made a terrible noise, throwing up prodigious columns of fire and smoke at each explosion, which happened every three or four minutes: at one time great stones were seen high in the air. On a hill, situated the west side of the harbour, three places were found, from whence smoke of a sulphureous smell issued

p. 62. issued through cracks or fissures in the earth: these seemed to keep pace with the volcano; for, at every explosion of the latter, the quantity of smoke or steam in these was greatly increased, and forced out so as to rise in small columns. A thermometer placed in a small hole made in one of them, rose from 80, at which it stood in the open air, to 170; several other parts of the hill emitted smoke or steam all day the 12th, and the volcano was unusually furious, inasmuch that the air was loaded with ashes; the rain which fell at the same time was a compound of water, sand, and earth, so that it might properly be called showers of mire.

p. 63. Notwithstanding the natives seemed well enough satisfied with the few expeditions made in the neighbourhood of the harbour, they were unwilling they should be extended any farther. As a proof of this, some of them undertook to guide several of the gentlemen who were in the country to a place where they might see the mouth of the volcano: they readily embraced the offer, and were conducted down to the harbour before they perceived the cheat.

p. 64. And on the 14th Captain Cook and a party making an excursion, they happened to turn out of the common path, when they came to a plantation, where they found a man at work, who, either out of good-nature, or to get them the sooner out of his territories, undertook to be their guide: they followed him accordingly, but had not gone far before they came to the junction of two roads, in one of which stood another man, with a sling and a stone, these, however, he thought proper to lay down when a musquet was pointed at him: but the attitude in which they found him, the ferocity appearing in his looks, and his behaviour after, convinced them that he meant to defend the path he stood in. He, in some measure, gained his point, for their guide took the other road, and they followed, but not without suspecting he was leading them out of the way. The other man went with them likewise, counting them several times over, and hallooing, as if for assistance; for two or three more presently joined him, among whom was a young woman with a club in her hand. By these people they were conducted to the brow of a hill, and shewn a road leading down to the harbour, which they wanted them to take. Not choosing to comply, the party returned to the road they had left, which they pursued for  
some



some time alone, the guide refusing to go with them: but, after they had ascended another ridge, the volcano appeared to be as far off as ever; they came to a resolution to return. They had but just put this in execution, when they met between twenty and thirty people, whom the fellow before mentioned had collected together, with a design, as they judged, to oppose their advancing into the country: but, as they saw them returning, they suffered them to pass unmolested. Some of these now put them into the right road, accompanied them down the hill, and made them stop by the way to entertain them with cocoa nuts, plantains, and sugar cane, and what they did not eat on the spot they carried down the hill with them. Thus they found these people hospitable, civil, and good natured, when not prompted to a contrary conduct by jealousy.

On the 15th Mr. Forster, in his botanical excursions, shot a pigeon, in the p. 69. claw of which was a wild nutmeg. He took some pains to find the tree, but his endeavours were without success. They observed, that in the sugar plantations were dug holes or pits four feet deep, and five or six in diameter; and, on enquiring their use, were given to understand that they caught rats in them. These animals, which are very destructive to the canes, are here in great plenty. The canes, they remarked, were planted as thick as possible round the edge of these pits, so that the rats in coming at them were the more liable to tumble in.

The Island of Tanna lies in latitude  $19^{\circ} 32'$  south, and in longitude  $169^{\circ} 44'$  east. p. 84. The harbour Captain Cook named Port Resolution, after the ship: she being the first which ever entered it. The soil, in some parts, is a rich black mould; p. 64. in other parts it seemed to be composed of decayed vegetables, and of the ashes the volcano sends forth throughout all its neighbourhood. The earth, p. 63. about the hot smoking springs before mentioned, is a kind of white clay, which had a sulphureous smell, and was soft and wet, the surface only excepted, over which was spread a thin dry crust, that had upon it some sulphur, and a vitriolic substance tasting like allum.

The country appeared, adjacent to the volcano, to be so covered with trees, p. 64. shrubs, and plants; that the bread fruit and cocoa nut trees, which seemed to have

p. 69. have been planted here by nature, were in a manner choked up. Here and there stands a house, with some few people, and plantations: these latter were found in different states, some of long standing; others lately cleared; and some only clearing. The clearing a piece of ground for a plantation seemed to be a work of much labour, considering the tools they had to work with; which, though much inferior to those of the Society Isles, are of the same kind. As neither Captain Cook nor any of his people were suffered to go far into the country, the internal state of the island cannot be exactly known. One part, however, they found well cultivated, open and airy; the plantations were laid out by line, abounding with plantains, sugar canes, yams, and other roots, and stocked with fruit trees.

p. 77. The produce of the island is bread fruit, plantains, cocoa nuts, a fruit like a nectarine, yams, tarra, a sort of potatoe, sugar canes, wild figs, a fruit like an orange, which is not eatable, and some other fruits and nuts, the names of of which they did not know: the yams are in great plenty, and of an excellent quality; they procured one which weighed fifty-six pounds, every ounce of which was good. Hogs did not seem scarce; but they saw not many fowls: these are the only domestic animals they have. Land birds are not more numerous than at the other islands; but they met with some small birds, with a very beautiful plumage, which they had never seen before. There is as great a variety of trees and plants here, as at any island they touched at. The natives seem to live chiefly on the produce of the land; the sea contributing but little to their subsistence: this seems rather to arise from their being bad fishermen, than the want of fish on the coast; as on the 6th of August, some of the crew, with three hauls with the seine, caught upwards of three hundred pounds weight of mullet and other fish, and they frequently supplied themselves by the same means.

p. 56.

p. 67. Their houses need no other description, than comparing them with the roof of a thatched house in England, taken off the walls, and placed on the ground. Some are open at both ends, others partly closed with reeds, and all covered with palm thatch; a few of them are thirty or forty feet long, and about sixteen broad. Besides these they have other mean hovels, which, it was supposed, were only to sleep in.

At



At first Captain Cook thought the people of Tanna, as well as those of Erromango, were a race between the natives of the Friendly Isles and those of Mallicollo; but a little acquaintance with them convinced him that they had little or no affinity to either, except it be in their hair, which is much like what the people of the latter island have. The general colours of it are black and brown, growing to a tolerable length, and very crisp and curly: they separate it into small locks, which they cue round with the rind of a slender plant down to about an inch of the ends; and as the hair grows, the cuing is continued: each of these locks is somewhat thicker than common whipcord; and they look like a parcel of small strings hanging down from the crown of their heads. Their beards, which are strong and bushy, are generally short. The women do not wear their hair as the men, but cropped; nor do the boys, till they approach manhood.

These people are of a middle size, rather slender than otherwise; many are little, but few tall or stout; the most of them have good features, and agreeable countenances; they are, like all the tropical race, active and nimble, and seem to excel in the use of arms, but not to be fond of labour. The females do all the laborious work. Though these cannot be said to be beauties, they are proportionably handsome with the men, and too handsome for the drudgeries they are made to do. Both sexes are of a very dark colour, but not black; nor have they the least characteristic of the negro about them. They make themselves blacker than they really are, by painting their faces with a pigment of the colour of black lead; they also use another sort, which is red; and a third sort brown, or a colour between black and red: all these, especially the first, they lay on with a liberal hand, not only on the face, but on the neck, shoulders, and breast. The men wear nothing but the belt and wrapping leaf, as at Mallicollo. The women have a kind of petticoat made of the filaments of the plantain trees, of flags, or some such thing, which reaches below the knee. Both sexes wear ornaments, such as bracelets, ear-rings, necklaces, and amulets.

They make use of two languages: one in common with their neighbours, the inhabitants of Erromango and Annatom, which is properly their own; and another, with the people of Erronam, which is nearly, if not exactly,

R r

the

the same as that spoken at the Friendly Isles: the former bears no affinity to the language of Mallicollo; it is therefore probable that the people of these three islands are a distinct nation of themselves; and likewise that Erronam being peopled from the Friendly Isles, by a long intercourse with Tanna and the neighbouring islands, each had learnt the other's language, which they use indiscriminately.

- p. 81. These people, besides the cultivation of the ground, have few other arts worth mentioning. They know how to make a coarse kind of matting, and a coarse cloth of the bark of a tree, which is used chiefly for belts. The workmanship of their canoes is very rude; and their arms, with which they take the most pains in point of neatness, come far short of some of the other islands. Their weapons are clubs, spears, or darts, bows and arrows, and stones. Their dexterity in the use of these, and the velocity with which they impelled
- p. 82. them, is described by Mr. Wales, who had frequent opportunities of seeing what they could perform, to approach so near to the marvellous descriptions given by Homer of the amazing feats performed with their spears, and by his heroes, as to bring them within the line of credibility.
- p. 83. With regard to their civil and religious government, Captain Cook acknowledges, that he was not able to obtain much information relative to either.
- p. 96. This Archipelago, to which Captain Cook has given the name of the Hebrides, are situated between the latitude of  $14^{\circ} 29'$  and  $20^{\circ} 4'$  south, and between  $166^{\circ} 41'$  and  $170^{\circ} 21'$  east longitude. The most northern island is called by Monsieur Bougainville, Peak of the Etoile. The next is that of Tierra del Espiritu Santo. The others are Mallicollo, St. Bartholomew, the Isle of Lepers, Aurora, Whitfuntide, Ambrym, Paoom, Apee, Shepherds Isles, Threehills, Sandwich Island, Erromango, Tanna, Annatom, Immer, and Erronam.
- p. 95. Captain Cook having finished the survey of the whole Archipelago on the 31st of August, the season of the year made it necessary for him to return to the south, while he had yet some time left to explore any land he might meet with between these islands and New Zealand, where he intended to touch,
- to



to refresh his people, and recruit their stock of wood and water for another southern course. With this view, in the evening, they tacked, and hauled to the southward, with a fresh gale at S. E.

On the 4th of September land was again discovered, and the next day they anchored near the shore, in five fathoms water. Many canoes came off to them, and they met with a very friendly reception on landing from a vast concourse of people, who were gathered together to view the strangers, all unarmed. It was not long before Captain Cook found that they were to expect nothing from these people, but the privilege of visiting their country undisturbed. For it was easy to see that they had little else than good-nature to bestow. In this they exceeded all the nations they had yet met with; and, although it did not satisfy the demands of nature, it at once pleased, and left their minds at ease.

On an excursion into the country, from the summit of one of the hills, they saw the sea in two places. By this they were enabled to judge of the breadth of the land, which, in this part, did not exceed ten leagues. Between some advanced hills, and that they were on, was a large valley, through which ran a serpentine river. On the banks of this were several plantations, and some villages: the plain or flat land, which lay along the shore they were upon, appeared from the hills to great advantage; the winding streams, which ran through it, the plantations, the little straggling villages, the variety of the woods, and the shoals on the coast, so variegated the scene, that the whole might afford a picture for romance. Indeed, were it not for those fertile spots on the plains, and some few on the sides of the mountains, the whole country might be called a dreary waste. The mountains, and other high places are, for the most part, incapable of cultivation, consisting chiefly of rocks. The little soil that is upon them is scorched and burnt up with the sun; it is, nevertheless, coated with coarse grass and other plants, and here and there trees and shrubs.

All their endeavours to get the name of the whole island proved ineffectual. Probably it was too large for the inhabitants to know by one name. Whenever

they made enquiry, the natives always gave them the name of some district or place which they pointed to, and they got the name of several, with that of the King or Chief of each. Hence Captain Cook concluded that the country is divided into several districts, each governed by a Chief; but he knew nothing of the extent of his power. Balade was the name of the district they were at, and Tea-Booma the Chief. *Tea* seems a title prefixed to the names of all or most of their Chiefs or great men. They honoured Captain Cook, by calling him *Tea* Cook.

- p. 118. The inhabitants are a strong, robust, active well made people, courteous and friendly, and not in the least addicted to pilfering, which is more than can be said of most of the other nations in this sea. They are nearly of the same colour as the natives of Tanna, but have better features, more agreeable countenances, and are a much stouter race; a few being seen who measured six feet four inches.
- p. 119. Their hair and beards are in general black: the former is very much frizzled; and the latter, which are of the same crisp nature as their hair, are for the most part worn short. Their only covering is the wrapper used at Tanna and Mallicollo: it is generally made of the bark of a tree, but sometimes of leaves.
- p. 120. The womens dress is a short petticoat. The usual ornaments of both sexes are ear-rings of tortoiseshell, necklaces, or amulets.
- p. 120. They seem to be a race between the people of Tanna and of the Friendly Isles, or between those of Tanna and the New Zealanders, or all three; their language, in some respects, being a mixture of them all. Notwithstanding their pacific inclination, they must sometimes have wars, as they are well provided with offensive weapons, such as clubs, spears, darts, and slings for throwing stones.
- p. 121. Their houses, at least most of them, are circular, something like a beehive,  
p. 122. and full as close and warm. The entrance is by a small door, or long square hole, just big enough to admit a man bent double. They have no great variety of household utensils; as they subsist on roots and fish, and the bark of a tree, which is said to grow also in the West Indies; this they roast, and are almost continually chewing.

This



This country bears great resemblance to New South Wales or New Holland, p. 123. and some of its natural productions are the same. Here are several of the p. 124. plants, &c. common to the eastern and northern islands; and a species of the passion flower, notwithstanding it is said not to grow wild any where but in America. The botanist had here full employ, every day bringing something new in botany, or other branches of natural history. The land birds are not very numerous, but they met with several that are new: one of these is a kind of crow, at least, so the crew called it, though it is not half so big, and its feathers are tinged with blue. They also have some very beautiful turtle doves, and other small birds, such as they never saw before.

The canoes these people use are somewhat like those of the Friendly Isles, p. 125. but exceedingly heavy and clumsy.

The women of this country, as well as those of Tanna, are, as far as could p. 127. be judged, far more chaste than those of the more eastern islands. It was not known that one of the crew obtained the least favour from any of them.

This island, which Captain Cook named New Caledonia, is, except New p. 143. Zealand, the largest in the South Pacific Ocean; for it extends from the latitude of  $19^{\circ} 37'$  to  $22^{\circ} 30'$  south, and from the longitude of  $163^{\circ} 37'$  to  $167^{\circ} 14'$  east; it is about eighty-seven leagues long, but its breadth does not any where exceed ten leagues. An island about a mile in circuit, which, from its being covered p. 135. with pine trees of the spruce kind, was denominated by them the Isle of Pines, adjoins to the south east point of it.

Having explored as much of this island as his time would permit, Captain Cook continued his course to New Zealand, for the purposes before mentioned. Nothing material happened till the 8th of October, when, having struck a p. 147. porpoise with a harpoon, it was necessary to bring to, and to have two boats out before they could kill it, and get it on board. It was six feet long; a female of that kind, which the naturalists call the Dolphin of the Ancients; and which differs from the other kind of porpoise in the head and jaw, they being long and pointed. This had eighty-eight teeth in each jaw. The hacket and lean flesh were a feast to the crew.

On

- p. 147. On the 10th they discovered land, which, on a nearer approach, they found to be an island of good height, and five leagues in circuit. It is situated in latitude  $29^{\circ} 2'$  south, and longitude  $168^{\circ} 16'$  east; and was named by Captain
- p. 148. Cook Norfolk Isle, in honour of the noble family of Howard. On landing they found it uninhabited, and were, undoubtedly, the first that ever set foot on it. They observed many trees and plants common at New Zealand; but the chief produce is a sort of spruce pine, which grew in great abundance, and to a large size. It also abounds with cabbage palm, wood sorrel, sow thistle, and samphire. Here are found the same kind of pigeons, parrots, and parroquets as in New Zealand, rails, and some small birds. The coast does not want fish.
- p. 151. On the 19th they anchored once more in Ship Cove, in Queen Charlotte's Sound, where they were received by the few natives, on the adjacent shore,
- p. 158. with great cordiality. They were informed by them that the Adventure had arrived soon after the departure of the Resolution, and continued there between ten and twenty days. So that they now became perfectly easy about her.
- p. 164. No material circumstance having happened during their stay here, on Thursday, November 10, they weighed, and stood out of the Sound, steering S. by E.
- p. 165. with a view of getting into the latitude of  $54^{\circ}$  or  $55^{\circ}$ ; Captain Cook's intention being to cross this vast ocean nearly in these parallels, and so as to pass over those parts which were left unexplored the preceding summer.
- p. 166. In this manner they proceeded till the 27th, sailing eastward, and searching for land in different directions; when Captain Cook gave up all hopes of finding any more in that ocean, and came to a resolution to steer directly for the west entrance of the Straits of Magalhaens, with a design to coast along the south side of Terra del Fuego, round Cape Horn, to the Strait le Maire. As the world had but a very imperfect knowledge of this shore, he thought the coasting of it would be of more advantage, both to navigation and geography,
- p. 170. than any thing he could expect to find in a higher latitude. They accordingly arrived on that coast on the 17th of December, after a passage in which very few interesting circumstances occurred.

They



They now coasted the west side of Terra del Fuego; the different bearings and aspects of which Captain Cook minutely describes for the benefit of future navigators; but a repetition of which would be incompatible with this abridgment. This coast he represents, and which corresponds with Mr. Parkinson's account of the east side of it, (vide Journal, p. 10.) to be the most desolate he ever saw: entirely composed of rocky mountains, without the least appearance of vegetation. The inhabitants, he adds, whom Monsieur Bougainville distinguishes by the name of Pecheras, from their using that word on every occasion, are a little ugly, half starved, beardless race; of all nations the most wretched.

Barren as this country is, it abounds with a variety of unknown plants, and gave sufficient employment to the botanists. The tree which produces the winter's bark, is found here in the woods; as is the holly leaved barbery, and some other sorts; they also met with a berry, in great plenty, which resembled a cranberry in colour, size, and shape.

The refreshments to be got here, consist chiefly of wild fowl and fish; but the latter appeared to be scarce, except muscles, which are large and well tasted; the former are geese, ducks, seapies, shags, and the Port Egmont hen before mentioned; here is a kind of duck, called by the crew race hories, on account of the great swiftness with which they run on the water, for they cannot fly, the wings being too short to support the body in the air.

On the 23d of December they landed on an island, which, on account of the number of geese found on it, obtained the name of Goose Island. On the 24th they shot seventy-two, which enabled Captain Cook to make a distribution to the whole crew; with which they celebrated next day the festival of Christmas in a much more chearful manner than they had reason to expect; roast and boiled geese, goose pies, &c. was their fare, which, with some Madeira wine they had left, enabled the officers and gentlemen, Captain Cook observes, to celebrate Christmas with as much festivity, perhaps, as their friends in England. Had not Providence thus singularly provided for them, their cheer must have been salt pork and beef.

At

p. 189. At half past seven, on the 29th, they doubled Cape Horn, and entered the South Atlantic Ocean. This same Cape is the most southern extremity on a group of islands, of unequal extent, lying before Nassau Bay, known by the name of the Hermite Islands, and is situated in the latitude of  $55^{\circ} 58'$ , and in the longitude of  $68^{\circ} 13'$  west.

p. 191. On the 30th they were driven by the current over to Staten Island; and since  
p. 192. they had explored the south coast of Terra del Fuego, Captain Cook resolved to do the same by that island, which he believed to be as little known as the former. The soil, produce, and inhabitants of these parts, being so particularly described in the foregoing Journal, only a few circumstances relative to the birds and beasts found there will be inserted here.

p. 195. On January the 1st 1775, whilst searching for a good harbour, they discovered a convenient port on Staten Island, with several small islands lying at the entrance of it. On these were sea lions, seals, &c. and such an innumerable quantity of gulls, as to darken the air when disturbed, and almost to suffocate the people with their dung: this they seemed to void by way of defence; and it stunk worse than *assafoetida*.

p. 203. The sea lions here are not of that kind described by Lord Anson, under the same name, though these seem rather to deserve that appellation; the long hair, with which the back of the head, the neck and shoulders, are covered, giving them greatly the appearance of a lion; the other part of the body is covered with a short hair, little longer than that of a cow or a horse; and the whole is a dark brown; the largest of them are about twelve or fourteen feet in length, and eight or ten in circumference. The female is not half so big as the male, and is covered with a short hair, of an ash or light dun colour. They live, as it were, in herds on the rocks, and near the sea shore. As the time the Resolution was there, was the season for these creatures engendering; a male was sometimes seen with twenty or thirty females about him, and always very attentive to keep them to himself, beating off every other male who attempted to come into his flock; others again had a less number; and some not more than one or two. The sea bears are not so large by far as the lions, but rather larger than a  
common



common seal; they have none of that long hair that distinguishes a lion; theirs is all of an equal length, and finer than that of a lion, something like an otter's, and is generally of an iron grey.

The naturalists found here two new species of birds: the one is about the size of a pigeon, the plumage as white as milk; they feed along shore, probably on shell fish and carrion, as they have a disagreeable smell, but are not web-footed. The other sort is a species of curlews, nearly as big as a heron: it has a variegated plumage, the principal colours whereof are light grey, and a long crooked bill. p. 205.

It is amazing to see how the various animals, which inhabit this little spot, are mutually reconciled: they seem to have entered into a league not to disturb each other's tranquility, though of such different natures and dispositions; they were seen frequently to mix together like domestick cattle and poultry in a farm-yard, without one species attempting to molest the other: even the eagles and vultures seemed to content themselves with dead carcases, without destroying the living. p. 206.

January the 3d, 1775, they sailed from Staten Island, and now launched into the South *Atlantic* Ocean, traversing it in various directions in search of land, as they had lately done in the South *Pacific* Ocean. After discovering two islands, which, though in the midst of summer, were covered with ice and snow, on the 20th they fell in with another, between the latitudes  $53^{\circ} 57'$  and  $54^{\circ} 57'$  South, and between  $38^{\circ} 13'$  and  $35^{\circ} 34'$  west longitude. This Captain Cook named the Isle of Georgia, in honour of his Majesty. It extends S. E. by E. and N. W. by W. and is thirty-one leagues long in that direction; and its greatest breadth is about ten leagues. It abounds with bays and harbours, but the vast quantity of ice must render them inaccessible the greatest part of the year: so that this discovery cannot be attended with any advantages. p. 207. p. 216. p. 217. p. 218.

On the 31st, in latitude  $59^{\circ} 13' 30''$  south, longitude  $27^{\circ} 45'$  west, the weather clearing up, which had been for several days foggy, they again discovered land. As this is the most southern land ever yet discovered, Captain Cook called it p. 225.

S s

Southern

Southern Thule. It shows a surface of vast height, and is every where covered with snow.

p. 223. Having reached the latitude of  $60^{\circ}$  S. on the 27th, which was the highest Captain Cook intended to make, unless he had observed some certain signs of soon meeting with the continent he was in search of; they were now inclining again to the north.

p. 230. Here he observes, that he firmly believes there is a track of land near the pole, and that it extends farthest to the north, opposite the Southern Atlantic and Indian Oceans, because ice had been found by them farther to the north in these oceans than in the Pacific. Very few navigators have met with any going round Cape Horn; and they themselves saw but little below the sixtieth degree of latitude in the latter ocean; whereas, in the former, between the meridian of  $40^{\circ}$  west, and  $50^{\circ}$  or  $60^{\circ}$  east, they found it as far north as  $51^{\circ}$ . Bouvet met with some in  $48^{\circ}$ ; and others have seen it in a much lower latitude.

p. 231. It is true, however, that the greatest part of this southern continent (supposing there is one) must lie within the polar circle, where the sea is so pestered with ice, that the land is thereby inaccessible. The risque run in exploring a coast in these unknown icy seas, is so very great, he adds, that he can be bold enough to say, that no man will ever venture farther than he has done: and that the lands, which may lie to the south, will, consequently, never be explored. Thick fogs, snow storms, intense cold, and every thing that can render navigation dangerous, must be encountered; and these difficulties are greatly heightened by the inexpressible horrid aspect of the country: a country doomed by nature never once to feel the warmth of the sun's rays, but to lie buried in everlasting snow and ice.

p. 232. These reasons induced him to alter his course on the 6th of February, when he proceeded to the east, with a very strong gale at north, attended with an exceeding heavy fall of snow: the quantity which lodged in the sails was so great, that they were frequently obliged to throw the ship up in the wind to shake it out of them, otherwise neither they nor the ship could have supported the weight.

On



On the 22d they were no more than two degrees of longitude from their route p. 237. to the south, when they left the Cape of Good Hope. It was therefore to no purpose to proceed any farther to the east under this parallel, knowing that no land could be there. But as an opportunity now offered of clearing up some doubts of their having seen land farther to the south at the beginning of their p. 238. researches, they steered S. E. to get into the situation in which it was supposed to lie.

In this manner they proceeded, till having run over the place, without seeing the least signs of it, they no longer doubted but that the Ice Islands had deceived them, as well as Monsieur Bouvet. They had now made the circuit of the p. 239. Southern Ocean in a high latitude, and traversed it in such a manner, as to leave not the least room for the possibility of there being a continent, unless near the pole, and out of the reach of navigation.

Their sails and rigging were by this time so much worn, that something was p. 243. giving way every hour; and they had nothing left either to repair or replace them. Their provisions were likewise in a state of decay, and consequently afforded little nourishment; and they had been a long time without refreshments. The crew, indeed, were yet healthy, and would have cheerfully gone wherever their commander had thought proper to lead them; but Captain Cook dreaded the scurvy laying hold of them, at a time when they had nothing left to remove it. He adds, that it would have been cruel in him to have continued the fatigues and hardships they were continually exposed to longer than was absolutely necessary. Their behaviour, throughout the whole voyage, merited every indulgence which it was in his power to give them. Animated by the conduct of the officers, they shewed themselves capable of surmounting every difficulty and danger which came in their way, and never once looked either upon one or the other as being at all heightened by their separation from their comfort the Adventure.

These considerations induced Captain Cook to lay aside his researches, the p. 244. intention of his voyage in every respect being fully answered: viz. the southern p. 239. hemisphere sufficiently explored, and a final end put to the seeking after a con-

continent there. He therefore gave orders, on the 26th of February, to steer for the Cape of Good Hope, with a resolution of looking, as he proceeded, for the Isles of Denia and Marseveen, which are laid down in Dr. Halley's Chart.

p. 246. Being however, on the 13th of March, two degrees north of the parallel in which those islands are said to lie, and having seen nothing to encourage him to persevere in looking for them, every one began to grow impatient to get into port; Captain Cook therefore yielded to the general wish, and on the 22d they anchored in Table Bay at the Cape.

p. 250. They now learnt that the Adventure had called here on her return, near twelve months before, and a letter which Captain Furneaux left for Captain Cook informed them of the loss of his boat, and ten of his best men in Queen Charlotte's Sound.

p. 265. As soon as they arrived, they went to work to supply all the defects of the ship. That the rigging, sails, &c. should be worn out, will not be wondered at, when it is known, that during this circumnavigation of the globe, that is, from their leaving the Cape to their return to it again, they had sailed no less than twenty thousand leagues: an extent of voyage nearly equal to three times the equatorial circumference of the earth; and which was never sailed by any ship in the same space of time before. And what is very remarkable, in all this great run, which had been made in all latitudes between  $9^{\circ}$  and  $71^{\circ}$ , they sprung neither low mast, top mast, lower or top sail yard, nor so much as broke a lower or top mast shroud; which, together with the great care and abilities of the officers, must be owing to the good properties of the ship.

p. 268. Having, by the 27th of April, got all the necessary repairs completed, and taken on board a fresh supply of stores, provisions, and water, Captain Cook took leave of the Governor and principal Officers, who had treated them during their stay with the greatest politeness, and repaired on board. Soon after, the wind coming fair, they weighed and put to sea; and, without meeting with any incident necessary to relate here, arrived on the 15th of May at the Island of St. Helena.

On



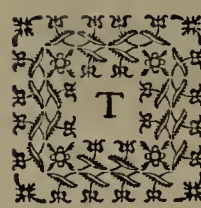
On the 21<sup>st</sup> they sailed from thence, and after touching at the Island of p. 272.  
 Ascension, and having stretched over to the Island of Fernando de Noronho, p. 273.  
 on the Coast of Brazils, they arrived, on the 14<sup>th</sup> of July, at the Island of p. 276.  
 Fayal, one of the Azores, and on the 30<sup>th</sup> of the same month anchored at Spithead. p. 283.  
 p. 289.

As nothing from their arrival at the Cape of Good Hope to their landing in England relates immediately to the business of their voyage, so as to render it a necessary addition to the foregoing Journal, a few circumstances inserted in the original work have been here omitted.

Thus ended this memorable voyage, which had taken up three years and eigh- p. 289.  
 teen days, in which time, and under all changes of climate, they lost but four men, and only one of them by sickness; which is to be attributed chiefly to the articles put on board, by direction of the Admiralty, for the preservation of the health of the crew, (such as the wort, &c. before recited) and the p. 291.  
 prudent regulations introduced by Captain Cook, through which, the duty of the people was rendered as easy and convenient as possible, and their persons, hammocks, bedding, and clothes, as well as the ship, were kept clean and dry.



An Abridgment of the Narrative of a Voyage performed by Captain COOK and Captain CLERKE, in Search of a North West Passage between the Continents of Asia and America, during the Years 1776, 1777, 1778, 1779, to the Time of the unfortunate Death of Captain Cook.

 O reduce the following Abridgment within the bounds of the few pages that can be allotted to it, it will be requisite to confine it to a brief recapitulation of the new discoveries which were made during this voyage, and a concise recital of the additional knowledge acquired in it, relative to the countries discovered during the two former voyages, omitting every circumstance that has been rendered familiar by a prior insertion.

Ellis,  
p. 1.

Introd.  
to Cook's  
Voyage,  
p. xxix.

Ellis,  
p. 2.

The Resolution and Discovery, having been put into commission in February, 1776, for the purpose of exploring the northern parts of the Pacific Ocean, and to search for a north west passage between the continents of Asia and America: the command of the former was again given to Captain Cook; and that of the latter to Captain Clerke, who had been second Lieutenant to Captain Cook during his last voyage to the South Seas. On the 12th of July the Resolution sailed from Plymouth for the Cape of Good Hope; but Captain Clerke's affairs detained him in London a considerable time after; he did not put to sea till the 1st of August.

On



On the 1st of December both ships left the Cape, and on the 24th of January, 1777, anchored in Adventure Bay, Van Diemen's Land, in latitude  $43^{\circ} 14'$  south,  $147^{\circ} 28'$  east longitude, which Captain Cook had not touched at in his two former voyages. The land surrounding the Bay is moderately high, and covered with a variety of trees, which are, in general, tall and strait; some afford an agreeable spice, and others abound with gums: but, in all their excursions, they did not see one tree that had the least appearance of supplying the inhabitants with food; so that, in all probability, they live solely on what shell fish they can collect from the rocks. These people seem to be nearly upon a par with the wretched natives of Terra del Fuego: their colour is a dark brown; their hair short and woolly, which, with their beards, are formed into small distinct lumps, with a mixture of reddish brown earth, and some kind of liquid of an oily nature: this mode of dressing their hair gives them an uncommon appearance. The man, who seemed to be the principal among them, had his face entirely painted with this composition. Their teeth are in general bad; their noses flat; lips thin; foreheads low; but their eyes were dark brown and lively; their arms and breasts were marked with lines, running in various directions, but totally different from any Captain Cook had ever seen before, the flesh being elevated or raised up as it were in little ridges. The only quadruped they met with was a species of the opossum. The birds were various, but not numerous, and some of them very beautiful. They caught also several sorts of fish.

On Wednesday, the 12th of February, both ships anchored in Ship Cove, Queen Charlotte's Sound, New Zealand. As soon as they landed, Captain Cook, always attentive to the health of his men, ordered a quantity of the spruce beer, before mentioned, to be made; and procured all the refreshments for them that the place afforded. Of those of the natives, who were the most constantly on board, a young lad, called Tiu-arrooa, was the principal: he was possessed of good nature, and had a great share of sense and discernment. He was greatly attached to Captain Cook and Omai, (the person taken on board at Huaheine by Captain Furneaux, in the former voyage, and now on his return from England to his native country) and was constantly with one or the other. His father was late Chief of the district in which the ships lay, and was killed,

with

with several others, about six weeks before their arrival, by a strong party of another district, who attacked them in the night. Tiu-arrooa and a few others escaped with the greatest difficulty.

p. 28. A few days before their departure, Kihoorah, the Chief, who headed the party that cut off the boat's crew belonging to the Adventure last voyage, as before related, paid them a visit: at first he was very shy, and would not venture on board, fearful, no doubt, that they would revenge the death of their countrymen upon him: but when he found that no notice was taken of it, he laid aside his diffidence, and readily came to the ships. He was much disliked by his own people, who frequently desired some of the ship's company to shoot him; at the same time expressing their disapprobation of him in very severe terms.

p. 57. On the 1st of May they arrived at Anamooka, or Rotterdam. To prevent  
p. 58. the inconvenience that arose the last time they were at this island, from trading promiscuously for curiosities, before they had procured a sufficient stock of refreshments for the ship, Captain Cook issued orders for the regulation of their traffick, and appointed proper persons to trade with the natives for such provisions as the island produced.

Vol. II. Though Captain Cook, in his second voyage, could not distinguish any King  
p. 21. or leading Chief, or any person who took upon him the chief authority; here they now discovered that there were Chiefs, who enjoyed different degrees of  
p. 61. authority. On the 3d they were visited by a Chief, whose name was Feenow: he came from the Island of Tongatabu, or Amsterdam; and had a numerous retinue, who paid him great respect: one of these, who appeared to be the principal of them, made a long oration, in the course of which he gave them to understand that Feenow was Agee-lakee, or King of Anamooka, and all the neighbouring isles; of which he enumerated near a hundred. Seven or eight fine handsome women, who were said to be his wives, likewise attended him.

p. 63. This Chief was very desirous for Captain Cook to accompany him to some islands, which, he said, lay but about two days sail from Anamooka. These islands he called Haphipec, which, in the language of these people, signifies a cluster.



cluster. The Captain accordingly went with Feenoo, and here, as they had done at Anamooka, received the greatest civilities from him. Every thing was conducted with the greatest regularity and decorum, and nothing was wanting to render their stay as agreeable as possible. He entertained them with boxing and wrestling matches, and variety of dances.

But on their return to Anamooka, they were informed that another great man from Tongatabu was arrived, whose name was Fatafee Poolahoo. This Chief came on board: he was above the middle size, exceeding fat, and appeared to be about forty. His attendants were numerous; and there was not one of them but told the crew that he was the real King of Tongatabu, Anamooka, Happee, and, in short, of all the islands which they had before supposed Feenoo King of. This strange account surprized them a good deal, as every body had taken it for granted that Feenoo was Sovereign, every mark of respect and submission being paid him; and how to account for the usurpation of this man (if such it proved) was not in their power. Feenoo's not being returned, though the time he had fixed for his being at Anamooka was expired, increased the probability that an interview with Poolahoo would put an end to his assumed consequence. And this was the case: for, on his arrival, he acknowledged Poolahoo as his superior, and paid him the homage of a subject, in the presence of some of the English gentlemen who happened to be there; but with a countenance so expressive of shame, that every one who saw him felt for and pitied him. They found, however, that though he was not King, he was one of the principal men, and Generalissimo of the King's forces, and upon all occasions led them out to battle. p. 66. p. 68.

During Poolahoo's stay on board, he paid great attention to the different parts of the ship; and, among other questions, asked what they came to these islands for? He said, they appeared to be in want of nothing; and that they all looked well, and in health. A question of this kind came so unexpected, that, at first, the Captain was at a loss what reply to make; but, recollecting himself, he told the Chief that he came there by the order of his King, who was a great and mighty Prince, and was desirous of entering into a league of friendship with him: that there was a large stock of hatchets, knives, beads, red cloth, &c. p. 67.

on board, which he would barter with him for hogs, and such articles as the island produced. With this answer he appeared well satisfied.

p. 70. On the 8th of June they left Anamooka, attended, for some part of the way, by Poolahoo and Feenoo, in their canoes, which went at a great rate; and a number of smaller ones: the royal canoe was distinguished from the rest by a small bundle of grass, of a red colour, fastened to the end of a pole, and fixed at the stern of the canoe, in the same manner as an ensign staff. And on the 10th they anchored in the harbour of Amsterdam.

p. 72. Notwithstanding the pretensions both of Poolahoo and Feenoo to the sovereignty of these islands, yet, on their arrival here, they were informed that a very old man, whose name was Malla-wagga, was their real King, but being overwhelmed by the infirmities of old age, he was unable to hold the reins of government, which were, therefore, put into the hands of Poolahoo. This  
p. 75. circumstance appeared very strange, but more so when they observed that this old man, on coming on board, paid homage to Poolahoo, by bowing and touching his feet. They afterwards heard of two others, who were said to be still superior to all the former. These intricacies may probably arise from their imperfect knowledge of the language.

p. 85. As their stay at the Friendly Islands, this time, was of a longer duration than in the last voyage, they had a better opportunity of making observations on them,  
p. 97. and their inhabitants. They observed that their only drink is water or cocoa nut milk, in general, but the better sort of people always take a draught of awa before they eat; they never saw them use it at any other time; and even then, they are far more moderate than the people of Otaheitee, and make this liquor in a cleaner manner. There is a law or custom here, which forbids, at particular times, a person of inferior rank to eat in the presence of his superiors: if such unexpectedly appear, he immediately desists, and puts his victuals on one side: as they once saw even Poolahoo do, on the entrance of two other Chiefs, and this with a good deal of confusion. A proof that there were others on these islands who were his superiors.

They



They rise as soon as it is light, and the first thing they do is to wash themselves in the sea, and afterwards in fresh water, which they collect in small wells or pits dug for that purpose; after this they sit down to their breakfast, which generally consists of bread-fruit, yams, or plantains. As the heat of the day comes on, they for the most part sleep. Their first meal being so early, they usually eat again about eleven, and in the afternoon about four; at eight in the evening, or as soon as it becomes dark, they sup, and retire to rest. p. 98.

Their amusements are dancing, wrestling, singing, and boxing; at all which they are very expert. The dances of the women are generally, if not always, in the evening, and by torch light: upon this occasion they are well dressed; their heads are decorated with wreaths, composed of a plant like ivory; round the waist they wear an elegant piece of cloth, and over it a broad fringe of plantain leaves; their movements are very regular, and they keep excellent time to their music. The musicians sit together, forming a small circle, and the women dance round them. The men very rarely intermix in the women's dances, though they once saw Poolahoo in the midst of them; and, notwithstanding his corpulency, he kept as good time as the best of them. p. 99.

Their wrestling matches are much like those of Otaheitee. Their mode of challenging is by striking with the hollow of their right hand upon the bended joint of their left elbow, which produces a loud hollow sound, something resembling that of a child's pop-gun. Another kind of diversion they have, which is something similar to our cudgel playing, only in lieu of sticks they use clubs, made of the bottom part of the cocoa nut tree, which is hard, and very tough: with these they will engage each other for a considerable time; they shew great dexterity in warding off and parrying the blows of their antagonists; but they sometimes get terribly beaten about the head, and, in the course of the conflict, must suffer severely. Such, however, is their great good nature, that there is scarcely ever an instance of a blow being given in anger. p. 103.

These sports, as well as their dances, are seldom exhibited but upon particular days, for the entertainment of the King and his Nobility, many of whom

frequently engage in them; and sometimes Poolahoo himself lays aside his dignity, and, as before related, dances with his women.

p. 111. Of the ceremonies attending a funeral, the most knowledge they acquired was by an accidental view got by one of the people. He was desirous of seeing the whole; but the natives were quite averse to an indulgence of that kind. Upon this occasion, several of them, he said, both men and women, wore a wreath, made of a twining kind of plant, round their necks and waists; and by their lamentations and gestures, he judged them to be relations of the deceased.

p. 112. The only information they could gain from the natives relative to these affairs, is, that upon the death of a person, all the relations assemble together, and make a dismal howling, beating themselves upon their cheek bones with their fists, till the blood runs: this is considered as a great mark of affection, and the more they torture themselves in this manner, the greater esteem they are supposed to have entertained for the deceased. They also cut off the first joint of their little finger on the death of their parents: the right hand finger is dedicated to the father, the left to the mother. This mutilation Captain Cook could not account for when he was here before. Cutting off the hair is also another of their mourning ceremonies.

p. 112. They believe the existence of the soul in a separate state, and that after death they go to a very pleasant place, much superior to that which they enjoyed during life: but this blissful abode is, according to them, entirely for the residence of the Arees; those of inferior rank not being suffered to have any share in them. Indeed the lower class of people are kept in great subjection by the Chiefs, who seem to regard them as an abject set of beings, over whom they have an unbounded right.

p. 123. August the 14th they anchored in Oaiti-piha harbour, in the Island of Otaheite. The ships were scarcely moored before numbers of the inhabitants came off, and presently recollected some of their old acquaintance; at the sight of whom they expressed great joy and satisfaction. It might be supposed that



that they were equally happy in seeing their countryman Omai returned after so long a voyage; on the contrary, they scarce took any notice of him; and had he not dealt out his presents of red feathers, and pretty largely, it is possible they would not have spoken to him.

They found that Waheatoua, who was King of Otaheite-Etee, or Tiarraboo, p. 124.  
when they were last here, was dead, as likewise was Oberea. They further p. 124.  
learnt, that about the latter end of 1774, there had arrived here two ships from  
Remah, (by which it was supposed they meant Lima) the people belonging to  
which had staid between three and four months, and had erected an house on  
shore. During their residence, the Commander, whose name was Oridde,  
died, and was buried on shore, some little distance from the house. At the  
departure of the ships, they took with them four of the natives, who volun-  
tarily offered to go, and left behind them a young man named Marteemo, and  
two priests. But at the end of two months they returned and took back p. 125.  
Marteemo and the two priests, of the good effects of whose apostolical mission  
no traces could be found.

The present King of Otaheite-Etee is a minor, and son to the late Waheatoua: p. 129.  
he is about ten years old, and is a fine, lively, sensible boy. The Morai of the p. 130.  
late King stands upon the banks of a rivulet not far from the Spanish House:  
it is very neatly fenced in with bamboo, and the corpse is placed upon a kind  
of bier, and wrapped up in a great quantity of cloth, over which are spread  
several pieces of scarlet woollen cloth, which had been given him by the  
Spaniards.

The natives, notwithstanding they supplied Captain Cook very largely with p. 130.  
every produce of the place, yet, in several respects, had lost that degree of  
cordiality for him and his people they had experienced in the course of the  
former voyage. This they had great reason to attribute to the insinuations of the  
Spaniards, who (if the natives may be relied on) took every method to lessen  
that friendship and good opinion they saw these people entertain of the English  
navigators, by representing them as a set of idle piratical people, who lived  
entirely by plunder; and, having no place of abode, were obliged to cruize  
about

p. 132. about from place to place to procure a living. However, they, in some measure, overcame these prejudices by dealing out their presents, (particularly red feathers) in a judicious manner; so that at length they confessed that the English were more valuable taioa (friends) than the Dons.

p. 133. On the 23d of August they anchored in Matavia Bay. Here Omai found his sister married and settled, who received him very affectionately; but her husband, who was of the inferior set of people, would not deign to speak to him; finding, however, that Omai was possessed of many valuables, he soon altered his behaviour.

p. 139. The armament which was prepared for the reduction of Eimeo, when Captain Cook was last here, as before recited, failed soon after the departure of the Resolution; and entirely routing their foes, obliged them to sue for peace.

p. 140. A relation of the Commander, Tohawa, was placed over them as Governor; but soon throwing off his authority, they dispatched him: this occasioned another war, in which these islands were at present engaged. To secure the protection of their God of War, whom they call Oro, a human sacrifice was offered

p. 142. up to him by Tohawa. As it was his relation that had been murdered, he, of course, was the most active, and had made great preparations; Otoo, Potatow, and another Chief, whose name was Tapaow, were to assist him: Tohawa, and the two others, accordingly sailed for Eimeo the 19th of September, whilst Otoo was to muster his forces, and join them the next day. Instead of which, the King, after having reviewed his war canoes, dismissed his forces; the consequence of which was, the Admiral and his friends were roughly handled, and obliged to make off in the best manner they could.

p. 142. This behaviour of Otoo enraged Tohawa so much, that he threatened to depose him, which, he said, it was not very difficult to accomplish, as Waheatoua, the young King of Tiarraboo, is his nephew. Indeed, from the popularity and military knowledge of Tohawa, and the power of his kinsman, Otoo had great reason to be alarmed at these threats. In this situation stood the government of Otaheite Nooa, when Captain Cook left the island on the 29th of September.

When



When they arrived at Huaheine, the place Omai had fixed upon for his residence, a house was ordered to be erected for him by the carpenters belonging to the ships, to which he removed his effects; and nothing but the countenance given him by Captain Cook and Captain Clerke, and their principal officers, could induce his countrymen to shew him even common civility. p. 147.  
p. 150.

The society of the Arecois, mentioned by Captain Cook in his last voyage, but whose tenets he was then at a loss to account for, became better known to him before he left the Society Isles. This fraternity is esteemed the most polite establishment in these islands. The members of it are always persons of rank and fortune, and are distinguished by being tattowed in a peculiar manner, especially those who are natives of Borabora. It is a most cruel and inhuman action that constitutes a member. A man must connect himself with a girl, and the first child he has by her must be strangled the instant it is born; at the next meeting of the society, he must bring witnesses to prove the perpetration of the horrid deed; on which they are admitted as members. They generally go in companies of ten or twelve sail of canoes; and let them direct their course to whatever island they please, they are always certain of being well received; nay, if they have even been at war but a few days before the visit, all animosity is laid aside, and they are as perfect friends as if nothing had happened. The members of this society have many privileges annexed to their orders. They are allowed to keep several women; they always wear the best cloth; and eat many peculiar things which others, even if Arees, are not permitted to do. In short, though they are generally distinguished for their prowess and valour, yet they appear to be a society of professed debauchees. p. 159.

On the 9th of December they left the Society Isles, and on the 24th discovered a low sandy island lying in latitude  $2^{\circ} 3'$  north, and longitude  $202^{\circ} 22'$  east, which, as they spent the anniversary of Christmas there, Captain Cook called Christmas Island. It supplied them with some turtle, besides which the place produced nothing remarkable. p. 158.  
p. 163.  
p. 165.

On the 18th of January 1778 they fell in with another island in latitude  $21^{\circ} 13'$  north, and longitude  $200^{\circ} 49'$  east, where they were supplied with plenty of p. 166.

- p. 171. of hogs, potatoes, &c. and purchased a variety of ornaments, such as fans, necklaces, bracelets, cloaks, and caps, composed of red and yellow feathers, which were very curious, the latter being made in the form of helmets. The
- p. 177. name of this island is A'towi. And on the 29th they discovered one of a
- p. 174. smaller size, named O'neehow, which had a more desolate appearance than the other, but the productions were nearly similar to it. The canoes or boats were the neatest they had ever seen, being composed of two different coloured woods, the bottom part dark, the upper light.
- p. 188. On the 29th of March they fell in with the N. W. coast of America, in
- p. 189. latitude 49° 28' north. Two or three canoes, with several of the natives on board, put off to the ships, and addressed them in a very harsh uncouth language. They were painted red, and some wore a kind of garment, edged with fur, and fastened across the shoulders like the New Zealand hahoos. One of them had several skins sewed together, and thrown over his shoulders.
- p. 190. The next day many others came off, of whom they purchased a considerable number of bear, wolf, lynx, and sea beaver skins. They appeared to be a miserable set of beings, middle sized, and ill made; their colour was rather lighter than any they had met with, but rendered black by filth and dirt.
- p. 191. The women could scarcely be distinguished from the men, but, on a close examination, it was observed that they were not ornamented like the men; and that, with respect to their stature, they were in general shorter.
- p. 192. They exposed to sale several human skulls and dried hands: but whether they were Cannibals, though it was judged so from this circumstance, could not be discovered. They wore their hair, which was long and shaggy, parted on the top of the head, and sprinkled or powdered with the down of birds.
- p. 196. So far from finding a great number of wild fowl here, as they expected from the situation, they scarcely saw a single duck; a shag or two, a few gulls, and
- p. 197. a small flock of plovers, all of which were very shy, were the whole seen by
- p. 205. the shooting parties. Nor were there either hares or deer to be found. Captain Cook, in an excursion along shore, discovered two of their towns, at both of which he landed, and experienced very civil treatment from the inhabitants.
- Their



Their houses were very indifferent, built of wood, and stunk abominably of fish, vast numbers of which were hung up to dry in every part of them.

During their stay the natives entertained them several times with songs and dances in their canoes: one of them usually got up and danced, singing at the same time, whilst the others beat time with their paddles against the sides of their canoes, and at a particular instant, they all joined with the singer in a kind of chorus. One day a man danced in an antic manner, and wore a mask, which he varied several times during the performance. p. 196. p. 208.

This place, which Captain Cook named King George's Sound, is situated on the N. W. coast of America, and is very extensive: it lies in latitude  $49^{\circ} 36'$  north, and longitude  $233^{\circ} 28'$  east. The whole Sound is surrounded by high land, which, in some places, appear very broken and rugged, and is in general covered with wood to the very top; the soil is rich and loamy inland, but, as you approach the shore, it becomes more light and sandy. That the natives had communication with some of the southern settlements, seems probable from their offering two silver spoons to sale, which appeared to be of a very old make, and somewhat different in form from those used in England. p. 209. p. 224.

On the 26th of April they left King George's Sound, and on the 12th of May put into another opening of the same coast, which Captain Cook named Sandwich Sound. This extensive bay they explored all round, and found the natives on the different borders of it to resemble, in most respects, those of King George's Sound, and to form a line of connexion between these and the natives of Unalafchka, and the other western parts of America. They were rather a better looking people than the former, and were fat and jolly, as if they lived well. p. 234. p. 247.

Their dress was made of the guts of fish sewed together, with sleeves down to the wrists, under this they had jackets made of the skins of beasts. Their under lip was perforated lengthways, through the opening of which they frequently put their tongues: some of them had blue beads, and other ornaments, fixed in this slit, and also through the gristle of the nose. They had p. 236. p. 240.

U u

several

several spears which were headed with iron; and knives near eighteen inches long, shaped like a hanger; which makes it probable that they have, by some means or other, connexions with the Russians.

p. 241. On the 15th of May several of them came along side in their canoes, and brought with them the calumet of peace, which was the first instance the ships had met with of the use of this American instrument. Innumerable flocks of wild fowl were seen here, but they were so shy, that very few could  
p. 246. be killed. On the 19th they saw an incredible number of whales and seals sporting around them, from whence they concluded that they were nearly out of the Sound, and not far from the sea.]

p. 247. Accordingly, on the next day, they found themselves again in the ocean, in which they continued to trace the coast to the northward, without meeting with any very remarkable incidents, till they arrived, on the 27th of June, at  
p. 281. the Island of Unalashka. As they were standing across a very deep bay, they  
p. 282. observed a number of people in canoes very busily employed in towing a whale on shore, which they probably had just killed. Some of them made immediately for the ships, and seemed very glad to see the crews. In most respects they seemed to resemble the inhabitants of Sandwich Sound.

p. 284. The next day both ships anchored in a fine harbour. Many of the natives came on board, who seemed to take them for Russians, from their frequent repetition of the word *roosky*. They also perfectly understood the use of tobacco, which they asked for by that name; and when it was given them, immediately put it to their mouths. From these circumstances it is plain they must have frequent intercourse with the Russians.

p. 285. They purchased several darts, and other articles of curiosity from the natives, who were a very well behaved people, for which they gave them in exchange tobacco, beads, and nails. Some of them had two, others three holes in their under lip, and not a continued one, as the inhabitants of Sandwich Sound. They brought with them a vegetable, something resembling celery, which they eat a good deal of.

On



On the 30th some of the gentlemen, having been informed that there was a small Indian village near the entrance of the harbour, visited it. They were very civilly received by the inhabitants, who pulled off their bonnets, and made very low bows. The town consisted of eight or ten houses, and contained not more than eighteen or twenty people, including women and children. At some distance from the houses were erected stages for the purpose of drying fish, upon which hung large pieces of halibut and whale's flesh; and in several places were great numbers of the shells of sea eggs, which appear to make no small part of their food. There were only two women, one very old and grey headed; and another about twenty, who had a child in her arms: the latter was dressed in a seal skin jacket, and her cheeks were tatowed in a particular manner; she had an ornament in her under lip, made of bone, and was, to all appearance, tolerably neat and clean. The men were clothed in bird skin jackets, the feather side inwards. They bowed very respectfully to the gentlemen at their departure. A shooting party killed a brace of fine grouse, and three or four birds of the snipe kind; one of them caught a young fox.

July the 2d the ships stood again to sea, and continued still to explore the coast to the north till the 16th, when they arrived at a point of land which Captain Cook named Cape Newenham. The land was covered with plants and flowers of various kinds, which afforded a most pleasing appearance, and at the same time emitted a delightful fragrance, particularly the myrrh cistus, which was then in full flower. Among the plants and shrubs found here were cranberries, whortleberries, monks-hood, geranium, the faranne, (or kamtschatsdale lilly) poppy, dock, violet, golden rod, and valerian. The soil is a kind of light sand, with a small mixture of clay, and very stony. A deer and fawn were seen, several red foxes, and the tracks of bears. The rocks swarmed with shags and guillemots.

On the 20th they arrived on a part of the coast, in latitude 60° north, where they got into shoal water, on which account Captain Cook denominated the place Shoal Nefs. Here a fleet of small canoes, consisting of twenty-eight, made their appearance; and some of them came along side. The people in them were clothed in garments made of skins of the spotted field

p. 309. mouse, and wore a kind of bonnets on their heads; their hair was in general very short, and some were shaved close; they had a hole in one side of their under lip, and beyond that, another in the cheek, in both of which they had ornaments; their faces were not painted, but were very dirty, and the shape of them varied greatly, as, in some they were long and thin, and in others round. Upon the whole, they were a set of ill looking people. They did not appear to be much accustomed to ships, nor were they very honest. Having sold some of their bows and arrows, the points of which were composed of sea horse teeth, and barbed together with several other curiosities; and also a few dried salmon; after about half an hour's stay, they departed.

p. 310. The 22d their ships again made sail, till, on the 10th of August, they fell in  
p. 334. with a part of the continent of Asia, which they afterwards found to be Tschutschki Nofs; though in the Russian charts that place is laid down several degrees farther to the northward.

p. 327. Captain Cook, on going ashore, saw fifty or sixty of the natives standing upon an eminence near some houses. When he landed, he, with some difficulty, established an intercourse with them, they being very circumspect, and upon their guard; but at length a mutual confidence took place, and a trade was  
p. 329. opened between them. The articles they brought were sea horse hides and teeth, seal-skins, and ropes made of hides; with gloves and half-boots, both curiously ornamented with embroidery.

p. 329. Their summer habitations were nearly of a cylindric form, covered with the skins of the morse or sea horse, and propped up or supported by the bones of whales: as were likewise the roofs of their winter huts: the latter were about  
p. 330. five or six feet below the surface of the earth. The men (for they saw neither women or children) were stout and well made, but in general below the middle  
p. 331. size. The person, who appeared to be their Chief, was quite an old man. He had a mark or line across his nose, and extending beyond his cheek bones, at the termination of which were the forms of two fish. This had the exact appearance of tatowing, but was the only instance seen among them. They  
p. 332. behaved with great civility; and the old Chief made Captain Cook a present of several fine trout in return for some beads.

Having



Having made such observations on these people as the time would permit, they weighed, and stood to the northward; tracing the northern extremities of the continents of America and Asia, till they reached upwards of 70° of latitude north; where they could proceed no farther, being stopped by large fields of ice that extended from 180° of east longitude to near 200°.

In this progress, on the 18th of August, they described a low patch of barren land, almost inclosed with ice, lying in longitude 198° 34', latitude 70° 43', to which Captain Cook gave the name of Ice Cape. Here, being obstructed from prosecuting their course any farther in this quarter, they tacked, and stood to the westward. On the borders of the ice they found the sea horses numerous beyond imagination: these creatures are remarkably careful of their young, and will defend them to the utmost; upon the appearance of any danger they embrace them with their fore feet, and plunge into the water. When any of the young ones were killed, the old ones would not quit the boat. Though not very palatable, the crew thought their flesh preferable to salt provisions. The thermometer now was as low as 31°.

On the 29th of August, having traced the borders of the ice, that stopped their progress to the northward, they again made the continent of Asia, and the next day came to a cape which Captain Cook named East Cape. The land on this coast is moderately high and level, and without those irregular summits so frequent on the American side. They, however, did not see the least appearance of trees.

From thence they stretched over to the American coast, on which, in about 64° north latitude, they arrived the 6th of September; and on the 12th both ships anchored about two miles from the shore, more to the southward. They found this part of the world very pleasant, the whole face of the country, notwithstanding its barren aspect at a distance, is covered with grass, and interspersed with groves of trees, chiefly those of pine and birch. The hills are of an easy ascent, and from the tops of them is a fine prospect inland, where the spectator might behold woods and lawns finely contrasted, with rivulets winding through them in various parts, and rendering the scene delightful.

October

Ellis,  
Vol. II.  
p. 2.  
p. 14.

p. 15.

p. 32. October the 3d they anchored in Samganoodha Harbour, in the Island of  
 p. 35. Unalafschka, where they had before touched. They now found about twenty Kamtschadales and eight Russians here, who are possessed of a tolerable good wooden house. They have also arms and ammunition, and a small sloop of about sixty tons burthen. These people, some of whom visit this place annually, were to return to Ochotsk in 1780, and were to be succeeded by a fresh set. They informed Captain Cook that there are upwards of four hundred Russians, besides a great many Kamtschadales, formed into little settlements upon the various islands in these seas.

p. 36. On the 14th another Russian arrived at the island, in a large canoe, attended by twenty or thirty smaller ones. He was received with great respect by the natives; and appeared to be a collector of a tribute or tax. His under dress was like that of the English, but over it he wore a blue callicoe frock, girt round with a silk sash; he had boots on, and a cap lined with fur.

p. 42. This island, which is called by the natives Now'unalafschka, but by the Russians Unalafschka, is situated in 54° 4' north latitude, and in 193° 36' east longitude; the length of it appeared to be about fifty miles; it abounds in hills, some of which are very high, and the soil on the sides of them are rich, loamy, and  
 p. 43. deep. The low land is very marshy, but a fine deep black soil.

The only quadrupeds they saw were the arctic fox, and a small species of the marmot, without ears, and a short tail; the natives call them Anump-cho. Of  
 p. 44. water fowl they have variety; but the land birds are but few. As to trees, there are none upon the island that exceed a foot in length. The plants are numerous.

p. 45. The men, in general, are from five feet to five feet and half in height; their face is broad; their eyes rather small; their nose flat; their mouth wide, and lips thick; and their teeth usually uneven and discoloured; their hair is black, and rather long behind, but cut short before; the common dress of the men is a jacket, made of the skins of birds, the feathered side worn inwards; but their best jackets are painted red on the fore and hind part, as low as the shoulders and breast, and decorated with rows of fur.

The



The women are generally shorter than the men; and their features much more pleasing. They wear the hair over the forehead, like the men, but tie it up behind in large clubs. They, as well as the men, use the disagreeable mode of ornamenting their under lips with long pieces of narrow carved bone, and their nose with a string of beads; they likewise wear several bunches of beads in their ears; their cheeks are tatowed, or marked with one, and sometimes two lines, which extend from the middle part to the ears; their chin is likewise decorated in the same manner; this mark is confined entirely to the female sex, who are not permitted to wear it till they arrive to a certain age. A seal-skin jacket, with sleeves, fastened round the body with a girdle, is the only garment they wear. p. 46.

Their houses or huts are built four feet deep in the ground, of an oblong form. From a hole in the top is fixed a kind of a ladder, by which they descended into them. They smell very disagreeably and offensively from the dirt and nastiness which abounds in every part. Their food consists of whale's flesh, fish, berries, and roots. The leisure hours of the women are generally spent in embroidery, in which they are very neat, and some of their performances are really curious. The needles they use are made of bone, but without an eye; the thread of sinews split to a proper size. The needles they found on board the ships, being so far superior to their own, proved a good article of trade. p. 48. p. 49. p. 55.

During their stay here, they did not observe the least traces of religion among these people, nor any thing which could induce them to suppose that they had even the most distant idea of a Supreme Being. p. 58.

On the 26th of October, a fine breeze springing up from the S. E. Captain Cook was determined to take the advantage of it. He accordingly put to sea, and stood to the south till November the 26th, when they saw land, which rose with a very gradual ascent, the inland part terminating in a lofty hill. On it there appeared plenty of trees, and the whole was covered with a fine verdure. Some of the natives, who had been fishing, came along side, of whom they bought, with a variety of other fish, several crabs of a singular species, that were of a most beautiful scarlet colour. The canoes of these people were in every respect the same as those seen at A'tou'wi, as well as the natives. p. 40. p. 67.

The

p. 70. The next day many double canoes came along side, some of which were large enough to contain thirty people, without incommoding each other in the least. Most of the natives in them were curiously tatowed, particularly about the hands, arms, thighs, and legs, and some other parts of the body, but not in the face. The name of the island they were now off was Mow'hee, which, with those of Ato'wee and O'neehow, discovered in their progress to the north, and four others afterwards discovered, named O'wha-oo Morotai, Arannai, and O'why'hee, form a group, to which Captain Cook gave the name of Sandwich Islands. They extend from about  $19^{\circ}$  to  $22^{\circ}$  of north latitude, and from  $199^{\circ}$  to  $205^{\circ}$  of east longitude.

p. 84. On the 17th of January 1779, after having been plying to windward for six weeks without meeting with a convenient harbour, they anchored in Karacakooah Bay, in the Island of O'why'hee, attended by an incredible concourse of the natives in their canoes. The shores and hills were likewise lined with them, so that, at a moderate computation, there could not be fewer than eight thousand. As soon as moored, both the ships were thronged with them; the men taking possession of the upper decks, and the women of the lower. And, though, when it became dark the men departed; the women were so much attached to the ships, that they determined to spend the night there; a favour which was accordingly granted them.

p. 87. The next morning a woman of great distinction visited the ships. She was distinguished from the inferior sort by being excessive fat: the mark of an Aree in these as well as in the Friendly and Society Isles, though not in so high a degree. Her wrists were adorned with an enormous pair of bracelets, composed of boar's tusks, each of which formed a curve of at least eight inches; she wore a necklace of braided hair, in the front of which was a large piece of bone, curiously formed and highly polished; and was clothed in a much greater quantity of cloth than usual. She took a good deal of notice of every thing, and having satisfied her curiosity, departed. In the afternoon she returned with another woman, much superior to herself in size, who appeared to be her sister.

Besides



Besides these women, several other visitors of consequence came on board, p. 88. among whom was a young man whose name was Purraah, who, as they were informed, was a principal attendant of Terriaboo, King of the island. He was about five feet eight inches in height, his person was pleasing, and he appeared to be possessed of great good nature. In the afternoon, the butcher's large knife being stole by some of the natives, this young man went ashore in his canoe, and soon returned with it, and afterwards appeared very assiduous in preventing them from thieving.

On the 24th Purraah informed Captain Cook that Terriaboo would pay him p. 90. a visit the next day; and at the same time cleared the ships of all the natives. Accordingly, on the 25th, the King arrived in a large double canoe, and went on board the Resolution. The next day he visited the Captain again, having p. 91. with him two large canoes, each, as well as his own, carrying a vast number of caps, cloaks, images composed of basket work, and covered with red feathers, which were intended as a present to Captain Cook. He, likewise, the day following, presented both Captains with cocoa nuts, bread fruit, plantains, sugar cane, and thirty hogs each.

On the 28th several of the gentlemen of both ships made an excursion into p. 91. the country, to make observations relative to the soil and produce of it. At their return they reported that in many places it was covered with plantations of sugar cane, sweet potatoes, taro, plantains, and bread fruit trees: the latter were by far the largest they had ever seen. They also saw a long tract of p. 93. wild plantain trees, which far exceeded the cultivated ones in size; but, though they produce fruit like them, it never arrives at perfection. Part of the soil was a stiff yellow clay, and at some places they found it interspersed with large stones, evidently the production of a volcano. On entering an extensive wood, they were entertained with the notes of a variety of birds; but of such as would afford sustenance to mankind, they only saw a few flocks of black and white plover. They met with trees of various sorts; one species of which was p. 95. very tall and large, and of which the natives make their canoes.

On the 4th of February both ships weighed and made sail; but the Resolution p. 98. having sprung her foremast in a heavy squall of wind, they returned on the 11th.

X x

The

p. 100. The natives came off as before, and they purchased hogs and fruit as usual;  
 p. 101. but they could not avoid observing that these people were more bold and daring in their attempts to thief.

p. 102. The natives, having been frequently attentive to the armourer whilst at work, and observing how essentially necessary the tongs and chissels he made use of were in forming the iron work, one of them, at the instigation of Purraah, watched an opportunity, and seizing the tongs, jumped over-board; but being immediately taken, he received a severe flogging.

p. 103. In the afternoon another fellow, set on likewise by Purraah, seized both tongs  
 p. 104. and chissel, with which he made off: he was pursued by Mr. Edgar, the master of the Discovery, in her boat, who, upon landing, was pelted by the natives with stones, and a skirmish ensued. Purraah, who came soon after, seized Mr. Edgar, and secured his arms behind him. At this instant the Resolution's pinnace arrived; and one of the men, seeing Mr. Edgar's situation, struck Purraah with his oar, who instantly seized and broke it; and the bustle now became general. Captain Cook who was on shore, and had seen the boat in pursuit of the canoe, came up in the midst of the scuffle; and having quieted the people, as much as he could, enquired into the affair; and insisting on the stolen goods being restored, they were soon after returned by Purraah.

p. 105. The next morning, February the 14th, the Discovery's large cutter, which had been secured to the Buoy, was missing. So capital a theft could not be overlooked. It was therefore agreed upon by Captain Cook and Captain Clerke that the King should be secured; a method which, on several occasions, had tended to the recovery of goods stolen. The only way to do this was to invite him on board. It was also thought advisable to send boats to different parts  
 p. 106. of the bay, to prevent the natives from escaping in their canoes. Things being thus far settled, the boats were dispatched accordingly: and Captain Cook, with Mr. Phillips, the Lieutenant of Marines, went in his pinnace, attended by the Launch, in which were the marines and some of the officers, all well armed, to the N. W. point of the bay, where the King resided.

The



The natives, suspecting possibly that some enquiry would be made relative to p. 106.  
 the boat, had assembled there in great numbers. Upon landing, the marines p. 107.  
 were drawn up in a line on the beach with the serjeant at their head, and  
 Captain Cook, with Mr. Phillips, proceeded to Terriabóo's house; not finding  
 him there, they walked on to a house where they were informed by the natives  
 he was; and having invited him to go on board, he readily consented. Some of  
 the women, and other of his attendants, however, who, probably, were apprehensive of some design, earnestly begging and entreating that he would not go, he hesitated for a moment. At this important crisis three Indians arrived in a canoe from the other side of the bay, with an account of one of their principal Arees being shot by the people in the boats.

A general murmur of discontent was now heard to prevail; and many of the p. 108.  
 natives began to arm themselves with spears and daggers. This circumstance  
 was observed by Mr. Phillips, and he communicated his apprehensions to  
 Captain Cook, who was at this time in the midst of a crowd, and, of course,  
 not able to watch their motions. The serjeant of marines also, who was at a  
 distance, saw them arming; and, as the tumult rather increased, called several  
 times to the Captain, to warn him of his danger; but there seemed to be a  
 degree of infatuation attending him, which rendered him deaf to every thing.

The mob now pressed upon him, and he was seen to push them back, ex-  
 claiming, at the same time, "Get away! get away!" At length one of them  
 behaved very insolently, and, throwing stones at him, he fired his double barrel  
 gun, which he had in his hand, but missed this man, and shot the next to him.  
 The marines, hearing the report of the gun, imagined that some mischief p. 109.  
 had been done, and, without orders, began to fire also. This rendered matters  
 still worse. Captain Cook now seeing his danger, was making to the boats as  
 fast as the crowd would permit him, but received a stab between his shoulders  
 from a Chief who was behind him; the man was going to repeat his blow, but  
 was shot by the serjeant of marines. The marines had no sooner fired, than  
 the people in the Launch, from the same reason, fired likewise; and the uproar  
 became general. Captain Cook did not fall in consequence of his wound, but  
 still pressed on towards the boats; the Indians, however, continued to rush  
 upon him, and, with clubs and stones, soon put an end to his existence.

p. 109.

The Commanding Officer of the Resolution, which lay at least half a mile nearer the spot than the Discovery, alarmed at the report of the musquets, gave orders for the great guns to be pointed and fired at them; which appeared to create much slaughter and confusion. Mr. Phillips and his party of marines were obliged to leap into the water; but some of them, not being able to swim, were dragged ashore by the natives, who soon dispatched them. The remaining number with difficulty reached the boats. Their lieutenant was wounded in the shoulder; the serjeant in the neck, besides which he received a severe blow upon the head with a stone; one of the privates had the point of a spear, which broke off, fixed under his left eye; and a corporal and three private men were killed.

The Indians behaved with great resolution and intrepidity during the encounter, and, notwithstanding a severe fire was kept up for some time afterwards, they maintained their ground, and as soon as one fell another immediately supplied his place. Finding it impossible to recover the Captain's body, the boats ceased firing, and made the best of their way on board.

p. 112.

p. 113.

At noon the Resolution's mast, with the tents, observatories, &c. were brought on board, but not without another skirmish. In the afternoon Mr. King, second lieutenant of the Resolution, who was greatly esteemed by all the principal people of the island, went on shore with a flag of truce to try if the Captain's body could be procured by fair means. Upon the approach of the boats to the shore, the natives began to throw stones; but when the flag was hoisted they desisted, and several came off in boats. The body being demanded, some told Mr. King that it should be brought off on the morrow, and others said it was cut to pieces. As nothing further could be learned from them, the boats returned.

p. 113.

p. 114.

The ship's companies, exasperated to the highest degree at the loss of their Commander, and still more enraged at the behaviour of the Indians, desired Captain Clerke's permission to go on shore, declaring that they would bring off the body in spite of every thing, and burn the town. This rash request of theirs was, however, prudently denied.

On-



On the 15th, in the evening, two of the natives came on board, one of whom was recollected to have shewn great attention to Captain Cook. Being introduced into the great cabin, they untied a bundle, which, upon examination, contained the fleshy part of a man's thigh, the bone being taken out. This, they said, belonged to Captain Cook, and was all that remained of him; the rest being burnt. As they had brought off this by stealth, they were fearful of coming on board till it was dark, lest they should be observed by any of their own people; and having staid till ten o'clock, they returned to the shore.

On the 19th a Chief came on board the Resolution from Terriabóo to inform Captain Clerke (who had now taken the chief command) that he would bring all the remaining bones of Captain Cook the next day. At the same time he requested that they would enter into a league of friendship with him, and lay all animosities aside, as he was very sorry for the melancholy affair that had happened. This being agreed to, the Chief departed very well satisfied.

The next morning the King came on board, bringing with him two bundles of cloth, which contained the bones of their unfortunate Commander. The upper part of the skull, the scalp with the hair and ears, the bones of the thighs, legs and arms, together with the hands on which was the flesh, were all that remained: the ribs and vertebræ he told them were burned. They had cut off the long hair behind, which he said was in the possession of Kommâahmàah, a Chief nearly related to him. The hands had several incisions in a longitudinal direction, both upon the back and inside, and a quantity of salt had been rubbed in, with a view, most likely, to prevent putrefaction.

In the afternoon of the next day, being Sunday the 21st of February, the whole of these sad remains were committed to the deep, with all the honours due on such an occasion.

Thus fell the brave, the intelligent Captain Cook; whose name will ever be revered, both as an able and experienced navigator, and a judicious and humane commander. And whose death must rather be imputed to a combination of circumstances, which could no more be prevented than foreseen, than to any premeditated ill will of the natives of Owhy'hee.

- p. 122. The 22d, in the evening, both ships, now under the command of Captains Clerke and Gore, sailed out of the bay, the crews testifying by their sighs the regret they felt at leaving behind them the remains of a Commander they so much esteemed.
- p. 126. On the 27th they made the island of Owhy'hee, situated 21° 50' N. The first part of this island they approached appeared very rocky, with many broken craggy hills, which, though not very high, were covered with clouds at their summits; but, as they proceeded round it, they found another part that had a pleasant appearance, was of a moderate elevation, and well clothed with verdure, though but with few trees. The natives brought off, among other roots, some which externally resembled yams: they were of a tough stringy nature, but yielded a sweet thickish juice, which, if it could be kept, would have proved a good succedaneum for sugar; its Indian name is *Tee*.
- p. 130. March the 1st they anchored off the Island of A'tou'wi'. Upon the first landing of the boats the natives were very civil, but soon began their old trade of pilfering; and it was not without having recourse to arms that this could be put a stop to. A friendly intercourse, however, at length took place; and the ships procured a supply of water, hogs, and roots.
- p. 133. On the 5th the Queen of the island sent on board a present, consisting of a great number of mats of different sorts, and various degrees of fineness; bracelets, composed of boar's tusks; feather ruffs for the neck; and several kinds of cloth. The next day she came on board the Resolution herself, when Captain Clerke made her various presents in return. She was short and lusty, about forty years of age, and very plain, with respect to person. And on the 7th Káhàhva, the Queen's son, visited both ships, and made the Captains various presents, for which he received others in return. He was about twelve years old, and a fine looking youth. His attendants, which were numerous, carried him up and down the ship's side.
- p. 137. After a stay of about fourteen days, they left this island, which is one of the principal of that range of islands distinguished by the name of Sandwich Isles.
- p. 138. These



These consist in the whole of twelve, of which Owhy'hee, Mow'whèe, O'wha'ow, and A'tòuwè, are the largest, and have each of them a king, to one or other of which the smaller isles are subject.

It being Captain Clerke's intention to proceed from Sandwich Isles to Kamtschatka, he came to a resolution of running it down nearly in the latitude they were then in; and, as it was a new route, he was in hopes of discovering something in his way worthy of observation; with this view he pursued a W. by S. course; but, after continuing it till the 30th, and finding that the light winds which prevailed in that latitude would greatly retard the ships in their passage, he gave orders for hauling up to the N. W. p. 189. p. 191.

On the 5th of April they observed a great number of what they at first supposed to be Portuguese men of war, as the seamen usually call them, upon the surface of the water; but, upon a closer inspection, they proved to be a different animal, and belonged to the *Doris*, genus of Linnæus. They likewise saw many beautiful snails, of a fine purple colour, and some small crabs, whose colour was light blue p. 193.]

In the afternoon of the 9th, they observed a great quantity of scum, or rather of spawn, upon the water, which the sailors ludicrously called sea-saw dust, and the sea appeared remarkably light coloured. p. 194.]

On the 23d of April they made the coast of Asia. The land appeared to be high mountains which were entirely covered with snow. And on the 27th the Resolution was off the mouth of the Bay of Awatschka, but the Discovery did not arrive till the 1st of May. p. 199. p. 202.

Here they saw many small whales of a very particular species: they were black; their heads round, with two white stripes on each side the neck; with a remarkable long and narrow fin upon the back; in size they were about four times larger than a porpoise; and are, probably, what the Russians call Katfatki. p. 203.

The next morning the Resolution anchored in the Bay, but, instead of finding the Russian Ostrog or town a capital one, as they had been led to suppose, secured p. 204.

secured by a fortification, mounted with forty guns, to their great surprize, they only discovered a few huts at the bottom of a small bay, which constituted only a poor hamlet, containing only twenty-one wooden buildings, with a formidable battery of two guns, one of which was a two-pounder, the other a swivel. This place is called St. Peter and St. Paul, or in the Russian tongue, Petropaulouski.

- p. 206. The 28th, Mr. King, first Lieutenant of the Resolution, was sent on shore, to see if it was practicable to open any kind of intercourse with the Russians, or Kamtschadales. When he landed, several persons on sledges came to reconnoitre, but soon made off with all the expedition the dogs, which drew them, could make. He, however, proceeded towards the village, where he  
 p. 207. was met by a party, whom he joined, and was afterwards conducted to one of the houses, which was small, and built of wood, and tolerably clean, though very hot.  
 p. 208.

- A breakfast was soon prepared of tea, and rye bread and butter; after which Mr. King was conducted to the different houses of the village. Upon their return, about three hours after, they found dinner made ready, which consisted of beef cut small, some baked rice, mince-meat puffs, a large bird, supposed to be a goose, or something of that kind, with bread and butter; the drink, which was guasse, tasted like small beer mixed with water, and had a slight acid flavour. During this repast, at which was only the master of the house and Mr. King (his wife, according to the custom of that country, not being permitted to sit at table) the former informed the latter, as well as signs would permit, that he held the rank of serjeant, and had the command of the place, the Governor of Kamtschatka residing at Bolschaia-Reeka.  
 p. 209.

- p. 210. The next day, several of the gentlemen went on shore to visit the serjeant, and two bottles of rum were sent to him by the Captain. In return for which, he sent on board a fine fowl of the grouse kind, and twenty trout.

- p. 211. May the 2d, the weather was very cold, thick, and heavy, with showers of small snow; the thermometer was as low as 28 degrees; in the afternoon it cleared



cleared up, but froze very severely in the night. On their arrival they had found the interior parts of the bay covered with ice, which still continued; so that the boats, in attempting to go on shore the 3d, were so entangled, as not to be able to reach it. But the next morning, the ice making its way out of the bay with the tide, the boats were recovered without their having received any material damage.

About nine o'clock in the morning, on the 3d, a number of sledges being discovered coming from the Ostrog to the border of the ice nearest the ships, the pinnace was sent to them, and brought on board six Russians and a German. On being introduced to Captain Clerke, the German delivered him a letter from Major Behm, the Governor of Kamtschatka, which was written in German. Fortunately there were several people on board who both spoke and wrote that language. The purport of it was, that he had sent one of his domesticks to treat with them for every thing they wanted, and that they could be supplied with fresh provisions from Bolschaia-Reeka, together with many other articles. His demands, however, were rather exorbitant, charging a hundred rubles for an ox, and other things in proportion. p. 212. p. 213.

After breakfast they all returned to the shore, and at two in the afternoon the German came on board again, attended by a Russian merchant and a priest: the latter had quite the appearance of a gentleman; they were much pleased with their reception, and at six in the evening returned to the shore. p. 214. p. 215.

The next day, Wednesday, May the 5th, they dined on board the Discovery, and in the afternoon, by permission of the Captains, a trade was opened for beaver and other skins, many of which the merchants very gladly purchased.

The 7th Captain Gore, Mr. King, and Mr. Webber, who acted as interpreter, attended by the merchant and the German, set off for Bolschaia-Reeka upon a visit to the governor. p. 216.

Most of the Russians that resided at the Ostrog of St. Peter and St. Paul were most terribly afflicted with the scurvy. This disorder is entirely occasioned by their filthy manner of living. In the winter season they shut themselves

Y y

up

p. 217. up in their houses, which resemble ovens, and exclude the admission of fresh air: thus immersed in this nasty atmosphere, which is rendered still more disagreeable by the smell of dried fish, and other nauseous exhalations, it is no wonder that this disease rages with such violence among them. Their wives, on the contrary, and the natives who are obliged to be the slaves, are never affected with it.

p. 219. The 9th Captain Clerke received a letter from Mr. King, informing him that they should not be able to reach the end of their journey till that night, on account of the tediousness of travelling, which was sometimes by water, in flat-bottomed boats, forced on by two men with poles; and as to their sledges, they could only be used in the night, as the thaw rendered it impossible to travel in the day.

p. 220. The 13th the weather was fine and clear, the thermometer varying from 31 to 50 degrees. Many shooting parties were out, who observed the tracks of bears in the snow, and met with many foxes, which were all of the red kind; they likewise saw two white hares, but they were shy.

p. 221. The next day a party went out to haul the Seine, and brought on board near fifty trout, and upwards of three hundred flat-fish: the former were very poor and indifferent, but the latter were in full season, and were a remarkable fish, being studded as it were in every part with small prickly knobs, the fins and tails striped with black and brown.

p. 222. The 16th a party was sent to collect vegetables for the ship's company. What they gathered consisted chiefly of wild garlick and nettle-tops, which, when boiled with wheat, proved a most excellent and salutary breakfast.

This day Captain Clerke received another letter from Mr. King, informing him of the very great civilities they had experienced from the Major, who promised to return with them in a day or two. That several head of cattle were ordered down to the ships; and that they were to be supplied with a large quantity of flour, for which he would take nothing but a receipt, saying, he  
was



was certain the Empress would be happy to accommodate any of his Britannic Majesty's ships with whatever it was in her power to give.

The 19th the ice, which surrounded the Ostrog, floated out of the bay with the ebb tide; and the next day was fine and pleasant, the weather warm, and a general thaw. The latitude, by an observation taken this day, with a variety of quadrants, was  $58^{\circ} 52' N$ . p. 223.

About nine o'clock, on the 22d, Major Behm, attended by the priest, the merchant, and some others, having accompanied Captain Gore and Mr. King on their return, came on board the Resolution. He was received by all the marines under arms, and saluted with thirteen guns. He appeared to be about six feet high, rather corpulent, and was very polite and affable in his address. p. 224. p. 225.

The next day he dined on board the Discovery, where he was received with the same ceremony. The two following days he dined on board the Resolution. At his departure, he was very desirous of making a pecuniary present to the ship's company, which the Captain would by no means permit. Both the Captains made him presents of rum, wine, salt beef and pork, and a variety of curiosities, which he proposed giving to the Empress upon his return to Petersburg. p. 226. p. 227.

The 26th the Major set off for Bolschaia-Reeka, attended by Mr. King and Mr. Webber, who were to accompany him part of the way. And as he proposed returning to Petersburg in about a month, Captain Clerke thought it a very convenient opportunity of forwarding by him dispatches to the Admiralty. p. 228.

May the 29th they caught with the seine some very fine smelts, and on the 31st took a wolf-fish. The country now began to assume its proper hue, and the wild celery and farane sprouted up very fast. Among other birds they could plainly distinguish the cuckow, the nightingale, and the wood-lark. p. 229.

On the 11th of June, having received the cattle, flour, &c. from Bolschaia-Reeka, and laid in such necessaries as they could procure, both ships prepared to unmoor; but from various delays, occasioned by the shifting of the wind, p. 232.

p. 234. it was the 14th before they reached the entrance of the Bay of Awatschka. In the course of that day, the Awachinskoy mountain emitted a great quantity of smoke, and during the night it was in a perfect state of eruption.

p. 235. The next day, Thursday the 15th, the whole bay appeared as if in a fog, occasioned by the vast quantity of smoke and ashes from the volcano. The ships were in some places covered near an inch deep with them. In the afternoon, after a loud and violent noise, a heavy shower of small stones fell around them, which was the case, more or less, till the evening, when it thundered and lightened pretty much. About ten all was still and quiet, and remained so during the night. At two the next morning, taking the advantage of a breeze from the N. W. they got up their anchors, made sail, and stood out to sea.

p. 236. At the time Muller and Kraschininnikoff published their History of Kamtschatka, the various parts of that province were in a flourishing condition; but the small-pox has, since that period, committed such heavy depredations, that many towns and villages have been entirely depopulated. In 1769 twenty thousand of the natives died of that distemper, seven thousand of whom paid tribute.

p. 237. The town of St. Peter and St. Paul, or Petropaulouski, is situated upon a spot of low land that extends nearly across the harbour. It at present consists of only twenty-one buildings, including jouts, (huts partly under ground) ballagans, (houses elevated upon poles) and houses, the best of which are composed of wood, and the intermediate chinks filled up with moss; the windows are all composed of the skins of salmon sewed together, except those in the Serjeant's house, which are made of talc, and admit the light nearly as well as glass.

Bolschaia-Reeka is the largest town, and consists of near a hundred houses, all of which are built on the same plan as those at Petropaulouski. It is likewise the residence of the governor.

p. 238. The Kamtschadales have in a great measure adopted the manners and customs of the Russians, who marry and intermarry with them. Among themselves they



they enter into the marriage state very young, generally at thirteen or fourteen years of age. The women are very ordinary, being short in stature, with broad faces, small eyes, very high cheek-bones, and little noses; their noses are so small, that when you view them in profile, only the tip is to be discovered.

In every village there is a Toyon or Chief, who, in any trifling disputes, is always applied to; but if they are of a serious nature, they come under the cognizance of the principal person in the place; if he finds it difficult to settle the affairs, they are transferred to the governor of Bolschaia-Reeka, from whence there is no appeal.

The salary of the government of Kamtschatka amounts to a thousand rubles p. 240. a year. The pay of the Serjeant at Petropauloufki is forty-six rubles per annum. The annual tribute of the province is computed at seven thousand rubles. None are taxed till they arrive at the age of eighteen years, when each pays a sable skin. A duty is likewise laid on articles of every kind that pass and repass from Ochotsk to Bolschaia-Reeka. Six galliots belonging to the Empress are set apart for that purpose. In the whole province, which is extensive, there are not above five hundred of the military.

Till the 24th of June the weather was in general foggy, when it cleared up p. 244. and proved fine. They observed a great number of common gulls, and many artic gulls: these chase the former about, till the poor frightened birds void their excrements, which the others immediately catch in their beak, and greedily swallow, apparently much pleased with it. Linnæus calls this bird the parasite, from its nasty sordid way of living.

From this time till the 18th of July they sailed to the northward, tracing the p. 264. edges of those vast bodies of ice with which the parts towards the pole are covered, hourly obstructed by the floating ice, and frequently embayed in it, till they arrived as high as  $70^{\circ}26'$  N.

The 19th they saw two white bears swimming by them, which they fired at p. 266. and killed: they proved to be a male and a female; the former appeared to be a young

- p. 267. young one, and was much smaller than the other, which measured upwards of seven feet from the tip of the nose to the extremity of the tail. A quantity of the flesh of the sea-horse, of which many herds were daily seen sleeping on various parts of the ice, was found in their stomachs; and the female had milk in her dugs.
- p. 269. The 21st, finding their farther progress obstructed on the American side, they bore away to the westward, standing along the borders of the ice, which  
p. 280. they proposed tracing till they should fall in with the coast of Asia. And on the 31st saw the Bay of St. Lawrence, which was the place they had landed at nearly about a twelve month before, at which time Captain Cook so denominated it.
- p. 285. August the 7th, the weather being fine and clear, with moderate breezes from the west, they brought to, and putting their hooks and lines over board, in the space of three or four hours caught near a hundred fine cod, which afforded a most luxurious repast to all on board, as they had long been tired of the trainy flesh of sea-horse and white bear.
- p. 290. On the 21st they saw land, which proved to be part of Asia, and at no great distance from the Bay of Awatschka, where they proposed staying some time.
- p. 291. The next day, at half past eight, Captain Clerke departed this life, after a long and tedious illness, which he had laboured under before his departure from England.
- p. 292. The 23d, at eleven, they felt an unusual rumbling motion in the ship, which continued for about the space of ten seconds; an effect which they attributed to an earthquake. Their distance at that time from the nearest shore was five or six leagues.
- p. 294. At one they brought to in the basin behind the Ostrog of St. Peter and St. Paul; and shortly after the Serjeant came on board to pay his respects to the Captain, bringing with him some berries, milk, and the spawn of salmon.
- p. 295. Immediately after the ships were moored, all hands set about making the needful repairs, erecting tents and observatories on shore, and setting up cop-  
pers



pers to brew spruce beer, from a species of pine, which the Russians call Slantza.

This morning the effects of the late Captain Clerke were sold, and Captain p. 296.  
Gore succeeded to the command of the Resolution, and Mr. King to that of the Discovery.

The 29th the corpse of Captain Clerke was conveyed on shore in the pinnace, p. 297.  
attended by the other boats, with the captains and officers of both ships, where it was decently interred. During the procession and service, minute guns were fired by both ships, and the marines fired three vollies at the grave, which was under a tree.

The next day a party went to fish for salmon, which were remarkably numerous here, in order to salt them for a sea-stock. With the salmon they frequently caught very fine smelts, and now-and-then a particular species, called by the Russians Gorbush, on account of its having a kind of hump upon its back.

September the 4th a gentleman, who, as they were informed by the Serjeant, p. 298.  
was an ensign, and son to lieutenant Sindo, by whom some discoveries had been made on the coast of America, arrived from Bolschaia-Reeka, with compliments from Captain Wafilowitz. Ismyloff, who succeeded Major Behm as governor of Kamtschatka, acquainting the Captains that he would be down in a few days; and that sixteen head of cattle were upon the road for the use of the ships.

The 9th a galliot arrived from Ochotsk, laden with flour, pitch, tar, cordage, p. 300.  
tea, sugar, tobacco, and various things for their use; for which they were obliged to Major Behm, who seemed to have taken every method in his power to render them acts of civility. In this ship came a merchant, who brought with him a variety of articles, such as boots, shoes, handkerchiefs, &c. the prices of which were, in general, high, but the latter were immoderately so. It must be considered, however, that he paid a very heavy duty on his goods;  
the

the whole of which, as he informed them, amounted to upwards of two hundred rubles.

P. 301. The 16th Captain Ismyloff arrived, attended by the merchant who traded with them when they were lately here, and a gentleman who had been banished to this extremity of the continent thirty-six years ago: this gentleman was of a noble family, and had been page to the Empress when he was about the age of eighteen; but, having been guilty of some indiscretions, he was banished to this place, and his estate confiscated.

P. 302. Upon the arrival of Captain Ismyloff on board, he was saluted with eleven guns; and, having viewed the several parts of the ship, he returned on shore, and dined with Captain Gore in a tent. He was a tall, handsome, well made man, and appeared to be about thirty-six years of age. The next day he dined with Captain King on board the Discovery, and the following day was entertained by the gentlemen of the Resolution's gun room; and on the 20th he returned to Bolschaia-Reeka.

P. 303. Just before their departure, all the young women of the village were invited on board the Resolution by Captain Gore, and in the evening they had a dance. The Russian dances are as dull and stupid as can well be imagined; but those of the Kamtschadales can be compared to nothing but the awkward motions of a bear, the gestures of which animal they frequently imitate.

P. 304. October the 7th both vessels weighed, but the wind proving contrary, they were obliged to come to again; the next morning, however, they were more fortunate, and at eight o'clock got up their anchors and stood out to sea.

When they arrived here the second time, they found the Russians at the hospital, nearly in as bad a state, with respect to the scurvy, as during their first visit. And, notwithstanding this was a time of the year when fruits and vegetables abounded, which would have proved an effectual remedy, they were too lazy to gather them.

They



They are, in fact, a strange set of beings, and seem totally void of humanity, if we may judge from their suffering a poor old man, who had lost the use of his limbs, to starve in one of their outhouses.

The men are, in general, represented as jealous of their wives; but they found that a glass or two of rum would sometimes get the better of their natural disposition. The women, who have no aversion to spirits, will drink them without adulteration, and in as great quantities as the men. p. 305.

Though the Kamtschadales have in a great measure adopted the religion of the Russians, they have not totally divested themselves of their superstitious prejudices. The language that prevails among them is the Russian; and but very few, except the oldest amongst them, can speak their native tongue; so that it is likely in a few years to become extinct. p. 306.

As it was now summer, the inhabitants of the village had retired into their balagans, which usually are their residence during that season of the year. They were also very busily employed in drying fish for their winter stock, so that the whole place was nearly surrounded with them, which by no means afforded an agreeable scent. The fish they cured consisted principally of salmon and herrings: the latter were set aside entirely for their dogs; the bellies of the former, which they esteem a delicacy, are divided from the body, and dried separately.

The dogs, by which creatures the sledges of the inhabitants are drawn, as before observed, are always let loose in the summer season, during which time they frequently run wild in the woods, but return at the approach of winter, when they are again secured. Upon the first appearance of a sledge, they set up a general howl, as if conscious of the labour they have to undergo for the remaining part of the year. p. 307.

Having put to sea on the 8th, they continued to trace the coast to the southward, and on the 12th saw Schumschu, the first of the Kurilskoy islands; p. 308.

Z z

and

and the next day had several others of them in view, which were, in general, high, and almost covered with snow.

p. 312. On the 26th they saw land, being part of the great Island Nippon or Japan :  
p. 313. it was moderately high, but not irregular or broken, consisting of double ranges of hills, many of which were covered with trees; the shore was steep, rocky, and strait, without the least appearance of a harbour; the northern extremity of it fell into a slope, whilst the southern made a kind of bluff. The aspect of the country was, in general, barren and rocky, at the distance they at first viewed it from, but upon a nearer approach it appeared more fertile and pleasant. They saw many smokes on the hills.

p. 315. In the morning of the 29th they saw a Japanese vessel standing along shore to the northward; and half an hour after another standing towards them: at nine they brought to, intending to wait for the latter; but finding at ten she endeavoured to avoid them, they wore ship, and pursued their course. She appeared  
p. 316. to be about forty tons burthen, and had only one mast and sail, very square at top, but narrower towards the bottom. By the help of their glasses they could perceive those on board to be in much confusion.

p. 322. November the 14th they descried land, which proved to be one of those isles which are laid down to the northward of the Marian Islands. They were now  
p. 323. in latitude  $24^{\circ} 35'$  N. and longitude  $141^{\circ} 15'$  E. The next day they ran along the south side of this island. Off the north end there was a reef of rocks which extended a considerable distance from it, and over which the sea broke violently. The south end was terminated by a high bluff rock, and upon the middle they saw some few trees, or rather shrubs, for they were of a diminutive size, which probably might be owing to the scarcity of the soil, the whole being an assemblage of rocky matter.

p. 324. As they approached the bluff rock, they found it had the appearance of having once been a volcano. On viewing the S. W. side of it, they were confirmed in this opinion; where the mouth or crater was very conspicuous, and upon its sides were large masses of sulphur, and other combustible matter.  
Having



Having seen thus much of this island, and finding it too dangerous to attempt landing, they bore away to the westward. Captain Gore called it Sulphur Island.

The 29th they descried the Islands of Lema; and the next day the Grand p. 329. Ladrone, which is the loftiest of those islands, was distant about three or four miles. They were employed all the afternoon in working to windward, and at six came to an anchor, in ten fathom.

December the 1st they made sail towards Macao, and Captain King and ano- p. 331. ther officer went on shore in the pinnace, with a design to set off immediately for Canton; being in want of stores, which they hoped to be supplied with from some of the East India ships that were taking in their lading there. But p. 332. upon their landing at Macao, being informed by some English gentlemen that they must first obtain a passport, which would at least be five days before its arrival from Canton, they, for the present, relinquished their design. On the return of the pinnace, the whole crew being impatient to learn the state of affairs in England, from whence they had been absent so long, got upon deck to hear the news, though it was very late before Captain King returned. Among a variety of other articles, they received a confirmation that a war with France, which they had heard of at Kamtschatka, had taken place.

The 2d they weighed and stood towards the town, and anchoring about two p. 333. miles from it, saluted the fort with thirteen guns, which returned an equal number. All hands were now very busily employed, some in watering, others in the hold, and the carpenters in putting the ships into a proper state of defence, in case they should meet with any of the enemy's ships.

The Chinese were very assiduous in their visits, and among other articles p. 334. brought off, besides arrack, a hot disagreeable spirit, they called Sumchu, with which the sailors got so intoxicated, that they were unable to proceed in their work: on this account it was forbid to be brought into the ships.

Having got all their supplies, and increased the number of the Resolution's p. 335. guns to sixteen, and those of the Discovery to twelve; on the 12th of January, 1783, they weighed, and made sail, standing out of the Typa.

On

- P. 337. On the 19th they saw Pulo Sapota, distant about three or four leagues. And the next day descried Pulo Condor; but not being able to reach the harbour that night, they stood off and on till the morning, and in the forenoon came to not far from the same spot where Dampier had anchored. Wood being an article they could not procure at Macao, a party was sent on shore to cut some. Among a variety of other trees, they found the wild-nutmeg in abundance, but the nut was totally void of smell and taste.
- P. 338.

The day following they bought three or four fish of some of the natives who had been fishing: one of them was shaped much like a dolphin, the others were of the Albecore tribe, but marked or striped on the back and sides with a blackish blue colour.

- P. 339. The chief man of the island, or the Capitapa, as they called him, came on board in the course of the day. He, as well as the rest of the natives, were very poor and ragged. Every one wore turbans consisting of an old dirty piece of cloth, and chewed betel and areka. All the provision they could procure here were a few buffaloes, and some cabbage trees.

- P. 340. The 28th they made sail, and, when out of the harbour, shaped their course for the Straits of Banca; and on the 3d of February saw the Seven Islands and Monopin-Hill, which are situated near the entrance of them. They here found the heat very troublesome, the thermometer rising as high as 84 degrees. That part of the Straits which is formed by Sumatra is low, and covered with trees to the edge of the water, the whole forming to appearance an impenetrable wood.
- P. 341.

- P. 343. The 7th they anchored off the Island of Cracatoa. The next day shooting parties went out, but met with nothing worth notice. The inhabitants, who were all dressed in the Malay fashion, behaved with civility. This island is governed by a Radja, who is subject to the Court of Bantam. The town, which consists of twelve or fourteen houses, elevated upon posts, is situated on a pleasant spot, about half a mile from the shore, and surrounded with trees of various kinds, among which were the cocoa-nut and plantain trees, the latter the largest they had yet seen.
- P. 344.

The



The whole island produced variety of trees, and appeared covered with wood, which afforded a fine retreat for the birds, many of which were remarkably beautiful. Insects also, particularly of the butterfly kind, were exceeding numerous.

Having taken in their stock of spirits, they proceeded to Prince's Island, where they staid three or four days; and having bought some bad turtle, p. 345, monkies, hog-deer, and fowls, made the best of their way to the Cape of Good Hope.

Here they arrived without meeting with any material incident during their passage; and about the middle of May sailed for England; in September they made the Orkney Isles, where they were detained near a month by contrary winds; and on the 5th of October anchored at the Nore, after an absence of four years and near three months.

F I N I S.





# E R R A T A.

- Page 2, after line 16, insert, *A large eel was caught by one of our people, which was of a purple nutmeg colour, clouded with irregular spots of a darker colour, and was also full of small white dots.*
- Page 4, line 17, for *island*, read, *place*.
- 5, — 20, dele, *when the air was not so dry.*
- 7, — 10, dele, *to the rest.*
- 25, after *forehead*, insert, *and is tied behind with the tendons of some animal.*
- 29, for, *We saw also an ornament made of shells*, read, *We saw one of these ornaments.*
- 8, — 4, for, *the*, read, *these.*
- 12, for, *hill*, read, *hills.*
- 28, for, *it*, read, *the fire.*
- 16, — 22, after, *figure*, insert, *Notwithstanding these flies are so great an inconvenience, the natives, from a religious notion, will not kill any of them.*
- 17, — 10, after, *paste*, insert, *or pudding.*
- 11, for, *Makey*, read, *Mahy.*
- Ibid. — *ibid.* for, *and a substance called Meya*, read, *and Meya, a species of wild plantain.*
- Page 20, line 6, for, *Tobiah*, read, *Toobaiab.*
- 31, dele, *but.*
- 33, for, *ate*, read, *eat.*
- 21, — 2, after, *island*, insert, *which the Otahiteans hold sacred, as well as the flies, and therefore will not kill any of them.*
- 22, — 24, for, *was*, read, *they called.*
- 29, for, *VIII.* read, *VII.*
- 23, — 23, for, *joined at the bottom*, read, *the legs joined at the bottom, cross-ways.*
- 24, — 7, for, *purawei*, read, *parauei.\** [ \* An inner garment or shirt.]
- 15, for, *fig. 13*, read, *fig. 27.*
- 25, for, *or bunches of hair curiously plaited.* They also wear *teeptotas*, read, *They also wear tamous, or bunches of human hair curiously plaited.*
- 30, for, *taowree*, read, *taowdee.*
- 31, for, *whaww*, read, *waow.*
- 25, — 2, for, *the men*, read, *the two men.*
- 26, — 5, dele, *2.*
- 7, after, *ears*, insert, [*ibid. fig. 1 and 2.*]
- 35, — 13, for, *to a valley*, read, *up the great valley that leads.*
- 14, after, *Orowhaina*, insert, *a high peaked hill, so called.*
- 38, — 8, after, *monoe*, insert, *or cocoa-oil.*
- 40, — 15, for *small blue parrot*, read, *blue parroquet.*
- 41, — 24, for, *E neearohettee*, read, *E neearohettee.*
- 42, — 3, for, *Eatoas*, read, *Ethoa, or god.*
- 43, — 6, after, *Venee*, insert, *or blue parroquet.*
- 44, — 1, for, *Etoa-casuarina.* *Equisetifolia.* read, *Etoa. Casuarina-equisetifolia.*
- 57, for, 75, the number of the page, read, 57.
- 63, after, *Potohe*, *Firstly*, insert, *Ea, Yes; Aowra, No.*
- 77, line 11, after, *ditto*, insert, *about three inches in length.*
- 87, — 28, for, *truncheon*, read, *bludgeon.* [See pl. XXVI. fig. 18.]
- 30, after, *XV.* insert, *and XIX.*
- 93, — 26, after, *paddles*, insert, *by the like number of men, who look the same way they row, striking their paddles into the water, with the points downward, at the same time bending their bodies forward, and as it were driving the waves behind them.*
- 102, — 5, dele, *which.*
- 114, at the bottom insert the following notes. *Baracootas, a fish remarkably smooth, about seven or eight feet long.*  
*Flying-gurnards, a flying-fish of a remarkably fine gold colour.*  
*Drum-fish, so called from the noise they make.*  
*Chimera, a fish of a silver colour.*
- 115, — 9, after, *wattles*, insert, *a bird about the size of a blackbird, remarkable for its fine singing, with two beautiful white curled feathers (by some called Wattles) under the throat.*
- 124, — 19, for, *month*, read, *months.*

# ERRATA.

Page 129, line 21, after, *which*, insert, *somewhat*.  
 — 132, — 8, after, *much*, add a semicolon.  
 — 9, dele the semicolon.  
 — 144, — 21, for, *Meyia*, read, *Meiya*.  
 — 24, for, *the best*, read, *their best*.  
 — 27, for, *perio*—, read, *parro*—.  
 — 29, for, *cocatoes*, read, *cocatoos*.  
 — 150, — 17, for, *Haliotes*, read, *Haliotis*.  
 — 152, — 27, for, *Gadugoo*, read, *Gaduggoo*.  
 — 155, — 8, after, *that*, insert, *the*.  
 — 158, — 20, for, *there*, read, *they*.  
 — 178, — 25, for, *Bougees*, read, *Bugeefs*.  
 180, — 2 and 6, for, *Orrang*, read, *Orang*.



## Directions to the Binder for placing the Cuts.

General Name	Page	Plate of SYDNEY PARKINSON to face the title.
Notice of Sydney Park	Plate I. to face page 7	Plate XV. to face page 88
Notice of Sydney Park	II. ————— 8	XVI. ————— 90
Notice of Sydney Park	III. ————— 14	XVII. ————— 92
Notice of Sydney Park	IV. ————— 16	XVIII. ————— 93
Notice of Sydney Park	V. ————— 23	XIX. ————— 98
Notice of Sydney Park	VI. ————— 24	XX. ————— 99
Notice of Sydney Park	VII. ————— 25	XXI. ————— 109
Notice of Sydney Park	VIII. ————— 26	XXII. ————— 113
Notice of Sydney Park	IX. ————— 66	XXIII. ————— 116
Notice of Sydney Park	X. ————— 70	XXIV. ————— 117
Notice of Sydney Park	XI. ————— 71	XXV. ————— 124
Notice of Sydney Park	XII. ————— 74	XXVI. ————— 128
Notice of Sydney Park	XIII. ————— 75	XXVII. ————— 134
Notice of Sydney Park	XIV. ————— 86	

Dep. g. 1784  
 Warioras of N Zealand





















